

SWALLOWED STAR

BOOK 08

I Eat Tomatoes

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Swallowed Star

(*The Legend Of Spacewalker*)

(*Tun Shi Xing Kong*)

(吞噬星空)

by

I Eat Tomatoes

(*Wo Chi Xi Hong Shi*)

(我吃西红柿)

Synopsis

Year 2056, in a city in the Yuan Jiang Su Jin area.

On top of a ruined, shattered six story residential apartment sits a teenager wearing a combat vest, militaristic trousers, and alloyed battle boots.

On his back is a hexagonal shield and equipped is a blood-shadow battle knife.

He sits there silently on the edge of the roof. At this time, the sparkling sky was shining and there was a refreshing breath within the air that blew towards him.

However, there was only silence within the ruined, deserted city, with an occasional howl that makes your heart skip a beat.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the team @ Wuxia Translations, Translation Nations, and Qidian International.

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 801: Luo Feng's Revenge

A seemingly normal huge blade slashed through space, and in the blink of an eye, it hit the silver wings. The Golden horned beast which was wrapped within was like a silver egg...the wings had completely protected the beast well, not leaving a single slit.

Rumble...

The beast was knocked back far away. The large amounts of purple threads holding on to the beast had to be let go too, some of them broken from the powerful force. The beast became a beam of light as it flew backwards.

After flying back hundreds of thousands of km, only then did it open its wings.

It's mouth had a hint of trickling golden blood, and it's dark eyes gleaming with madness. The wings had diffused over 90% of the force, with the general armor diffusing another 90% of the leftover force. Through these two weakening the attack greatly, the remaining force was but a thousandth of the original, even so, it still hurt the beast.

Howl! The beast flapped its wings.

It warped in mid air and swiftly rushed at the closest god. It was obvious that they were strongest when attacking together. As long as it could catch on to one beast...it would be much safer.

Chi chi...countless purple threads once again rushed aroundt the beast, beginning to trap it.

"These purple threads again."

"Bastard." Luo Feng raged within.

The beast struggled madly, causing large amounts of the threads to break. However, more were produced, causing the beast to once again fall into the same trap, unable to break free.

Howl!!! It struggled and raged.

"To actually be able to withstand my Absolute nine god country attack and not be torn apart, I respect your strength." The tallest god of the eighty one gods suddenly brandished a blade bigger than itself, roaring, "Then receive my second attack!"

Weng...

The other eighty of them all extended one finger and shot out a thin purple light. Though they were thin, they were extremely condensed.

These eighty purple lights all shot into the blade.

The tallest god simultaneously threw out the huge blade, which was infused with the space and fire laws. It made the huge blade tear a big hole in space itself, it instantly flew straight at the beast at a terrifying speed.

The beast naturally closed itself in its wings again, and was forcefully knocked back again.

"His body is still ok? Then take my third attack. I don’t believe you can take it!" The tallest god roared.

Each attack was stronger than the previous.

This third attack was almost like a solid hammer, clashing into the protected beast’s wings.

Chi!

The beast was so shaken that blood flew out of its eyes, nose and ears, it even spit out gold blood.

As it was knocked back, countless purple threads came to bind it again, causing it to get extremely enraged.

...

The youth Ci Wei Ka controlling this battle from afar slapped his alloy chair, breaking it apart, "Three consecutive attacks didn’t

destroy its body. This god country is something my master personally created, and its 3 attacks are all considered to be at pinnacle emperor level. Even though one would have an undying body, his body would still be destroyed before reforming. Why isnt his body breaking apart?"

"As long as I can destroy his body, its world ring will appear."

"I'll use the god country to instantly grab the world ring and cause instability in the ring to make it collapse. Once the human sector lord appears, I'll be able to capture my target."

"However!"

"Why am I unable to destroy its body? This is the Nine absolute god country, it was something the master built for me out of the relationship we've had over the countless years. He spent a huge amount on it to improve my strength and weaponry. A normal emperor's wealth cannot even afford it. Even though it cannot kill a pinnacle emperor , destroying his body should be easy. However..." He couldn't believe the scene before him.

Nine Absolute god country, he naturally wouldn't suspect.

A pinnacle emperor was very powerful. Even after destroying his body, he could easily reform without any damage. Hence killing him was very hard.

Ci Wei Ka didn't even think of killing the silver winged emperor.

He didn't have the confidence to do so either. He simply wanted to destroy his body once, using the chance to get the sector lord and automaton methods to cause the world to crumble.

"I don't believe this!"

He gritted his teeth, "Not being able to kill you is one thing, but I cannot even destroy your body? The master's Nine absolute god country cannot be that weak."

"Break!"

...

Ci Wei Ka raged, his god country once again began a more terrifying attack.

Fourth attack!

Fifth attack!

Sixth attack!

The eighty one gods that were all low emperors used the purple space's help to unleash terrifying attacks over and over.

"God country...Grinding wheel!" Ci Wei Ka gritted his teeth and unleashed the ninth attack of the god country, the strongest one he had.

The eighty one god's eyes all lit up, light gathering within their weapons as they all flew out of their hands and gathered in mid air. Among the eighty one lit up weapons, the big ones were like 100m blades while the small ones not even half a meter in length. They formed a peculiar grinding wheel weapon, with sharp edges on the side.

Ge ge ge...

The wheel spun and countless purple light threads melded into it, it acted like a purple space core.

"Hu la!"

It rushed straight at the beast. The two bottom and upper layers of the wheel interweaved. Ge ge ge...even space was ripped apart into countless shreds. When the wheel hit the Golden horned beast, it began to madly grind at it. The Sha Wu Wings were clashing hard against the mad grinding. Although the golden horned beast's body was reduced to powder, the outer layer of wings however was undamaged.

"Howl..." The beast let out a howl of pain.

"Automaton idiot, stupid punk, what other methods do you

have?" The beast let out an enraged howl. "Can you only rely on these purple threads to bind me?"

The grinding wheel swiftly flew back, returning the eighty one weapons to the gods.

The eighty one gods looked at the distant golden horned beast, not know what to do.

"The Nine absolute god country was actually unable to destroy its body?" The distant Ci Wei Ka was angry and worried. This ninth attack was the strongest attack the god country could do, unless... unless Ci Wei Ka was willing to pay a bigger price to unleash its final attack.

That move would damage even a pinnacle emperor, destroying part of his undying body. He then would require tens of millions of years to recover.

"Using that move once costs one billion indigo gems."

"Is it worth it?" Ci Wi Ka hesitated.

One billion indigo gems. This was huge sum for even an emperor, one couldn't bear to use this much on just one battle. Many emperors would rather sacrifice 5% of their undying bodies and not lose such a sum.

"Is it worth it?"

...

While Ci Wei Ka was hesitating, the Golden horned beast that had taken nine attacks finally exploded.

"Eighty one gods?"

"Hmph, after the nine consecutive attacks, his energy should be depleted. They would take a while for the energy to replenish to attack again." The beast glanced at the distant eighty one gods. While unleashing their ninth attack, their energies had already reached extremely low levels. At this time, countless amounts of

energy was pouring into them from the space about.

The beast's eyes gleamed with madness.

"My chance has come."

"Alina!"

"Master!"

"Command one million tiger armored kings to do a combined attack, the strongest attack, and break through this purple space. This is a space formed by those nine pyramids, just choose one and attack it." Luo Feng ordered his bug queen Alina within his internal world.

"Yes master." Alina said respectfully.

Rumble!

Large amounts of countless bugs appeared around the Golden horned beast. Every tiger armored king was about 26m tall, and they were covered in a thick armor. Their dark red malevolent bodies gave off terrifying energy. A blur of one million armored tiger kings appeared, and all of them were exactly alike.

In the core of the bug army was a 1km in diameter bug clan mother nest.

Weng...

The million tiger armored kings extended their claws. A glaring light gathering at the tip of their claws, the million soldiers seemed to be linked by their souls. In truth they were all being controlled by one queen. Simultaneously controlling one million bugs, even though it couldn't do a law infused attack, it could still do a precision attack.

"Bug clan, it's the bug clan."

"A million sector lord bugs, and tiger armored kings!"

"Quick, break." The distant Ci Wei Ka was immediately at a loss.

One combined attack by a million kings...that was extremely terrifying.

A combined attack by one million normal sector lord bugs could heavily injure a pinnacle emperor. Naturally it had to hit first, the emperors weren't stupid, they could all dodge and flee. Hence, normally the million strong army was good as a threat, and was useful in an army battle, however against an emperor.

It was too hard to hit.

However no one could deny its power!

And the million kings compared to the million normal sector lords, the power was much more powerful by at least tens of times! Even a pinnacle emperor would probably lose 50-100% of his undying body. Meaning, there was a possibility of a pinnacle emperor falling.

This was the power of one million bug kings!

Of course, the requirement was...it had to hit.

Chapter 802: Trying To Steal a Chicken Only To End Up Losing The Rice Used to Lure It

"Try and bind the bug soldiers? That won't work. The million bug kings can instantly send off power that over a hundred times that of an emperor. I can at most only bind up to 10,000 of them, however this has little effect on the million strong army. This move is useless!"

"Binding that mother nest, killing the queen?"

"The eighty one gods have mostly used up their energy, and they are still replenishing it. The despicable silver wing emperor is actually using both wings to wrap about the nest.

Ci Wei Ka stood in his control room, eyes filled with worry as he instantly pondered on many options.

He realized there was only one way...

Releasing over eight million automaton puppets to fight it out with the sector lord bug kings, that may be effective. However just the time it took to release the puppets was enough for the army to attack a few times. Even though this solution was good, it wasn't fast enough.

"Give up!"

"I can only give up, and watch the silver wing emperor escape."

He made the decision grudgingly. "Silver wing emperor, you got lucky this time. And that despicable human, you got lucky too!"

...

It may seem like a long time.

In truth, the moment the million tiger armored bug kings appeared, they had already begun to unleash their attack!

"Attack!"

"The target is..." This purple space wasn't a true purple space. It was simply a space domain formed from large amounts of energy. The Golden horned beast could easily feel the nine energy spots within the purple space, they were simply the nine pyramids.

"Rumble!" "Rumble!" "Rumble!" "Rumble!" "Rumble!" "Rumble!"

A million beams of light shot out!

They instantly pierced through the purple space.

Every beam of light was the full strength of a bug king. A million of them combined was enough to make even a true emperor change his expression. Against such pure brute force, one could only dodge! Even the Golden horned beast with is Sha Wu wings and general armor would have its body destroyed if it tried to defend against it.

A million light beams gathering in one spot!

Extreme precision!

Not a single beam was with any error, and all of them accurately gathered together. If it were a million human sector lords, even training tens of millions of times wouldn't result in a single successful shot. This was the advantage of the bug clan.

Gathered in one spot!

A very small dot!

Silence!

The entire purple space was silent, accurately speaking it was the loss of sound. Even the land and skies vanished, leaving only the little light dot formed from the million lasers gathered together. It may seem like a lot of time had passed, but in truth, it was only an instant before the little light dot erupted!

Rumble...the land and skies rumbled as the silent world was thrown into chaos. A large hole tore open within ten million km, as countless space fragments rushed around madly.

The huge collapse of the space caused even the distant Ci Wei Ka to feel the ripples.

"Quickly."

"Alina, all of you get back in." The beast immediately collected all the bugs into its internal world immediately after unleashing their attacks.

After that, the huge explosion rippled over.

The beast closed its wings...the explosion that took place 100,000 km away rippled over. The weakened power after the Sha Wu wings and the general armor was still enough to make the beast spit out blood.

"Terrifying."

"Even with the Sha Wu wings and general armor, I'm still heavily hit by the explosion from 100,000 km away."

"If one is hit directly by this, even a pinnacle emperor with an undying body would find it hard to survive." Even though Luo Feng had long known the power of this, seeing it personally and feeling the ripples left him in shock.

"That pyramid!"

The beast turned to it quickly.

In the distance, the pyramid had been ripped open.

Sou!

The beast flapped its wings.

It rushed straight at the pyramid.

...

Millions of km away, Ci Wei Ka was unhurt due to the distance.

"Ah, the foundation of my Nine absolute god country." Through his scanner, he easily saw the pyramid that was hit. It was hit face on at close distance, hence it was ripped open. The pyramid that

was able to withstand a pinnacle emperor's attack, under the combined attack of a million bug kings...

Even though it managed to dodge at the last moment, that little distance had little effect...

The combined attack with an explosion of an area of over 1,000km was extremely powerful.

The pyramid was torn open.

"Master, the foundation ship is heavily damaged, however the core cabin is still fine." The AI of that ripped open pyramid ship reported. Even though the ship was badly damaged, its AI was still undamaged. The important apparatus within the ship used to make the god country was fine too. This was something Ci Wei Ka's master had built, hence it was heavily protected.

It was completely undamaged.

"That's good" Ci Wei Ka let out a sigh of relief.

"Master, the ship is no longer able to fly, it's movement system is completely gone." The AI reported.

"I will let a god go pick you up." He revealed a relaxed expression, after which it grew sullen as he roared, "Silver wing emperor!!!"

The scanner showed...

The silver wing emperor flapped its wings, using its terrifying speed to instantly rush at the broken pyramid.

...

The beast reached the ship, as its eyes filled with excitement. This was an important piece to form the Nine absolute god country. Even though the other eight pyramids were still in perfect condition, it would be very hard to get them, this one however...

"Collect!" The beast tried collecting it into its world ring.

"Hm?"

With a scan with his world energy, he discovered that the AI within the ship was still ok. It was controlling the defense mechanism of the ship to fight back.

"Alina, use 10,000 Shadow spear kings to destroy the ship's controlling system.

"Yes."

10,000 skinny shadow like bug soldiers moved demonically, rushing into the broken ship. Even though they seemed skinny and weak, they were still kings. It was simple to control just 10,000 of them, the mother nest didn't even need to show itself. Hence, it only sent out 10,000 weak bits of consciousness into every bug.

Rumble...

The pyramid rumbled within, with much of its abilities already disabled from before, it couldn't resist.

"Silver wing emperor."

"Silver wing emperor."

A raging howl rang in the beast's ears, it glanced into the distance. The eighty one gods were rushing over angrily, and all of them were incredibly mad. It was obvious that they wanted to take this pyramid away from it.

"Master, it's been done."

"Good job."

...

The Golden horned beast swiftly collected the broken ship along with the 10,000 Shadow spear bug kings into its world ring.

"Bastard!!!" The automaton warrior Ci Wei Ka smashed the control board before him as he saw everything clearly through his scanner.

"The ship's control system has been damaged 73%." A voice

resounded within the room.

"Shut up."

Ci Wei Ka cursed.

After which he stared at the screen on his arm and grit his teeth, "My foundation ship, my foundation ship! Despicable Silver wing emperor, despicable Silver wing emperor!!!"

The nine foundation ships were his most important treasures!

Firstly, the nine million F9 puppets were within the ships, and every one of the ship had one G grade metal puppet that used a world ring to carry the one million puppet army. With that hit earlier, the ship was ripped open. At that time, this G grade metal puppet instantly had its core destroyed.

The puppet army ring was secondary.

The most important thing was...

Every ship's core cabin had an apparatus used for the Nine absolute god country. Only when the nine of them were combined, would it be able to completely form the god country. The moment one of them was gone, it would be impossible to form it. And this apparatus was incredibly expensive...it was his most important asset!

******

The Golden horned beast felt free as it kept the pyramid.

After being disadvantaged for so long, it was its chance to fight back.

"Silver wing emperor."

"Silver wing emperor."

The eighty one gods separated and floated about looking at the beast.

Howl! The beast let out a howl. "Without that purple space, you

cannot even replenish your energy, and you cannot unleash your combined attacks. You don't even have the purple threads to bind me. Without any methods left, you are of no threat to me."

It flapped its wings.

The beast immediately knocked away three gods. With the Sha Wu Wings, the three gods were knocked far away.

G grade metal was indeed very strong.

"I cannot deal with you now." The tallest god said. "However silver wing emperor, how about we make a deal."

"Deal?" The beast asked.

"As long as you return the broken ship to me, I'm willing to give you one billion mixed element's worth of treasure." The tallest god spoke.

"The broken ship's worth far exceeds one billion mixed elements." The beast replied.

"No."

The tallest god with a huge blade on its back shook its head. "It's very important to me, but to a human, you'd only get one part of the nine that is used to make the Nine absolute god country, it's useless like that. Even if you sold it, you wouldn't be able to sell it at one billion. Only I would be willing to sell it at such a high price."

"The nine million automaton army is only worth one billion mixed elements." The beast said, "The eighty one gods are probably only worth about ten billion mixed elements." And the most valuable thing about the Nine absolute god country...you really think I'm that stupid."

Sou!

With a flap of its wings, it flew far away.

"We can discuss this." The tallest god urgently called out.

"I won’t sell a treasure to the enemy. What’s more, I have my pathways to deal with treasures. Like my human alliance friends, there are many powerful warriors there, a valuable automaton apparatus...will definitely attract many warriors." The beast flapped its wings and left far away.

Chapter 803: Star Tower

In the vast skies, a silver beam of light flashed past.

The Golden horned beast was flying close to light speed.

"It’s a pity that the nine pyramids were all so far apart. Since I got the broken one, the others won’t be able to catch me even at their max speed." Luo Feng felt the pinch for the automaton warrior that just lost a huge treasure.

The nine pyramids were worth a shocking amount. He had gotten three billion points when he passed the primal region domain lord sky mountain. He estimated that this pyramid ship would be worth quite a bit too.

"Such a reward sure is a blessing." Luo Feng exclaimed.

Actually, if it weren’t for the sector lord bug kings that tore apart this ship, even if the Golden horned beast could catch up to the ship, it wouldn’t have been able to break through.

...

While flying, Luo Feng reflected on the battle from before.

From start to end, he never made any mistakes, however it was extremely tough.

Firstly, his scanner wasn’t as advanced as his opponent. Hence, it allowed his opponent to have the advantage. Against the surrounding nine million automatons, he had no other way but to let the Golden horned beast to appear. And while the beast was intrepid, it was easy to get the 100s of thousands of puppets to force the opponent to use his trump card, the Nine absolute god country.

The moment the god country was unleashed.

Especially with the countless purple threads binding him, it made the beast lose its greatest advantage of speed, allowing it to be

attacked by the eighty one gods over and over. Luckily the Sha Wu wings had incredible defense. It finally had the chance when the eighty one gods were replenishing their energy, to instantly unleash the million sector lord army.

"Seems wise."

"Luckily I held out until the final moment before finally using the bug army! If I used it from the start, whether it's the nine million F9 puppets or the eighty one gods, I'd lose out. The combined attack of the bug army is incredibly powerful, but their defense is too weak..."

"Overall..."

"The reason I was disadvantaged is mainly because...of my scanner!"

"Without it, I'm not able to detect his movements, and got dragged along by his games. If my scanner was more advanced than his...I wouldn't have been ambushed. I would have detected him long ago, even not even letting him detect me." Luo Feng exclaimed. "The tragedy was...even up till now, I still don't know where the real body is!"

Luo Feng and Ci Wei Ka both had their trump cards!

Ci Wei Ka was weak himself, he relied on his apparatus and techniques etc.

Luo Feng was stronger.

He lost out on having a lousier scanner, allowing his enemy to control the flow of the battle. If he had a better scanner, he would have been able to get close secretly and let his million sector lord bug army destroy the main enemy ship, killing that automaton warrior! Luo Feng would have earned a lot from it, and it would have been in a relaxed manner.

"Scanner!"

"Scanner." Luo Feng reflected on the importance of a good scanner. This battle had forced him to the edge simply because of that one fact.

...

The Golden horned beast glanced backwards slightly, it had an instinct that the automaton warrior was still following him.

"He probably hasn't given up."

"He's most probably following me at a distance. Seems right, he lost so much, especially the important piece of his god country device, how could he just let me go? He's definitely following me and thinking of a way to get it back."

"What do I do?"

Luo Feng pondered, hating the fact that he didn't have a better scanner.

"Do I just let him follow me?"

"He obviously has quite some background. He'll definitely find a way to get the broken ship back, if I keep letting him follow, it's like having a ticking time bomb next to me. Even though I would not have cared that much initially...I have to spend some money." Luo Feng made the decision.

******

His guess was right.

Three hundred million km away, a ship was following.

Within the control room, Ci Wei Ka sat in his chair, and his expression was ashen. Looking at the silver beast on his screen, he gritted his teeth. "Silver wing emperor, I cannot miss a single one of my nine ships. I need all nine to use the Nine absolute god country. You think you can get away with it? You must be dreaming!"

"I initially didn't want to spend a huge amount to kill you."

"Killing an emperor costs too much. However, you took away a ship from the nine pyramids my master had built. you are forcing me." Ci Wei Ka's eyes were filled with madness.

"Die."

"Just wait for your death."

He had sent a thread of his consciousness into the virtual universe, this was the virtual world the automaton race had set up in the outer region wars.

...

Virtual world.

Di...di...di...

He stood before the screen. After awhile, a silhouette appeared. This was a 2m tall and 1m wide fat life form. Although it was covered in scales, however countless scales on its body had eyes on them.

A blur of eyes, it was terrifying.

On its head it had a huge gold eye, the formless powerful energy emanated from the screen.

If Luo Feng saw him, he would have been able to tell instantly that this was a powerful race of the universe. The 1,000 eye race, they were extremely few in numbers but were extremely powerful. They were considered one of the more powerful races in the universe, however their warriors...have to join one of the four camps to gain the right to enter the outer region wars.

Battle was the best way to train a warrior.

A true warrior wouldn't be afraid of battle, constantly giving himself pressure to get stronger.

"Momobu!" Ci Wei Ka was very respectful.

"Ah, my dear Ci Wei Ka." The 1,000 eye race smiled. The blur of

eyes on its body seemed friendly, but it was disgusting. "You should know that I'm currently on Star tower. it's an extremely dangerous place, hence I cannot be distracted. Still, you've chosen to contact me despite this...speak, what's the matter?"

"It's like this."

Ci Wei Ka swiftly explained, slightly altering some details, but the core matter was still the same. "What I want to do...is to kill the silver wing emperor and take back my weapon."

"Ah? Silver wing emperor of the human camp?" Momobu said curiously. "He actually took an important piece of your weapons. However Ci Wei Ka...that is still an emperor, you should know just how tough it is to kill an emperor, we may heavily injure him, but to kill..."

"I've planned it out already." Ci Wei Ka said, "This silver wing emperor's defense is extremely powerful, and it's extremely fast too. It's attack however isn't as terrifying as its defense! It's obvious its comprehension level isn't too high, and it relies on some treasures for defense!"

"And it's battle techniques rely on close combat."

"Hence it's soul side should be weaker. Momobu...you are an absolute warrior proficient in soul attacks. As long as you attack, we should have a 90% guarantee." Ci Wei Ka said.

The 1,000 eye warrior on the screen didn't agree.

Ci Wei Ka said, "I won't waste your time, you are afterall on Star tower now. I'm willing...to use three billion indigo gems to get you to help me, and when we kill the silver wing emperor, you will naturally get the contribution points. Also the items it leaves behind after, you will get a lot of it."

"Ah?" Momobu's many eyes all over gleamed.

Three billion indigo gems...

That was generous enough.

It usually took emperor's trillions of years to accumulate that much, one invitation with that amount, this was extremely rare.

"This Ci Wei Ka sure is wealthy, his master pampers him too much. Only at a pinnacle official level and his wealth is more than many emperors." Momobu couldn't help but exclaim. Just like how Yan Zhu emperor was renowned for being Shi Huo knight's only son, this Ci Wei Ka was the same within the Automaton race.

One had to know that the automatons were living AI's, they didn't have the idea of parent and child.

Hence, Ci Wei Ka was considered his master's most important relative.

"I'm in star tower, how will I head over?" Momobu asked, "Using a ship? That would take half a year."

"No."

Ci Wei Ka shook his head. "Using a ship would take too long. Momobu, teleport via your god country, I will give you safe coordinates. Just come straight to Yan Ji main continent."

"God country teleportation, this will reveal my god country's coordinates."

"With your ability Momobu, who will you fear on Yan Ji Main continent. What's more, only I will know your god country's coordinates, and as allies, I cannot betray you. Momobu, you'll have extra time after completing the mission to change the coordinates of your god country." Ci Wei Ka spoke.

Momobu finally agreed. The rewards from this deal, if successful, was simply too eye catching.

...

After awhile.

Within Ci Wei Ka's living quarters in the virtual world.

"Let me introduce you, this is from our automaton camp, Black Jade emperor from the Pang Wan race." Ci Wei Ka pointed beside him. It was a skinny short man with a silver mask, his hands were like a wild beast's claws, almost like two blades. "Black jade emperor is a pinnacle emperor with teleportation."

"Black jade, this is Death Soul emperor from the 1,000 eye race. He's extremely renowned within the seventh battlefield." Ci Wei Ka pointed at Momobu of the 1,000 eye race.

Black Jade emperor and Death soul emperor.

Both were pinnacle emperors. But in terms of reputation, Death soul was more renowned, mainly because there were many emperor undyings that fell before him.

"Death soul emperor." The short Black Jade looked at Momobu, "Aren't you in Star tower?"

Momobu smiled, all his eyes looked friendly, "I'll rush over."

Chapter 804: Unstable Situation

"Rush over from Star tower?" Black Jade smiled. "Ci Wei Ka must have paid a pretty hefty price to get you over. However, after this battle, let's head over to Star tower together. My rewards from Yan Ji main continent are getting smaller and smaller. It'll be better to head over to Star tower, there may be some goods there."

"You are coming too?" Momonu nodded, "That's good."

The locations in the outer region wars were separated according to their danger levels.

Yan Ji main continent was considered the most dangerous place for the human twenty sixth camp. However, compared to the entire seventh battlefield, even though Yan Ji main continent was still considered very dangerous, there was another above it. That most dangerous spot was...Star tower!

Star tower was one level above it.

Large amounts of emperors gathered there, and officials were considered weak there.

"Then let's work out how we will deal with the silver wing emperor." Black jade said.

"Also, we should discuss our settlement of his goods and so on. This will solve any problem we may encounter later." Momobu said.

"Right, right." Ci Wei Ka smiled and nodded.

...

Ci Wei Ka discussed with the two emperors that he invited on how to deal with the Silver wing emperor, and also about the distribution of his goods.

"Haha, according to the main plan and our two contingency plans, the silver emperor will definitely be sealed even if he doesn't

die." Ci Wei Ka was obviously very excited. "He..."

His expression suddenly changed, revealing shock and rage.

"Ci Wei Ka?"

"Ci Wei Ka?" Both emperors looked at him, feeling something amiss.

"I regret to say this." Ci Wei Ka stood up. His eyes trying hard to suppress his rage as he shook his head, "We cannot deal with him now."

"What's going on?" Both emperors were getting angry.

Was he deceiving them?

The plan was set, the distribution of goods was done, and everybody was ready to make their move. Yet now they couldn't start?

"Please look at this." Ci Wei Ka held back his rage and pointed in mid air, a screen appeared.

On it displayed all the areas Ci Wei Ka was scanning. On that screen, a huge silver winged beast was flying through, suddenly a beautiful half transparent silhouette appeared and spread its undying energy about the beast.

Shua.

They vanished in mid air.

"Teleportation?" Both emperors frowned.

"Right, teleportation." Ci Wei Ka gritted his teeth. This despicable Silver wing emperor is too crafty, I followed him secretly and he actually got help from his allies. This teleportation...is far out of my scanner's detection radius, I don't know where he's gone."

Black Jade and Death Soul emperor exchanged glances, helpless.

"However you two."

Ci Wei Ka spoke, "This matter is not over. I will send out a bounty to get help from all our allies. With countless allies looking out, as long as we find him, I will immediately know. Then I will inform you two."

Both emperors nodded.

"This is the only thing we can do for now." Death Soul nodded, "Then I'll take my leave." He left the virtual world.

"Contact me when you find him." Black jade left too.

Both emperors were obviously unhappy.

If Ci Wei Ka's background wasn't that huge, then the two of them wouldn't have been so polite.

"Bastard."

Ci Wei Ka slapped the table angrily, gritting his teeth, "He actually escaped! As long as you are on the main continent, I definitely won't give you a chance. With countless allies looking for you, the moment we discover your whereabouts, you will be done for."

...

Ci Wei Ka immediately informed a large amount of his allies, sending out a bounty for his whereabouts.

******

Within the edges of the main continent, two silhouettes appeared in mid air above an icy cold lake. The large one was as big as a mountain, covered in silver scales, it was a huge silver winged beast. The small silhouette however was a 10m tall lady with misty wings. She was enchanting with a half transparent body, covered in a robe armor. She had crystal like hair and eyes as deep as the ocean.

"Star fantasy emperor." The Golden horned beast gazed at the little dot, "Thank you for your help."

"By helping you this once, I easily get ten million mixed elements. If you need similar help in the future, do call me. This is much easier than killing a pinnacle official." The transparent wings flapped, and her eyes were like water, "If there's nothing else, Silver wing emperor, I'll be leaving."

The beast nodded.

Hua.

She vanished.

"What a good way to earn money." The beast instantly vanished too. A black armored Luo Feng appeared within the lake, he couldn't help but mutter. "Ten million mixed elements at once, my teacher Hu Yan Bo only had that much."

"Spending money to get rid of the threat."

"After teleporting one light year away. That Ci Wei Ka definitely cannot find me." Luo Feng thought.

When he deduced that the automaton warrior would never give up, following him from the distance...he immediately made the decision to spend money to get help.

Even though he could get his third senior Bloodthirst emperor to help, he wasn't in the outer region battlefield, and a long distance god country teleportation would be monitored by Ci Wei Ka. It would easily reveal his god country location to others. Hence...Luo Feng would rather spend the money and get someone who could use teleportation from the human camp.

Getting his ally to teleport him away.

Very simple.

Simply teleporting without having to battle, hence the cost didn't have to be too high. Ten million mixed elements was a normal amount. If it was too low...the warriors able to teleport wouldn't bother with it. This price was normal. If he needed the

allies to come fight it out, the price would be much higher.

"Hu." Luo feng flipped his hand, a small sesame seed sized pair of silver wings appeared and merged with his body.

He grew a pair of wings, their color changed slightly, this was a true treasure. Changing its color was very simple. After melding with the Sha Wu wings, Luo Feng gave off a powerful energy, his sector lord energy was completely covered by that pair of the wings.

He immediately became a black winged god.

"Let's go." Luo Feng causally picked a C9 grade ship from his countless ships and sat in it, swiftly leaving.

...

The ship flew over the main continent.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng." Babata's voice rang in his mind, "There's an important notice you should see. This is the summary of what the scanner picked up, it's a group of other race undyings chatting 920 million km away."

"Hm?" Luo feng sat within his control room and looked at the screen on his arm, it immediately played a broadcast of three undyings chatting.

"Fifty million indigo gems."

"Hehe, what a huge amount. Fifty million indigo gems just to reveal the coordinates of the silver wing emperor. The moment it's confirmed, we'll get 50 million indigo gems. This bounty, just where is it from? The reward for the information sure is high, isn't this person too wealthy?"

"Who knows, however the one sending this bounty out definitely wouldn't dare deceive us. This is a public broadcast afterall, and countless allies will know of it. If he dared to deceive us...not paying after, it would offend the entire alliance."

"Hm."

"Poor silver wing emperor."

"This silver wing emperor will find it hard to travel about Yan Ji main continent."

...

Looking at the details of the scanner, Luo Feng frowned.

"Luo Feng, that enemy wont give up." Babata communicated.

"That's expected, I did steal an important ship of his. It is an important part of the Nine absolute god county." Luo Feng mocked. "However, since it's a public broadcast of the bounty for the automaton alliance on Yan Ji main continent, hmph...looks like this punk has prepared backup and has confidence in dealing with me. Otherwise, he wouldn't have gone public with this...looks like I cannot reveal the Golden horned beast for awhile."

"Caution is important." Babata emphasized.

Luo Feng nodded.

He was very clear that the enemy was prepared to take him on, he was just waiting for the chance.

"Damn."

"My scanner is too lousy compared to his, otherwise I wouldn't have been in this position. The moment my scanner is more advanced than his, I can take the advantage." Luo feng gritted his teeth. "I cannot delay anymore. I'll head over to the twenty sixth camp now and find a way to get a high price for my items. With enough wealth, I can buy a better scanner."

Sou!

The ship swiftly flew away from the main continent. This trip back to the twenty sixth camp would take a year and a half to reach.

****

Along the way, at a travel spot on Yan Ji main continent closest to Luo Feng.

Weng...

The space rippled and a black blade ship appeared.

"Travel complete."

"Your majesty, we will take another six days to reach the outer regions of the main continent. There are large amounts of fragments there, even the fragments of Yan Ji continent are huge, it would take a long time to fly. It will take about one or two months of flying to get to the main continent.

"Hm."

The black rock statue like youth gave off a dark energy, he gazed at the vast space through the ship.

"Yan Ji continent is my first step." The black armored youth said softly.

...

Just as this youth's ship went through universe travel, Luo Feng's expression changed in his ship.

"There!"

Luo Feng turned fiercely, staring hard at the travel point. His gaze seemingly passing through the barriers of space itself, gazing at the distant point.

"There."

"Treasure."

Luo Feng felt every cell in his body shiver with excitement, almost like countless starving beggars seeing food. This uproar from every cell in his body...they all locked in on that direction, Luo feng seemed to feel something ahead in that travel point.

A treasure that made every cell in his body jump, it was there!

"This feeling, this feeling, is similar to the soldier and general armor." Luo Feng's heartbeat rose.

"But even both armors never made me shiver like this before. This feeling is extremely strong despite the distance. It definitely far exceeds the importance of the two armors." Luo Feng cleared his throat, "Just what is it?"

Chapter 805: Choice

In the air above Yan Ji main continent, a C9 silver colored blue disc shaped ship was flying.

"The distance is shrinking."

"We are getting closer." Luo Feng's expression was serious. Every cell in his body was jumping, locked on a certain spot far away. He could clearly feel that as time passed, the dot moved closer to the main continent.

"It's moving."

"Just what is it, it can actually call out to me so strongly from so far away?" Luo Feng frowned and pondered. "There's a high chance...it's linked to the nameless manual. Only the related treasures, like the soldier and general armor can call out to me like that."

The calling he felt, he had always thought it was very mysterious. As normally even treasures wouldn't call out to people.

Like the Sha Wu Wings or Beast god armament etc...there were countless powerful warriors and treasures in Primal chaos city, however he had never felt such a feeling before. And Luo Feng had checked through the virtual universe network before, he had never seen any information about a treasure calling out to people at all, hence he deduced...

This treasure must have a high requirement for its user, like one had to be trained in the nameless manual to use it, hence the powerful calling.

"I've checked."

"Within the virtual universe treasure trove, there's no such mysterious god armor that allows one to have the strength of 1,000 sector lords or even 10,000 sector lords. Such a special armor...at least with my authority, I haven't been able to find one. The

soldier and general armor have been in the Wu Long Starfield for countless years, yet no one has ever discovered their power."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

In summary...

There were very few treasures linked to the nameless manual, at least humanity's understanding of it was very little.

"It's moving."

"Just what is it? A treasure? Or a life form?" Luo Feng was filled with curiosity.

...

Days passed.

Luo Feng sat in his ship and continued towards the space outside the main continent, the area was simply too huge, even flying at sub light speed for three months, the ship had yet to fly out of the main continent area!

"We are close."

"It's getting closer to us, we will probably meet in half a month." Luo Feng suppressed his excitement. "It's been flying these 3 months, maintaining sub light speed. Then...it's very likely that its within a ship."

...

The distance got smaller.

When it was within ten billion km away, Luo Feng purposely stopped his ship.

"Stop." Luo feng's eyes flashed, gazing into the distant space, almost like he spotted the ship.

Ten billion km away!

Nine billion, eight billion...the distance shrank, in a blink of an eye, five hours passed.

"No..." Luo Feng shook his head and frowned, "It didn't head towards us, and is continuing to fly towards the main continent. I can only feel it, and that ship probably cannot sense us, otherwise it would have headed towards us long ago. The owner of the ship isn't like me, he cannot feel the soldier and general armor."

"Very good." Luo Feng smiled.

The ability to feel the treasure, the enemy didn't have it, this was good news.

"Get close." Luo Feng ordered, "Head towards it."

"Yes." Babata replied.

Luo Feng pointed in the direction and the ship headed towards the mysterious treasure, the distance shrank, three billion km, two billion km...

******

The blade like ship was flying above the air of the main continent.

A black armored youth stood within the ship's control room, gazing at the scenery outside, laughing. "It is indeed a battlefield, this main continent has so many strong warriors. After two months of flying above the continent, I've already clashed 10 times with other strong warriors. They really have some peculiar techniques, it's thrilling. There's no way I would have met so many other race warriors staying within our own territory. Only by coming to the outer region wars where there are plenty of strong warriors would I feel how vast the universe is. There were hardly any repetitions of the races I fought, almost every team was a new race altogether."

"This is afterall the outer region wars, the battlefield for the four pinnacle races." An underling spoke respectfully.

"When will my race become a pinnacle race?" The black armored youth sighed. "Even though my race is strong, and there is only a

level difference between a strong race and a pinnacle race, however the strength difference is unimaginable. Whether it's the number of basic undyings, or the number of absolute warriors, they cannot be compared at all. Only by forming alliances with other powerful races will our race be able to become a pinnacle race."

"Your majesty."

An underling spoke, "The universe has six pinnacle races afterall. It's extremely hard to become one. What's more...with our huge alliances, we naturally don't have to fear the pinnacle races too, we can at least stand equal with them."

"Hm." The youth nodded.

Within the universe.

There were six pinnacle races, they were the strongest amongst the trillions of others.

However, they weren't invincible. While other races may not match up to the pinnacle races alone, with their alliances, their strength would far exceed the six pinnacle races by tens of thousands of times. The numbers of the other races were afterall huge, hence there were many alliances within the universe.

While they may be weak alone, forming alliances allowed them to stand on par with the pinnacle races.

There were different levels of alliances too.

The power struggle within the universe was brutal, the proud lonely space beasts were also forced to form their space beast alliance, allowing them to stay in power. They were at most willing to do this. As for the Demon race wanting them to be absorbed into their race...the space beasts disliked the demons in the first place, why would they even bother?

...

The two ships got closer.

One billion km, this was within Luo Feng's scanning area.

"He should be about 990 million km away." Luo Feng clearly felt the coordinates of the treasure, "Babata, have you discovered anything?"

"990 million km? However, Luo Feng, the scanner hasn't picked up any ship within that distance. I've only discovered two ships One is 510 million km away and the other is 780 million km away." Babata said, "But we haven't discovered your target."

"Hm?" Luo Feng frowned.

"Get closer, follow the direction." Luo feng ordered.

The distance got smaller.

Eight hundred million km, seven, six...

"Nothing."

"Nothing."

"The distance is within 420 million km, no ship has still been detected." Babata said, "And we haven't detected any other ship flying at sub light speed."

Luo Feng's expression changed.

He clearly felt the treasure moving at sub light speed, yet the scanners picked up nothing, the biggest possibility was...the enemy has a scanner more advanced than his.

"When we encountered the automaton warrior before, his scanner was more advanced than mine, could it be that this life form is the same?" Luo Feng cursed.

"Stop." Luo Feng ordered.

The ship stopped.

In the distance, the blade ship continued forward, even though they weren't exactly flying towards each other, the distance

continued to shrink.

380 million km...360 million km...300 million km!

"Hm?" Luo Feng could feel the dot moving all the time, clearly feeling it change directions. It actually began to head towards them, it was clear that they had locked onto his ship.

"We've been discovered." Luo Feng opened his eyes suddenly.

"The enemy has discovered us."

Luo Feng looked down at this arm screen, there was still nothing on his scanners, even anything flying at sub light speed, "My scanner hasn't picked up anything, the enemy is already 300 million km away and has locked onto our position. It's changed its direction and is flying towards us."

"It's obvious he has a more advanced scanner."

...

Within the blade ship.

"There's a black winged human in the distance, there's only him in the ship, he should be some winged human from humanity." The underling said respectfully, "Your majesty's scanner was a gift from the knight, it's definitely top notch within Yan Ji main continent, this human has no clue."

"Hm." The black armored youth nodded.

...

The two of them got closer.

Two hundred million km, one hundred million km, the blade ship headed towards Luo Feng's ship, the direction was spot on without any error.

"What do we do?" Luo Feng felt every cell in his body jump, his blood boiling.

Excitement.

Uproar.

It was almost like he was about to obtain an impressive treasure, he had to fight hard to suppress it.

"Do I go all out and fight for it."

"Or immediately flee."

"If I go for it, the bug clan army has to be within 100,000 km. If the distance is too far, it would be too easy to dodge. If I let the golden horned beast out...that would reveal its location, who knows which camp this enemy is from. I can definitely confirm its not from the human camp, if it's the automaton camp...the moment they see the beast, they would immediately inform the enemy and he would probably teleport over."

Luo Feng was calculating all decisions.

"Arghhh!"

"What do I do?"

"To have such an advanced scanner, he's definitely not a normal official, or he has some huge background. Or he must be extremely powerful. My earth body can only deal with a low level official. To have such a scanner, he definitely has more strength than that." Luo Feng was worried.

He wanted to fight it out for the treasure.

But his strength wasn't sufficient.

The only hope was the Golden horned beast. However, there was the risk of revealing its location, and if revealed, the automaton warrior from before would definitely appear with more power than before.

"Ninety million km...eighty million..." Luo Feng clearly felt the distance shrink.

Chapter 806: Harbor

The ships kept getting closer.

"Luo Feng, don’t risk the danger. Don’t lose your mind because of the treasure." Babata said urgently. "This is the outer region wars. Even though you may get treasures through the dangers, whether its this enemy before you or the automaton enemy from the past, your scanner is no match for theirs, you are disadvantaged! If you take the risk...you may very likely lose your life."

Luo Feng clearly felt the distance get closer.

56.39 million km...50...

As it got closer, the calling got stronger too. If his willpower wasn’t strong enough, his body would have simply jumped out on its own and rushed towards the treasure.

"Leave!" Luo Feng gritted his teeth and ordered. "We leave immediately, head towards the travel point.

"Yes!" Babata said excitedly.

Sou!

The ship that was stopped in the air fiercely accelerated, quickly reaching sub light speed and flying above the main continent.

This scene made the black armored youth chasing him frown.

"Your majesty, the target is moving and has reached sub light speed, he’s heading in the complete opposite direction. Even if we chase at the same speed, we can only get close slowly through angles, it would probably take a long time to catch him. The prerequisite is that he doesn’t know we are chasing him." An underling said.

The black armored youth shook his head, "This human is lucky, let’s give up. There are many other powerful warriors on the main continent."

"Yes."

The blade ship swiftly decreased its speed and headed in its original direction.

Hence...

The two ships got further away from each other.

...

Luo Feng sat in his control room and wielded his blood shadow blade, rubbing it and saying softly, "The weaker ones shouldn't mess with the stronger ones More haste, and less speed...my scanner is weaker than the enemy's, and I'm unable to use my strongest card. I'm also oblivious to the enemy, an enemy with such a scanner must be one with some background."

"If I fight now, I probably can't win."

"It would be a tragedy."

He shook his head.

"Bear with it."

"Since he's come to the main continent, and from where he's headed, it's obviously towards the deep regions of the main continent. He's here to explore the continent. It would take over three months from here to the closest travel point...and my return to the camp would take less than four months before I return here.

"Unless he's dumb enough to come here and return immediately."

"Otherwise...Even with my trip back and forth from the camp, I should still be able to find him." Luo Feng confirmed.

Anyone that came to the main continent, as long as they didn't fall, would at least stay for hundreds if not tens of thousands of years.

And that enemy had obviously just come to the main continent.

From where it was headed, it was obvious that it was towards deeper regions of the continent. The continent was vast, the moment one flew it, it would take a few years to circle around it.

"Even from far, I can still feel the treasure."

"When I return, I should be able to clearly feel his position."

"Hm, back to the camp."

...

Even though he was unwilling, he could only bear with it, everything would have to wait till he returned from the camp.

******

Flying straight to the travel point from the main continent and later travelling straight to the twenty sixth camp.

It took over three months for this return.

"The camp."

The disc shaped ship was like a bead of sand, the camp itself was like a huge planet.

Luo Feng gazed at the camp.

The malevolent war machine was larger than a sun with a diameter of over a million km. It was a pinnacle AAA god base, and its colorful energy barrier surrounded it. Its malevolent ancient looking cannon had complex engravings around its barrel, it made Luo Feng shudder within.

It was a perfect piece of art!

Di!

"Soldier Luo Feng, your ship will now be controlled by the camp, do not resist. If you resist, you will be attacked and the consequences will be deadly."

As the ship got close, it was forcefully taken over by the camp.

Hu!

The ship was brought to a pathway into the base, following the pathways for awhile before it entered a huge hall.

Luo Feng had returned to the camp.

...

"Welcome back soldier." A silver uniformed human worker smiled and welcomed Luo Feng from the cabin door, "Did you choose to retire or come back to rest?"

"Rest." Luo Feng waved his hand and kept the ship in his world ring.

"Follow me." The worker smiled.

Luo Feng followed.

The worker said, "As a free soldier, you have no need to follow the arrangements of the army, you can choose when you want to return to battle or rest. You can also choose to bring an army or not, however...it is rare to see a lone wolf in the outer region wars."

"I don’t like it crowded." Luo Feng glanced at him.

The worker smiled, the two of them became beams of light and quickly reached tens of thousands of km away.

"The left end is the entertainment region, restaurants, and gathering, as all sorts of entertainment can be found there. Ahead is where the free soldiers live. Their living arrangements are much better." He said. "You should have been arranged a place, just retrieve the number given to you and head over. As for entertainment...you can head to the left. If you want to head back out you can follow this path."

Luo Feng nodded.

"Then I wont be bothering you." The worker was very respectful as he left.

Luo Feng glanced ahead.

"Not bad." Luo Feng complimented.

Tens of thousands of km ahead, there was a mountain range with rivers and trees, along with some snowy and sandy areas. This was the top class living quarters of the camp, and it was almost just like a holiday on a planet. To a base with a diameter exceeding millions of km, such a space was easy to make.

Luo Feng’s quarters was an island in the middle of a lake.

"Soldier Luo Feng, this island is your private quarters. While you stay here, no one else is allowed to enter the island."

The beautiful island became his private territory.

Luo Feng walked on the gentle sand and he was satisfied.

"Hey!" He suddenly heard a loud shout .

Luo Feng turned to look. In a distant island, there was an undying human, dressed in loose long robes, covered in green fur and walking barefoot on the sand. Even though he was far, both had vision capable of seeing each grain of sand on their islands. The green furry man smiled and said, "I’m called Ku Tuo, welcome neighbor."

"I’m called Yang." Luo Feng smiled.

"Yang, are you a pinnacle official or emperor?" The distant Ku Tuo smiled.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was curious, "Why are you asking this?"

"Haha...This private spaces are for the free soldiers. However, they all have different living quarters. Some have normal spots while others have more luxurious places such as villas. To have an island by yourself or a mountain peak, these are the top class quarters. Normally only those with high contribution points have the right to live here. They are normally emperors...however from the energy you give off, you seem to be pinnacle official."

Luo Feng couldn’t help but laugh.

Right.

His contribution points were mostly brought in by the Golden horned beast. Hence, he did earn quite a bit. Being given this place...he belonged in the place of an emperor. The human body with the Sha Wu wings gave off the energy of a pinnacle official.

"Almost an emperor." Luo Feng said, "However I haven’t gotten my ranking."

"Haha...looks like you’ve had some growth in the outer region wars. I, Ku Tuo, am known as the Explosion emperor." The distant green fur man smiled.

"Nice to meet you, I have some matters to attend to. Once I’m done, let’s go grab a drink together." Luo Feng smiled.

"Alright." The man smiled back.

The strong were as such, they would normally befriend others of the same level, and the arrangement by the army naturally gave the strong extra encounters too.

Luo Feng entered his own living quarters.

This was a very special place. The island took up an area of 1.2 cubic km. The island itself had some one or two leveled ancient constructs, and surrounding these were ancient statues one could also locate a few azure rivers.

"It’s a good holiday spot." Luo Feng kept the armor and changed to his underpants and jumped into the warm river.

Lying within felt very comfortable.

"Time to study the goods."

...

Within the world ring.

Mosha Luo Feng wore a black robe and stood before the huge

broken pyramid.

"That automaton warrior sure was wealthy. However, this ship should be considered his top treasure, otherwise he wouldn’t even bother to chase me." Black clothed Luo feng followed the slit in the pyramid and entered the ship, after which he carefully examined each cabin.

"Babata." He shouted, with a wave, robots appeared within the walkway.

"Arrange for a careful examination of the ship." He ordered.

"Leave it to me."

A robot replied, the many robots immediately dispersed about. Black clothed Luo Feng...stood before a short G grade automaton puppet. This was the only G grade puppet in the entire ship, however after the attack from the million bug army, even though its body wasn’t fully destroyed, its core within was completely shattered. This was after all an attack that would kill even the Golden horned beast, much less an automaton puppet.

"This G grade puppet, just its metal body alone is worth quite a bit." He muttered.

With a sweep of his world energy, he checked all the items on it, quickly discovering the world ring.

"This should be where the large automaton puppet army is kept."

Chapter 807: Sum of Goods

This world ring was controlled by a G grade automaton puppet. Hence, it didn't have any spirit imprint, and it was considered a free ring. Black clothed Luo Feng immediately used his world energy to scan within.

"Haha..."

He smiled, "Indeed there are 1 million automaton puppets, and all of them are F9 grade, and are in perfect condition." He had already acquired 530,000 puppets before. However, they had their cores damaged by the Golden horned beasts attack. The ones in this ring however were in perfect condition.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng." A 1.5m tall youth Babata ran over.

"Babata." Luo Feng glanced over.

Babata was a living AI, hence it could easily control an automaton puppet body. Back then, the master of the Yun Mo planet Hu Yan Bo had given him a similar body. However, the usage of a metal body...was very normal, it didn't help his abilities much.

The evolution of a living AI was very hard, unless one acquired an Evolution Heart and absorbed it, melding the AI with their body...only then would the two be fully fused.

Almost like a soul to its body.

The living AI would then have a precious living body, and would be able to grow and evolve...

After fully melding with their body, they would feel the universe laws much clearer, at least akin to a normal human warrior. And those without the ability to evolve, like Babata, may train their comprehension. But even after a trillion years, they could never ever become undying! Only with the Evolution heart will one truly have the ability to become a powerful automaton warrior.

As training progresses, the automaton's body will keep strengthening, and the flexibility and sturdiness will improve, almost like a flesh and blood body.

Hence the evolution heart was very important.

It couldn't be helped...

The evolution heart was something only the automaton race had. This was their most important treasure, hence their control on the evolution heart itself was very strict, forbidding any one from ever selling it. This rule is embedded deep within their core, they may be able to produce many evolution hearts to nurture warriors... however they would never sell a single one, even at a huge price.

This made it extremely hard for humans, demons and so on to get their hands on the evolution hearts!

The difficulty was simply too high.

This was something only the automaton race had.

Hence...

Every evolution heart was priced above ten billion mixed elements. This was akin to an emperor's entire wealth. This means...unless one truly wanted to make their living AI their life or death partner, or one was an absolute warrior with huge wealth, they wouldn't be able to afford the evolution heart.

Babata currently didn't even think about it, it had never had one before, he was satisfied with a metal body.

"Luo feng, don't ever forcefully try and hack the perfect F9 puppets." Babata shouted.

"Hm?" The black clothed Luo Feng looked down at the youth Babata.

"The perfect condition puppets all have defensive abilities. If they are forcefully hacked, they will self destruct." Babata said. "The automaton warrior is extremely far from us right now. He's unable

to control these puppets, however if they are attacked and they self destruct, they'd become worthless."

"Hm? There's no way to control them?" Luo Feng asked.

"Of course there is, but my hacking ability is not sufficient." Babata smiled, "Hence there's no need to forcefully attack them. Just scan their insides and sell them! The Virtual Universe Company would naturally have the ability to easily hack them, we just have to pay a small sum."

Luo Feng nodded.

This hacking...it was better left to the professionals.

"How is it, is the scan complete?" Luo Feng looked at Babata.

"Hm." Babata nodded.

"Completed, there are four types of items in this broken ship."

"The first item is the ship itself. This F9 ship is equipped with an extremely powerful defense energy barrier, it's slightly more powerful than the Yun Mo planet ship. It's a pity that the attack before had destroyed it, it's been ripped apart. It's mostly only worth its weight in F9 metal now, it's entire price would still be about five million mixed elements."

"The second item is the G grade puppet. This puppet may not be huge but its still G grade, and its quality is still much better than your blade and shield. It should be worth about twenty million mixed elements."

"The third is the cores you'll get from the 530,000 damaged puppets along with the one million good condition puppets. The price of that would be worth about eight hundred million mixed elements."

"The fourth item is the most valuable. It's the most valuable apparatus within the control room, the apparatus are all made of G grade and F grade metals. Their energy system is incredibly

complex, I don’t even dare scan it. However, just the metal from the apparatus alone would be worth over 500 million, of which the technology and other abilities are even more complex. They are probably worth much more. As for how high, I have no way to confirm."

"Just these four items."

"The entire price must be extremely high, at least more than the goods you’ve accumulated over these 1,000 years. The total sum of your 1,000 years here would only be worth about one hundred million mixed elements. This is far from this ship’s value."

Luo Feng nodded and laughed.

It was time for the harvest!

It was definitely worth it to fight against those with background. He had only acquired a single ship, yet his rewards were that huge. The wealth of that automaton warrior did give him a shock.

"How do I sell this though?" Luo Feng pondered.

"I’ll advise you to first get an estimate from the Virtual Universe Company." Babata said.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

...

He first scanned through all the items and made records of them before simulating them in the virtual universe.

Within the virtual universe primal region, Luo Feng’s villa.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, it’s an honor to meet you. To receive an invite from you really makes me, Nuo Si Wu Xi honored." A green robed fat undying with two fish eyes bowed low to display his respect to Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was the primal chaos city leader’s disciple, naturally his position was extremely high.

"Thanks." Luo Feng smiled.

"Look." Luo Feng pointed to the land beside. On it was a broken pyramid ship, this was completely simulated.

"This is?" The undying asked curiously.

"This is my spoils of war. I'd like to ask, as the purchasing head of the company, what price can you give me." Luo Feng asked. The Virtual Universe Company naturally had a purchasing department. They normally let their AIs handle the deals, the higher value deals however were run by the internal members.

Nuo Si Wu was one of the main managers of this department, he normally dealt with emperors.

"The ship is damaged, it should be worth a few million mixed elements." He said casually. Having frequently dealt with emperors, he didn't care about such low numbers.

"The true goods are inside." Luo Feng smiled, "Follow me."

"Ah?"

Nuo Si Wu was shocked, he was curious about this disciple of the primal chaos city leader.

He entered the broken pyramid along with Luo Feng.

"This is an automaton ship, and one from a warrior with quite some background." Nuo Wu Si looked at the décor within, smiling as he passed judgment. When he first saw the G grade puppet, he nodded and complemented, "G grade puppet, its metal alone is worth twenty million mixed elements."

"These are the 1.52 million puppets I collected, of which 530,000 are damaged while one million of them are still fine. These are the damaged ones and the perfect ones."

"This is the most valuable apparatus I acquired, it's able to set up a powerful space that can even trap an emperor."

...

After the viewing, Nuo Wu Si was shocked, because even an emperor usually only had a wealth of only about ten billion mixed elements. They would hardly have a deal worth tens of billions.

"The automaton puppets are only slightly damaged, only their energy cores have been shattered. Since their important parts are still fine, they only require light repairs. The 1.53 million puppets are exceptional goods even amongst the F9 items. They'd be worth a few hundred mix elements each. The cost of building them within humanity is much higher...on average they'd require about 1,000 mixed element each, hence I can give you a price of 1.5 billion mixed elements."

"Of course."

"The most valuable items is the apparatus, this batch...uses extremely good materials and the most important thing is their usage. This is considered top class even within the automaton race, a knight level warrior probably spent quite a bit of energy to create them. To get an automaton knight to build something like that... it's worth a lot, but it's a pity this is only a part of it. As for the apparatus...I can give you a price of three billion mixed elements."

Nuo Si Wu finally gave Luo Feng the estimates.

"Including all the other little items, I can raise them slightly higher. I'll give you a total price of 4.6 billion mixed elements." He smiled, "I'm normally not this generous with normal emperors."

"4.6 billion mixed elements?" Luo Feng was surprised.

"Thanks, I'll think about it." Luo Feng said.

"Haha, no rush. If you wish to sell them, you can find me anytime." Nuo Si Wu smiled, "Your majesty's rewards are huge, especially the apparatus. However, if you could get the complete set made by that knight, it would be worth a lot more."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Nuo Si Wu left.

"Haha...even the Virtual Universe Company is willing to fork out 4.6 billion." Luo Feng smiled, "This sure is worth a lot, that automaton warrior must really have some background."

"Not bad." Babata smiled, "Fighting a powerful enemy brings bigger rewards. Fortune and disaster go hand in hand after all."

"This is fortune, how can this be a disaster." Luo Feng smiled. "Right now I’m wondering how to get a higher price and through what means should I go through."

Chapter 808: Deal

what was the best way to get the highest price for his goods?

"I'll have to rely on the network."

He searched for information on how to sell stuff, reading each article carefully.

"Ah, Hong Alliance?" Luo Feng looked at the screen and frowned. "According to this, the rarest and most valuable items in humanity are normally dealt within the Hong alliance? These treasures are only circulated within the large number of powerful warriors in this alliance, and only they can give a true high price. However, I've not been invited into the alliance."

"Hm."

After thinking for awhile.

He immediately contacted his teacher True Yan.

"Du...du..."

A gold armored ape appeared in the screen, it was True Yan. His eyes were like lightning as they looked at Luo Feng. He laughed and said, "My dear disciple, why have you contacted me?"

"Teacher." Luo Feng said respectfully, "I have a favor to ask of you."

"Speak." True Yan smiled.

"It's like this." Luo Feng swiftly said. "I acquired some valuable items in the outer region wars, however I don't wish to simply sell them to the Virtual Universe Companies buying department. I want to get your help...to help me sell them to the Hong alliance."

"Ah?" True Yan frowned, "Sending to the Hong alliance to sell?"

Luo Feng nodded.

"The Hong alliance isnt ordinary at all." True Yan warned. "They

are a huge alliance formed mainly by humans with other powerful warriors from other races! One has to at least be emperor level to become a member. Even for the staff position, many warriors are fighting to send their sector lords and undyings..."

"There!"

"Countless powerful warriors are gathered within, deals are a normal thing. I, True Yan, do indeed know many warriors within. It's not that I can't help you, I only have one request, and that is that it has to be valuable. Otherwise, I'd simply lose my reputation." True Yan said.

"What is considered a treasure?" Luo Feng asked.

"Worth at least 1 billion mixed elements and up" He replied. "If it's not even worth that much, don't make me lose my face."

"Teacher, this is the detailed information about my goods, I'll send it to you." Luo Feng sent a mail. "These goods...the buying department of the company offered me 4.6 billion mixed elements."

"4.6 billion?"

True Yan was shocked, staring hard at his disciple. "The company will definitely give you the lowest price possible, yet that alone is worth 4.6 billion? My disciple, just who did you steal from, earning the wealth of an emperor like that."

Luo feng smiled.

True Yan began to look through the information.

"Hehe, an automaton knight created this special weapon? This is worth a lot." True Yan nodded, "My disciple, leave it to me, I will sell it at a high price. Haha, I was wise to have you as my student, your treasure earning ability is three times that of your third senior."

Luo Feng smiled.

"The fastest this would take is half a day, slowest 3 to 5 days, just wait for my call."

"Pa."

True Yan disconnected and went to carry out the favor.

Actually, dealing in such big deals did give one a sense of achievement. True Yan had spent countless years in Primal chaos city, he hardly ever had such dealings. He was happy to actually work with such a deal with the Hong alliance, going through his connections to get a high price.

...

Luo feng currently had two teachers, True Yan and the primal chaos city leader.

Luo Feng had spent a long time with True Yan. Since True Yan's character was straightforward, Luo Feng always felt relaxed and friendly with him. With the city leader however, he felt extreme pressure, he had to always maintain full respect.

Hence, for certain matters, Luo Feng would rather look for True Yan rather than bother the city leader.

Unless it was a huge matter, he didn't dare disturb the leader.

"Slowest would be 3 to 5 days?"

Luo Feng sat before his desk and gently tapped the screen. "Then I shall do some studying on scanners."

"Hua!"

Detailed information and numbers appeared.

sfret01——102983, scanning area of one billion km in diameter. It requires five million points (lowest discount 5%, highest 10%, you get 6%.)

sfret01——102983, scanning area 300 million km in diameter. Requires four million points (lowest discount 5%, highest 10%, you

get 6%.)

...

sdu01——000001, scanning area one billion km in diameter. Requires fifty billion points (lowest discount 5%, highest 10%, you get 6%.)

sdu02——000001, scanning area of 300 million km in diameter. Requires forty billion points (lowest discount 5%, highest 10%, you get 6%.)

...

...

a111——192039, scanning area 100 km in diameter. Requires one million points (lowest discount 5%, highest 10%, you get 6%.)

a112——192039, scanning area 20 km in diameter. Requires 800,000 points (lowest discount 5%, highest 10%, you get 6%.)

...

...

The scanners were mostly separated into two kinds.

One was with large areas, normally about 100 million km, 300 million km and 1 billion km in diameter. The better it was, the more area one would be able to see, like the 300 million and 1 billion km types.

The other type was the small area. Normally with diameters of 10 km, 20km, and 100km. The higher ones were 20km and 100km.

The large ones...could scan ships from far, it was easier to set up.

The small ones...were normally for universe secret regions, it scanned small areas extremely well. As its area was small, it could do a higher level scan.

"Hu."

Luo feng continued to read through the information, the many

high level scanners were usually not available even to primal region members. Luo Feng however was able to see everything... but he couldn't even afford them. When he saw they required ten billion points or even hundred billion, he could only stare wide eyed.

"Absurd prices."

"Even with my discount, I still can't afford it."

Luo Feng pondered, "What grade should I buy this time? Ten million points level? Over hundred million points level? Billion points?"

Back when he bought his scanner in primal chaos city, he had no experience whatsoever. He purely looked at some information about scanners used in the outer region wars and bought one. However...having been here for over 1,000 years and suffered some losses, he knew exactly what he needed.

"I'm too stupid."

"There's no need to have a one billion km diameter scanner. I just need a three hundred million km area."

"I'll also buy a specialized small area scanner, it'll serve me better when I am closer."

"The two scanner would complement each other when both were used."

"For the large area...I have two choices. One of them is for two billion points, the higher level one is six billion points. As for the small one, I'll have to spend quite a bit too." He thought. "Let's see how much teacher can bring in from my goods."

******

Luo Feng had many things he wanted to buy. The most pressing being the scanner, he also wanted to nurture the cloud contact vine and other items.

However...

They all needed money.

"Ku Tuo."

"Yang."

A black armored Luo Feng with black wings on his back lifted his wine glass with the green armored and furry man.

"Yang, how are your rewards?" Ku Tuo asked.

"Normal, you should know too, that official level undyings all have undying bodies, killing every one of them is extremely hard." Luo Feng lifted his glass. "I only killed about 100 officials over the last 1,000 years. All of them were mostly low officials while there were very few high officials, and that is still lucky. Hm, the points take too long to accumulate."

"It's very hard to kill undying bodies." The furry man put down his glass angrily, shaking his head. "I'm also at emperor level, the pinnacle officials are obviously weaker than me, and yet I cannot do anything about them. Killing a hundred officials over 1,000 years is not bad already. It's even better than me, right, where are you situated?"

"Yan Ji continent." Luo Feng replied.

"Yan Ji continent?" Ku Tuo stared, "You are already emperor level, yet you are still there? You can come to Star tower already, I'm right there!"

"The most dangerous place in the seventh battlefield?" Luo Feng smiled.

There were several extremely dangerous places in the seventh battlefield, the closest from the twenty sixth camp was star tower.

"Even though it's dangerous, it's full of encounters." Ku Tuo advised, "Whenever you head over, let's work together."

"Ku Tuo."

"Ku Tuo."

Three voices resounded and three silhouettes walked over, the formless pressure they emanated was terrifying.

Even though the restaurant was huge, the other normal undyings and officials all naturally stayed away from this region, because the undyings here were all emperors.

"Ha." Ku Tuo waved his hand and said to Luo Feng, "These three are my comrades in Star tower. I've explored the areas with them, let me introduce you."

Luo Feng nodded.

"Come come come, I'll introduce you all to my new friend Yang." Ku Tuo shouted to the three emperors.

...

Luo feng waited patiently within the twenty sixth camp for his teacher's answer, while making friends with the emperors within.

On the third day, true Yan finally contacted Luo Feng.

Chapter 809: Information on Blood River Crystals

At dawn, mist engulfed the river.

On an island within, Luo Feng lay within the hot springs, and was relaxing his body, when True Yan suddenly contacted him.

"Hurry over to my palace on Lightning island."

"Yes teacher."

...

Virtual universe Lightning island, countless undyings within the Virtual Universe Company stayed here, True Yan's palace was one of them.

"Your majesty, his lord is within." A guide showed Luo Feng the way.

"My disciple, hurry in." True Yan's voice boomed from within.

Luo Feng immediately entered.

With a glance, three warriors were sitting around a table within. One of them was True Yan, another had feathered wings and gold eyes, while the last one was a huge silhouette, almost like black mud.

"Teacher." Luo Feng shouted respectfully as he entered.

"Haha..." True Yan smiled, "Let me introduce you."

"These are other race warriors. This is Desire emperor and this is Black heart emperor." True Yan pointed at the feathered warrior and then the black mud like warrior. All of them wore a smile, of which the feathered warrior Desire emperor smiled and said, "This is your disciple True Yan, and the disciple of the primal chaos city leader. True Yan, you don't have to introduce him, his reputation is quite wide spread."

"Hm." The black mud like warrior nodded.

"Disciple, sit." True Yan pointed at the chair beside.

"Yes."

Luo Feng sat down.

"I've already arranged everything for you." True Yan explained, "The grade puppet and the 1.53 million puppets will all go to desire emperor. That apparatus...will go to black heart emperor. The prices have been set, Desire emperor is willing to give you 1.8 billion mixed elements. Black heart emperor is willing to give you 4.3 billion."

Luo Feng nodded within.

The automaton puppets were easily accessible to such powerful warriors. The Virtual Universe Company was willing to give him 1.5 billion, the highest it could go would probably be about two billion.

Hence, 1.8 billion was already very high, the puppets were after all common items.

The Nine absolute god country apparatus however was a rare item. Although it wasn't worth much to people uninterested in the automaton weapons, to the collectors however, it was a true treasure. They could dissect it and carefully analyze it...studying their methods.

"Luo Feng." Black heart emperor said, "Do you know anything about this apparatus?"

"This is one portion of the device used to set up the Nine absolute god country." Luo Feng immediately explained. "When set up, even a pinnacle emperor would be trapped within...and combined with the special automaton puppets within, it can unleash several special attacks, its power is absolute."

"Hm." Black heart emperor's eyes gleamed, nodding as he smiled,

"Trap? Attacks? Let's immediately begin the exchange then."

"Alright." Luo Feng nodded.

Luo Feng discussed with the two emperors and swiftly confirmed their method of exchange...using the Virtual Universe Company as the middleman to deliver the goods and confirm the exchange. The commission for such a deal would usually have a high of 1,000 mixed elements max, lowest being one mixed element. For such a deal...

As both black heart emperor and Desire emperor were both outside humanity's territories, both deals were charged 100 mixed elements as commission.

Compared to the deal involving 6.1 billion mixed elements, this was nothing.

...

After the deal was settled.

Both emperors were interested in getting along with the primal chaos city leader's disciple, they were after all races subservient to humanity. Even as generals for humanity, they mostly used mixed elements as their currency. Since humanity has such a large influence on them, a being such as the city leader...was looked up to and worshipped by them too. It was a pleasure for them to talk to Luo Feng.

They chatted and ate.

During the banquet, a team from the company in reality went to collect the goods from Luo Feng.

The goods were confirmed!

Black heart emperor and desire emperor naturally transferred the funds.

"Hm?" After the banquet, Desire emperor suddenly stood up as he was discussing his experiences in the secret region.

"What’s the matter?"

Black heart emperor and True Yan both looked at him shocked.

Luo Feng was curious too.

"The Hong alliance has opened a blood river crystal auction! It will begin immediately!" Desire emperor said softly, his eyes suppressing his excitement.

"Blood river crystal auction? The other two emperors were shocked.

"Hmm, we’ll see if I can get any this time." Desire emperor’s eyes were filled with anticipation, after which he smiled, "True Yan, you are already pinnacle emperor, almost akin to a knight...don’t fight with us for the crystals."

"Blood river crystals are effective even for knights, why shouldn’t I fight for them?" True Yan mocked.

"Bring it! Anyway, there will be many others." Desire emperor shook his head, "Let’s go participate in the auction."

"You two go on ahead." True Yan said.

"Luo Feng, we’ll be leaving first." The two emperors said their goodbyes and rushed off, vanishing from the hall.

Only True Yan and Luo Feng were left behind.

"Teacher...what’s with the auction for blood river crystals? I remember they are banned items, banned from deals, auctions etc." Luo Feng asked.

"Ah, right, you’ve been to Blood river continent."

True Yan smiled and nodded, "You must remember one thing, anything that is banned, is all only relative. Even the most valuable items, they may be banned for sector lords, but the undyings can still make deals! If they are banned for undyings...the knights may still exchange them freely, the term ban is only relative to different levels."

"Ah." Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

It was as such.

"Hong Alliance is an alliance led by humans with many other races, naturally many valuable items will appear." True Yan said.

"The blood river crystals?" Luo Feng couldn't help but ask.

Absorbing them was extremely hard. A human absorbing ten crystals was already unbelievable, what would be the benefit of auctioning them?

"Why are even the knights fighting for the crystals?" Luo Feng asked, "Absorbing them is extremely hard."

"Of course it's hard."

"At sector lord level, the body's genetics are evolved to its limit. A human absorbing ten crystals is already unbelievable." True Yan laughed loudly. "However, the crystals...these are condensed crystals of the Beast god's essence, they are crystals of its blood."

"The Beast god is a being akin to a knight, and as a powerful natural beast of the universe, with gold and space infused within its body, the crystals' wonders...do you think there'd simply be just one way to absorb them?"

Luo Feng was stunned.

So that was it...the crystals were essences, condensed blood of the beast god?

"The crystals have many uses, with huge benefits even to the knights." True Yan nodded. "However humanity's upper echelon has a strict control on these important items, usually only supplying them to the strongest! Hence very rarely would there be a few blood river crystals circulating to be auctioned. These crystals...are important treasures to any blood and flesh life form."

"Every hundred crystals form a unit, because a hundred of them

can form one drop of the beast god’s blood." True yan said.

"However...I’m currently at the emperor pinnacle level. What I lack is the law comprehension, external treasures are useless to me. Hence, I won’t bother fighting for them." True Yan smiled, "When I become a knight, I’d probably have to go fight for some too."

"Haha...the blood river crystal auctions normally attract many powerful warriors, I’ll head over just to join in the fun. You should return."

Luo Feng replied, "Yes teacher."

Shua!

True Yan vanished from the hall.

"Blood river crystal? A hundred of them can be condensed into one drop of the beast god’s blood?" Luo Feng muttered. "A true treasure to any flesh and blood life form, one that even knights will fight for?"

"Damn."

"Back then, the Virtual Universe Company gave us universe level punks a low price of 600 points for one crystal." Luo Feng smiled weirdly. Shaking his head, "Seems right, we were simply universe level punks, they needn’t give us too high a price. To them, they already gave us a chance to acquire the crystals. How would the little punks know that these crystals were incredibly important treasures to the emperors and knights."

Sou!

Luo Feng vanished too.

...

A hundred crystals could be condensed into a drop of the beast god’s blood, and it was hard for the universe level geniuses to acquire even a few of them. Luo Feng, who was supposed to be a

universe level, had a powerful domain lord clone proficient in assassination, the mosha body...

This was too rare.

And back then, he had used the mosha body to steal close to 10,000 crystals.

Back then, facing the 600 points per crystal price, he fought hard against his desire for more points. He was sure that these crystals were true treasures and that he shouldn't sell them.

...

"Haha, I never would have expected the uses and benefits of the crystals would be that important in the future." Luo Feng walked out of the hot springs. The water flowed off his body, the chill from the air made him comfortable.

He casually lay in a chair.

The more he thought of it, the happier he got.

Wise, he was wise to keep all the crystals, this was a fortune.

"Right."

"Back then my universe level human body only absorbed three crystals. Now that I'm sector lord pinnacle, and I'm trained in the nameless manual, my cells have evolved." Luo Feng thought. "It's time to try absorbing the crystals again."

It had been many years since he last tried.

As it was too hard to simply absorb the three crystals last time, with the Black warrior... even a being, a legend within the history of blood river continent, he always thought he would never reach ten crystals. And without reaching ten crystals, the rise in his power would be limited. Hence, he never gave it another shot, just like that...a few thousand years had passed.

Chapter 810: Deep Pockets

Within the room, Luo Feng sat crossed legged.

"Absorbing a new crystal always gets increasingly difficult. However, my body is much stronger than before, who knows how many I can absorb now." Luo Feng wasn't confident in absorbing ten blood river crystals simply because the black warrior was but a legend in Blood river continent.

From his absorption back then, his genetic make up was much stronger now, even with the nameless manual. However that was only the first level.

It was still extremely hard to become a black warrior!

"Let's begin."

He flipped his hand and brandished one blood river crystal.

It was a triangular crystal that was completely blood red and translucent. It gave off energy ripples that were almost like a heartbeat.

"Back then when I first saw a crystal, I thought it was like a life form. But, now I know that it's the blood crystals from the fallen Beast god." Luo Feng slashed his palm and allowed the crystal to make contact with the bleeding wound.

The killing intent permeated his skin and his body changed. He was familiar with this feeling. For someone that had absorbed over hundred crystals, this level of pain...was nothing.

After awhile.

The fourth crystal was completely absorbed. Luo Feng was very calm, absorbing up to five or six crystals was within his expectations.

"Who knows which one I can get to." He flipped his hand and brandished the fifth.

Fifth crystal!

Sixth!

Seventh!

"The seventh one succeeded as well!" Luo Feng's face was covered in perspiration from the pain. But his eyes were gleaming excitedly, "I actually succeeded in absorbing the seventh. Back then, it took countless years to produce an absolute genius like the Blood God Ba Qi, and he only absorbed eight crystals. My body genetics aren't exactly the strongest, is it because I trained in the nameless manual that I'm able to go through this change?"

"I'll try the eigth." Luo Feng took out another crystal.

Absorb!

Success!

"Ah...I've caught up with Ba Qi." He blinked his eyes, "Let's try the ninth."

He couldn't help but grow in excitement. He may truly become a black warrior, he easily withstood the killing intent from the ninth, as the energy poured into his body...

"Pa!"

His muscles and skin began to tear apart.

"Ka Cha." His bones broke.

After which the blood river energy flowed back into the crystal, the absorption of the ninth crystal had failed!

...

"Absorbing the eighth is already beyond my expectations. I only have an earthling's human body, the only special trait is being trained in the nameless manual. And it allowed me to reach the level of that absolute genius Blood god Ba Qi." Luo Feng was shocked. The nameless manual was simply unbelievable.

In truth, once one’s genetics reached its limits, it was hard to evolve further.

The first level of the nameless manual allowed him to raise his body strength three times! What level of gene evolution did it take to get such an effect?

"Absorbing eight crystals have very little effect on my strength though." Luo Feng shook his head.

Absorbing three, ten, hundred, these were there limits.

After the third crystal, one’s melding with the universe energies would double.

After the tenth, one would reach three times! And triggering the blood river energy would cause one’s cells to evolve temporarily and rise in strength.

At eight crystals however, compared to passing the three crystals from before...his strength had risen just a little more than before.

******

He walked out of the room full of perspiration. He jumped into the pool barefoot and swam about casually at the bottom.

He was already very satisfied with absorbing eight crystals.

Even though his strength didn’t rise that much, it showed how powerful the nameless manual was.

"If, if I can get the second level of the nameless manual, my body will once again go through a huge evolution. I may be able to absorb 10 crystals." Luo Feng shook his head helplessly. For such a heavenly manual, getting the first level alone was a huge miracle, how hard would it be to get the second?

"Hm."

"The earth body is at its limit. I’ll let the Golden horned beast try to absorb more crystals." Luo Feng lay on the rocks as the warm water flowed about him. Simultaneously, he began trying to let the

beast absorb more blood river crystals.

He wasn’t too anxious about letting the beast absorb more crystals.

Mainly due to the fact that absorbing hundred crystals seemed to already be the maximum amount. Luo Feng could withstand the killing intent and power of the hundred and first crystal a long ago. However, the right claw was unable to absorb anymore blood river energy. The Beast god howling picture formed from triggering the energy was already very perfect.

The right claw had reached its limit!

Then, he could only absorb the crystals with the rest of the body. However, no matter how strong his willpower was, to absorb another hundred crystals...would at most make its other body parts as strong as the right claw. Even so, its entire body strength would double from before.

And this is only after absorbing another hundred. One had to know that each new crystal got harder and harder, Luo Feng didn’t dare expect too much.

"101st!"

"102nd!"

Within his internal world, the beast began its absorption. He picked the back portion this time mainly because this was the core of the body’s strength, and the wings were on its back too. If it was strong enough, it would be easier to use the Sha Wu Wings and unleash its strength.

"The back just begun to absorb crystals, the gene change is starting from zero Hence, the pain is very minimal." Luo Feng smiled as he lay in the river.

Crystal after crystal.

110th...

120...

130...

The killing intent got stronger and stronger. However, Luo Feng was only a few hundred years old when he absorbed the first hundred, and with a few thousands years passing since then...his long years of comprehension and connection to the universe source had trained his consciousness and willpower. It made his mental state strength much stronger than before. Even though he was only in the first level of mental state training, Knowing oneself, his willpower was incredible.

The higher level of mental state training may not necessarily be stronger than the lower levels.

The second level of Innocence compared to the first level was normally much stronger.

However Luo Feng constantly pushed the limits of the first level. His willpower back then was but a few hundred years old.

140th...

150th...

160th...

162, 163, 164, 165!

"The 166th crystal has failed, my willpower cannot take it." Luo Feng revealed a smile, "To absorb 165 crystals is already not bad. It gets harder towards the end, and my willpower has improved quite a bit over these few thousand years."

Even though the beast had absorbed sixty five crystals in its back.

The entire strength of the beast had probably only risen by ten percent.

As the back strength was but a small portion of its entire strength, it couldn’t compare to the right claw, hence the growth was limited.

******

The fourth day Luo Feng stayed in the camp.

"Rumble!" Three silhouettes flew above the mountain ranges and quickly reached Luo Feng’s private island.

"Haha, you are finally here."

Luo Feng strode out.

"Sir, these are the goods you ordered." The three silhouettes were led by an undying. He respectfully handed a world ring, "This world ring is complementary." The ring flew straight at Luo Feng and floated before him.

"Hm." Luo Feng accepted it excitedly.

After fighting for so long and thinking hard, he was simply just waiting for the goods.

He had completely spent the 6.1 billion mixed elements. Giving a world ring worth one mixed element was normal for such a huge deal.

"We’ll take our leave."

"Go on."

Luo Feng waved his hand and entered his house excitedly. From start to end, the three workers from the Virtual Universe Company never set foot on his island. As this was a private island, the army had ruled that no one was allowed to set foot on it without Luo Feng’s permission.

"They are finally here."

"I spent all of my 6.1 billion." Luo Feng sat in the chair beside and immediately used the mosha body to check the goods.

He had gotten 6.1 billion from Black heart and Desire emperor back then, immediately exchanging all of it for 6.1 billion points. Under normal circumstances, only after becoming undying would

one be able to exchange mixed elements for points. However, after Luo Feng became the disciple of the primal chaos city leader, his authority had risen higher than most emperors. Naturally he had the right to exchange mixed elements for points.

After getting 6.1 billion points, plus the 180 million he had from before.

He began to splurge.

Firstly, he bought two types of scanners. A large one that cost two billion points, only few emperors could afford something like that. And a small scanner that cost 1.8 billion, even though it could only scan an area of twenty kilometer, it's detail and level of scan was akin to the large scanners worth 100s of billions. Meaning... with this small scanner, as long as a few powerful warriors discovered Luo Feng, even if his own large scanner couldn't detect them...his small one would.

Secondly, he bought the best combination of items to nurture the cloud contact vine to undying level, spending a total of 1.53 billion points! Naturally, even so, the chances of the cloud contact vine becoming undying was still only 50%.

Thirdly, he bought one Flame god core crystal, akin to a high emperor's self destruct. This was enough to kill even a high level emperor or harm a pinnacle emperor, and he had spent 800 million points on this. Back then in primal chaos city when Luo Feng had three billion points, he had exchanged for Flame god crystals before. He had gotten two low level emperor crystals, after spending four hundred million points. The only thing was that he was never actually forced to use them yet.

With the three of them together.

He spent a total of 6.13 billion, leaving him with only 150 million points.

He couldn't wait any longer, "To make the cloud contact vine

reach undying...the evolution process would require quite some time. While returning I'll evolve it, I'll head out now...back to Yan Ji main continent."

...

After bidding goodbye to the emperors he had been hanging out with, Luo Feng sat in his ship alone and left the twenty sixth camp, heading back to the main continent.

**

Chapter 811: Cloud Contact Vine

This was a disc shaped E9 ship. It had begun universe travel at the spot closest to the twenty sixth camp.

Within the dark universe.

"The ship is proceeding at light speed. It will take 122 hours to reach Yan Ji main continent's travel spot." Babata's voice resounded within the control room.

"Accelerate a little." Luo Feng ordered within, "Make it so that we reach there in 3.5 days."

"Yes."

The ship slightly got faster, maintaining its stability.

Luo Feng closed his eyes, saying softly, "According to the plan, the cloud contact vine evolution process requires three days. I hope that it succeeds."

...

Within his internal world.

In the center island of the continent, a thick vine had spread over tens of thousands of km. It was the full form of the cloud contact vine.

"Cloud contact vine."

"Howl.:

Ten thick and several km long vine flew straight towards the black clothed Luo Feng. Hua hua...the surrounding leaves immediately made way and cleared a space for Luo Feng.

"Cloud contact vine, good." Luo Feng rubbed the little vine and smiled, "Make an area with a diameter of 1,000 km."

Countless leaves swiftly pulled back.

The surrounding space was cleared, a clear empty space of 1,000

km in diameter around Luo Feng appeared.

"Enough." Black clothed Luo Feng flipped his hand and seven glaring red fruits appeared in mid air.

"First step." Luo Feng got serious.

"Vine, swallow them." He ordered.

Rumble!

Seven vines rushed over and immediately swallowed the water melon sized red glaring fruits. after which, red light began to glow throughout the plant. It seemed to struggle slightly from the pain.

"Pain, pain..." The vine communicated.

"Bear with it." Luo Feng flipped his hand and a huge stone basin appeared in mid air, and it was filled with a jade green like liquid.

"Swallow it." He continued.

As time passed.

All sorts of materials appeared and the vine continued to swallow them all. According to the detailed instructions, just this process alone took up to two whole days. The amount of materials added up to only a small portion of the vine. However, one could only imagine how much it was considering it was worth 1.53 billion points.

"As for the final step...these 18 materials, swallow them all!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed with madness as he ordered.

Seemingly normal vines that gave off terrifying energy madly wrapped about the materials. In the blink of an eye, it swallowed everything.

"Vine!"

"Now it's all up to you, do you breakthrough to undying or will my investment be for naught, it's a gamble now." Luo Feng stared at the surrounding vines. It seemed calm after swallowing the

latest materials, however crackling noises almost like cannons resounded within.

Tens of km of vines began to glow with colorful lights, it was mesmerizing. The vines also constantly tore apart with countless fragments leaving the main body, it relied on its regenerative ability to regrow them.

Tear!

Regrow!

The old fragments vanished as new ones appeared.

The entire cloud contact vine seemed to have shed its entire whole body and evolved to something else. Changing over and over...it continued to evolve, the efficiency was terrifying.

Time passed and Luo Feng watched from mid air as the vine twisted over and over and regrew. He couldn't help but mutter, "Withstand it, you have to continue on. The moment you stop, the evolution will fail."

After one whole hour.

The cloud contact vine that tore apart every few seconds had evolved like that for one whole hour.

An hour later.

"Weng..." The now completely gold cloud contact vine which had been storing its special energy within seemed to finally find the chance to explode open. The originally excited and glaring gold cloud contact vine suddenly had special explosions of energy from every leaf.

It's energy soared instantly!

The gold cloud contact vine instantly froze up, ice crystals forming throughout its vines and leaves.

It was like a huge ice sculpture, not moving at all, almost like it was dead. Only a faint very weak energy rippled from within, small

changes still occurring on the surface of the vines.

"Whoa!" Black clothed Luo Feng felt the surrounding cold and said softly, "So cold, I wonder who in the universe created this evolution process for the cloud contact vine. The many steps are all incredibly detailed, it should have been some powerful chemist or many generations of chemist constantly perfecting it."

Seeing the evolution process reminded him of techniques used by chemists.

"The last day."

"Vine."

Luo Feng looked at the ice statue, "You have to withstand it to the last step and breakthrough to undying. Otherwise you'll fail, it's the last day, you have to last till the end."

This one day of being frozen was the most dangerous step of the entire evolution process.

Seconds passed as little changes occurred within the vine. Luo Feng held his breath and watched as he was in fear of the vine crumbling.

"Hold on."

"You have to." He muttered. Every second seemed extra long, it felt like a hundred years or even a thousand.

During this one day of being frozen, there were many tiny changes occurring within the cloud contact vine. After it finally reached its limit, the ice crystals instantly melted off and the cloud contact vine rushed madly into the sky. The 216 vines were still with countless vines and leaves expanding and waving about in the air.

"Rumble!"

A terrifying spirit shook the area.

"Breaking through the confines and connecting to the universe

source. This is the final step!" Luo Feng stared hard in mid air, gripping his fists hard. Even though he had the hundred vine star eating plant breaking through back then, the difference between the hundred vine star eating plant and his cloud contact vine was too huge to compare.

The probability of that hundred vine star eating plant breaking through was extremely high. As for his cloud contact vine, it only had a 50% probability, and the amount of materials used was much much more.

The vine had reached the final step.

Weng...

A formless pressure descended.

Luo Feng who was originally in mid air was forced to land on the ground and kneel from the pressure.

"The universe source pressure." Luo Feng was extremely gleeful. "It’s succeeded!"

It’s consciousness had connected to the universe source!

The laws had descended!

At this moment!

It had broken through life’s constraints and became an undying!

Rumble...countless amounts of undying energy infused with wood laws poured into the cloud contact vine, as the gold leaves madly absorbed all the undying energy. This was the only chance it had to endlessly absorb the energy.

And world energy within fused with its body too and became undying energy.

It’s energy evolved!

Body evolution!

It’s spirit imprint swiftly entered every bit of its undying energy.

From now, the undying energy was no longer free but governed by its spirit imprint. Even if its body was torn apart, the separated undying energy belonged only to it, allowing it to reform.

"Infuse into every bit of god energy, every cell, all into its spirit imprint."

"Able to revive with even a shred of itself."

"Undying body." Luo Feng muttered from the distance, and his eyes were filled with glee.

The universe source slowly dispersed.

And the huge crystal like vine that spread over hundreds of thousands of km continued to change colors. Gold, silver, purple, black, green, blue...it began to control the pressure it emanated, yet the energy was still terrifying.

Everything was calm.

Sou! The vine swiftly shrank and became a crystal vine only a few meters tall.

Black clothed Luo Feng flew over and landed beside it, gently rubbing the vine and smiling, "Congratulations vine."

"Thank you master." A gentle voice resounded from the vine.

"When are you preparing to build your god country?" Luo Feng asked.

"The star eating plant has already built his. Master can use his to do god country teleportation. Hence, there’s no rush for me to do so. When you have extra time to look for another spot, I will then let my internal world fuse with a space fragment into a god country." The vine’s consciousness was communicating with Luo Feng, its voice was gentle but clear.

"Haha..." Luo Feng was very happy within.

Honestly.

The cloud contact vine had been with him since earth. After so long and countless experiences, the vine had been fighting hard for him. In terms of feelings...it was almost like a brother to Luo Feng. Naturally he had more feelings for it than the star eating plant. When the star eating plant had become undying, Luo Feng was naturally happy that he had a strong ally. However, at this moment...it felt like a good friend had broken through to undying, he felt happy for it.

"No problem, I'm not lacking in time. We will go through universe travel later and look for a safe spot to teleport away via the star eating plant god country. Then we can choose a safe spot for you to build your god country." Luo Feng said.

"Thank you master." Its voice still gentle.

"Haha..." Luo Feng was very happy.

Back then his teacher had nurtured his 108 vine cloud contact vine to undying, with that it had the power of a low official.

Luo Feng's cloud contact vine had 216 vines. At undying level, it was akin to a pinnacle official. And because of its sturdiness and strength, even though it was only at pinnacle official level, its body strength was akin to a low emperor human.

Chapter 812: Building A God Country

After three and half days of flying in the dark universe, the disc shaped ship finally went through universe travel and arrived at the closest travel point to Yan Ji Main continent.

Within the control room.

The cloud contact armor melded with his skin, the black armored Luo Feng had a pair of black feathered wings on his back as he gazed into the distant space. It was almost like he could see the distant Yan Ji man continent.

"It sure riles me up."

"Luckily, that warrior is still on the main continent." Luo Feng said softly. He could clearly feel the powerful calling from the distance, one that exceeded the soldier and general armor. Every cell in his body was responding and clearly locking on to the position of this calling, and it was on the main continent. It was obvious that warrior with the treasure was still there.

"That’s good!"

"I’ll go look for you very soon." Luo Feng thought.

"Babata, find a desolate spot around here." Luo Feng ordered.

"Understood."

The ship flew swiftly, the seventh battlefield was separated into different regions. Some regions had desolate areas with very few warriors. Hence, after flying for more than a day, the ship found a rather desolate spot.

Hua! The cabin door opened.

A black armored Luo Feng jumped out alone, floating in space as he kept the ship in his world ring.

Sou!

He became a black beam of light and landed on an asteroid, after which he drilled deep inside. There were many signs of old tunnels within. However, Luo Feng could tell they were there from a long time ago.

"Scan with the scanners...this asteroid's caves hasn't had life forms in here for the past 100,000 years."

"Hm."

Luo Feng looked around and nodded, "Very good, this asteroid has a diameter of about 10km, and its material doesn't seem to be weaker than that of Shattered Stars. It's definitely enough to be used as a marker."

"Star eating, give me a leaf." Luo Feng ordered.

A leaf floated out from the star eating plant on his shoulder and landed in his palms. This leaf was after all formed from undying energy. If a scanner was to scan it...it could easily feel its energy.

Luo Feng brandished a space ring and placed the leaf within, after which he tossed the space ring into a crack in the asteroid.

"Marker settled." Luo Feng smiled.

"Star eating, god country teleportation." Luo Feng ordered.

The star eating plant beside him lit up, glowing with a glaring light as it engulfed the entire area, with Luo Feng within.

Weng! Luo Feng who was engulfed within gazed at a distant god mountain.

Xiu!

They travelled through this light speed path and entered the god country.

...

As they entered the star eating plant's god country and later teleported out from it, they arrived straight within human

territory.

The god country teleportation was very different from normal teleportation. Teleportation could be used any time during battle, but the god country teleportation couldn't. There had to be two different points opening a path for the god country teleportation, and during this process, the pathway had to be extremely steady. But, a battle could easily disrupt the path and make it fail.

Hence...

Even though they had the god country teleport, no undying could actually use it during an intense battle.

******

When Luo Feng was heading towards Wu Long Starfield back then, he had left the star eating plant's items at several spots, all for the sake of being able to travel back.

...

Within a mess of star bodies, there was a cave.

Gold light lit the area.

A black armored Luo feng appeared within.

"I've arrived." Luo Feng looked about the black cave, there was no sense of life at all. The surface gravity was only a tenth of earth's, without any of the gases, "I've already entered humanity's territory."

"I have to look for a desolate spot to let the cloud contact vine build its god country."

Sou!

He flashed and flew out of the asteroid, in an instant reaching a million km away. After which, he sped up to light speed with his body and entered the dark universe. Normal undyings could all do it with just their body, naturally he could do it too.

...

"Cloud contact vine, how's this spot? There aren't any life planets in the surrounding 100,000 light years." Luo Feng floated in space.

"Master, let's do it here." The two to three meter tall cloud contact vine said beside him.

"Alright."

Luo Feng waved his hand and with a slash, it exceeded the strength of a normal sector lord pinnacle by 1,000s of times.

Tear!

A space slit appeared and Luo Feng stepped through with the cloud contact vine.

****

Within, there were countless space fragments.

Luo Feng stood in space.

God countries were all built within this layer of space. One had to first find a desolate spot, one that wouldn't be frequented by other warriors. Battles could easily tear open spaces and they may unknowingly discover the god country. The universe was extremely vast, there were many suitable spots!

The second requirement was that one had to take into account for a god country teleportation to save money.

For example, if one was always within the Ganwu universe country, then building it within the country was most suitable. That way, the teleportation would use less resources. However...to Luo Feng, he didn't really need to bother with such things, as he couldn't always remain within one universe country.

"Space slit, I heard it's split into tens of thousands of layers."

"The first is the fragments."

"The second is the god country layer."

"The third is the space current."

Luo Feng thought.

The space layers were a terrifying space. The fragment layer was very close to the primal space, and its threat was small. Sector lord warriors normally could already withstand this space, and the god country level was more steady, undyings could normally survive within. The fragments were much bigger, some had diameters of tens of thousands of km, up to 100 million km etc.

The next level was the space current...

Even the powerful undyings could die within, the deeper they went, the higher the threat was.

"It's almost like swimming in the sea, the threat near the shore is small. The deeper one goes, the larger the threat. The deep end of the ocean is tumultuous, even a good swimmer might die." Luo Feng muttered. "The space layer fragment is just like that, the deeper in one goes, the more dangerous it is."

Sou!

He swiftly headed towards the fragments, he flew over trillions of km and spent ten days flying.

"I've flown far enough, this fragment is big enough." He nodded.

"How's this, vine?"

"Very good Master."

In the distance.

Huge fragments were flying in disarray ahead, the huge ones were void of both space and life.

"Master, I'll begin building my god country." A crystal like cloud contact vine floated beside him. A formless energy immediately locked onto the distant fragment with a diameter of 30 million km.

A world appeared and it seemed to exist in another space altogether, flying towards the fragment.

The fragment was affected by it and was drawn together.

The two of them, one was unreal while the other solid.

The two of them drew close!

One was with a diameter of less than 100,000 km, while another with one at thirty million km.

"Rumble..." It was almost like the sky and land were crashing. The 2 of them fused as they got closer, gradually, the void space fragment began to have a world appear within. The world solidified and became real.

Rumble!

The fusion was a success!

The internal world was gone, the god country was formed!

"Master, the god country has been built. From now on, it will continue to grow, even swallowing the space fragments about and growing bigger." The cloud contact vine brought Luo Feng into the god country.

It had a diameter of less than 100,000 km.

And it was constantly spreading in all directions.

Luo Feng stood on a mountain peak and gazed at the expanding god country, looking up at the huge space fragment outside it, thinking, "Who knows when I can become an undying."

"Master, your law comprehension is very high. As long as you are willing, you can probably quickly fully comprehend the space laws, and with your ability, breaking through the core wouldn’t be too hard." The vine communicated, "However, the moment you breakthrough, you won’t be able to produce your 3rd clone."

"Right."

"Hence I’m afraid to train the gold laws now." He shook his head and smiled.

The gold laws were indeed very easy for Luo Feng. He didn’t even study it now, and at the same time, he didn’t dare take the gamble!

The third clone...

He had high hopes for it, he had the Hui Suo beast’s hair for a long time. However, he didn’t want to simply settle on it. He could still exchange for some fragments of rare life forms from the Virtual Universe Company treasure trove. However, he was still waiting, because this was the final clone he would be able to make.

He definitely had to pick the best.

******

In the seventh battlefield.

Within an asteroid in a desolate area.

A glaring gold light lit up the pathways and a black armored silhouette appeared. It was Luo Feng who had left more than month ago. The main thing was to build the god country within the slits of space, the entire process of flying within the slits took quite some time.

Actually, there was no need for him to personally enter the god country layer, just letting the cloud contact vine do it was enough.

However, he wanted to personally see the building process, as he didn’t actually see it when the star eating plant did it last time.

"Safe." Luo feng looked down at his arm screen. His large scanner and small scanner had been maintaining their area, there were no other warriors around.

Sou!

Luo Feng flew out of the asteroid.

"This powerful calling...it’s reminding me that the treasure

awaits me." He looked in the direction of the distant main continent. "However, the warrior holding such a treasure must be pretty strong. I'll have to kill him to get the treasure."

"At all costs!"

"I have to get it."

"Move!" Luo Feng took his ship and headed towards the main continent.

Chapter 813: Encounter on Yan Ji Main Continent

Luo Feng headed towards the calling, after over four months of flying, he finally got close.

One billion km...900 million km...

The distance kept getting closer.

After awhile, it became 300 million km.

"Discovered the enemy's scanner, he's within an ice mountain cave." Babata communicated. "His scanner has an area of 300 million km too. However, his scanner...is less advanced than ours."

"Less advanced?" Luo Feng revealed a smile.

Great.

After having the experience of being disadvantaged, the feeling of having the advantage with the scanner once again was great, as it determined the fact...that this battle was now within his control.

"This is the enemy's appearance." Babata said.

Luo Feng looked up, a screen appeared in mid air and footage appeared, it was the other race warrior chatting.

There were a total of three warriors.

"Your majesty, what a pity. Even though we met that undying, we cannot deal with him. But, we cannot let him get away like that." An underling undying said respectfully.

"My strength can harm a pinnacle official, killing them however is extremely hard, unless I'm willing to burn some of my undying energy." The black armored youth shook his head. "Killing an undying body sure is hard, accumulating points sure is slow when one cannot kill a pinnacle official."

...

The footage made Luo Feng frown.

"Able to harm a pinnacle official?" Luo Feng muttered, "It's unlikely that he has a treasure like the Sha Wu wings, and if he can do that, that means he's at least a high emperor. This is troublesome, and from where the treasure seems to feel like, it should on him."

With a distance of two hundred million km, Luo Feng could feel the exact location of the treasure.

He could confirm now...

That the item was in the same spot as the black armored youth, it was definitely on him!

"What do I do?"

"It's extremely hard for me to kill a high emperor." Luo Feng frowned. "Even if I use all my energy, I'd still only have 10% of a chance of killing him." Luo Feng began to plan on how to deal with the enemy. However the basis was still the requirement of strength.

If the enemy was too strong, no matter how precise his plan was, it was still useless.

This black armored youth was a high emperor, that meant it was troublesome.

...

200 million km away, within the completely frozen cave.

The black armored youth was talking to his two underlings.

"Go reflect and train." The youth ordered. "Raise your strength, only then will we be able to kill a pinnacle official."

"Yes your majesty."

The three of them seemed to be chatting, however...

The were communicating mentally too in secret.

"The enemy's large scanner is more advanced than ours, luckily our smaller scanner which only has an area of 20km picked up his scan." The black armored youth emphasized. "However we can confirm that the enemy must be very strong considering the scanner he's using."

"Your majesty, what do we do?" The two of them asked.

"Let's pretend to keep chatting."

"Since he hasn't detected our small scanner, we can pretend to chat...and lure him in. I can keep pretending to have high emperor level strength. A high emperor would have no threat on Yan Ji main continent. Even the powerful warriors would have to reconsider about using soul destruction techniques to kill a high emperor. The moment a high emperor self destructs, that would be terrifying."

"Understood your majesty."

After confirming secretly.

One of the underlings said, "Your majesty, what a pity, even though we met that undying, we cannot deal with him, and let him get away like that instead."

"Our strength is enough to harm a pinnacle official, but to kill one, unless I'm willing to burn part of my undying energy." The black armored youth shook his head, "The difficulty of killing an undying body..." The youth continued.

Their act...

Really confused Luo Feng, in truth the black armored only had the strength of a low emperor. The difference between a high and low emperor may not seem huge, in truth the power difference was shocking. Many undyings spent countless years training and breaking through, whether it was the god body or law comprehension, the difference was shocking.

A low emperor had to be careful on the main continent. A high

emperor however could be a tyrant, unless he messed with some that were simply too powerful.

The three other race warriors communicated mentally.

"The enemy hasn't left."

"His scanner is locked on us." The black armored youth said. "Even though our small scanner can detect him, it can only detect his scan. With a scan of only twenty km...when we truly detect him, he would already be twenty km away from us."

The advantage of the small scanner was just this! It could at most act as security, to rely on it to discover the enemy's location, that would be a joke.

"We are unable to detect his accurate location, we don't know where to flee to either. Blindly fleeing could very likely result in him catching us, the chances of us getting away safely is less than 0.1%." The youth said, "Our only option now is to scare him away. If we fight, we have to find our chance to flee."

"Understood." The two underlings replied.

"My plan is..."

The black armored youth swiftly told the two underlings his battle plan.

******

Luo Feng continued to get closer, his scanner constantly locked on the enemy's location.

Within the control room, a screen projected their every move.

"Hm?" Luo Feng frowned suddenly, "What is he doing?"

On the screen, the black armored youth flipped his hand. A beautiful purple flower floated beside, after which it expanded out fiercely and grew out of the caves, countless flowers with thorns pierced through the rocks.

In almost an instant!

The flower had spread over 100,000 km, it completely wrapped the three other race warriors completely.

"Other race warrior!"

On the screen, the black armored youth said coldly, "I know you can hear what we are saying."

Luo Feng frowned in the distance, "Damn, the worst case scenario has occurred."

Luo Feng had his own mini scanner...hence he was afraid of this happening. Also, he had no way to avoid it, he could only rely on luck, hoping that the enemy didn't have such a high level mini scanner. However from the looks of it, the enemy did have a very advanced mini scanner. Even though its area was small, it managed to discover his scan.

"I do not wish to fight against such a high level warrior." The black armored youth emphasized. "You should know that the consequence of an emperor fight is extremely severe too. I've already invited my emperor allies over. The moment the battle begins, they will rush over, and when that happens...it'll all depend on strength!"

Pa!

The screen immediately lost its image, it was obvious the black armored youth had used his mini scanner to shut off any scanning within his 20km. Luo feng was unable to see anything.

...

"Master, you've invited emperor allies?" The two underlings were surprised.

"It's a ruse." The youth snorted coldly. "Do you not know this? Hmph...his strength is unknown, and he could very likely be an extremely powerful warrior. Do you think that without knowing

the level of strength the enemy is, the emperor allies would rush over to help? Even if I did invite them over, the price would be too high."

No one was stupid in the outer region wars.

An emperor fight was risking it all, and anyone who was able to become an emperor would have his or her own methods. Who'd be willing to stupidly help out anybody? The moment they lose some of their precious trump cards, it would be too late to regret.

Like the automaton warrior inviting the two pinnacle emperors.

One, they had to have some history or relationship.

Two, the warrior had accurately measured the silver wing emperor's strength along with its techniques etc, so the two pinnacle emperors had an idea of what to do.

Three, he spent a huge price, billions of mixed elements, and that wasn't something just anybody could afford. Naturally, if it weren't for the two pinnacle emperors, the cost wouldn't be that absurd.

"Get ready for battle."

"Hmph, even if we can't win, I have faith in surviving." The black armored youth flipped his hand and a black disc ship appeared within the flowers. "Enter the ship. If we get hit by a long distance attack, with the flowers protecting us and the F9 ship blocking, we wouldn't lose out too much from the start."

******

Luo Feng had lost the visual. Hence, he wasn't clear on what sort of trap his enemy had set up for him.

"However..."

"Tricking me once, and trying to do so again." Luo Feng thought coldly. "High emperor? If he was a high emperor, he wouldn't act like that. Calling emperor allies? They don't even know who I am,

would they just come and help you. Also, it would take time to convince them to come over along with a huge price, it wouldn’t be that easy."

"Babata." Luo Feng ordered.

"Close the large scanner, and maintain the small one. Get close to him, within 10 million km."

"Yes."

Even though he didn’t use the large scanner, as he could clearly feel the calling from the treasure, he simply had to follow that direction and get close. He had to use the large scanner initially because he needed to know what kind of enemy he was facing, what race etc. And from the looks of it, it was the Na Shi race. This was a distant powerful race that wasn’t subservient to any of the pinnacle races. Seeing one Na Shi warrior here was extremely rare.

This also meant...

It would be very hard for him to get help.

"My Na shi race friend, I will use the most beautiful fireworks to welcome you." Luo Feng said softly.

Chapter 814: Intense Battle

Luo Feng shut off his large scanner and sneaked closer.

This obviously made the black armored youth grow uneasy. He was now unable to detect the enemy, why did he stop using his large scanner, did he give up?

"Yang, I've already checked, the Na Shi Race are part of the demon camp in the outer region wars."

"Haha, thanks Ku Tuo."

"Small matter Yang. Whenever you come to Star tower, come look for me. There are simply too many strong emperors there. A low emperor like yourself going alone will find it very dangerous."

"Thanks."

Luo Feng smiled within the control room. The reason he moved so slowly instead of rushing into battle was because he was waiting for this call. He had confirmed the enemy was from the Na Shi race earlier, they were extremely rare in the outer region wars, it was hard to determine which camp they were with.

Since he couldn't determine, he made use of the network of friends. They had friends too, hence...it formed a huge network.

He asked Ku tuo and Ku Tuo knew many other emperors. It was a simple enough question. After awhile, he found out that the Na shi belonged to the demon camp, some undying had discovered them riding along in a ship with demons before.

"So he's from the demon camp."

"That automaton warrior's bounty is only within their own camp, and communication between different camps is forbidden. It's akin to treason and treated with death! The demon side...have no way to communicate with the automatons too. The two of them have no connection at all."

"Using the Golden horned beast will be safe this time." Luo Feng smiled. "The chances of getting the treasure has risen greatly."

"Alina, get ready!"

"Yes master."

Weng!

A blur of tiger armored bug kings appeared, all giving off intrepid energies. These were much stronger than normal tiger armored soldiers. Amidst the countless kings was the malevolent mother nest. To control a million bugs precisely, she couldn't remain within the internal world.

"Listen to my order." Luo Feng stated.

"Yes." Alina replied mentally.

Alina was Luo Feng's soul slave. The two had a special connection between their souls, there was no need to speak and the two could communicate mentally.

"Having the million king bugs is like having a deadly weapon." Luo Feng clearly felt the location of the treasure. It was naturally where the black armored youth stood, "The only weak point is... nobody would stand still stupidly for the attack and would move around. Hence, combined with a very good scanner, and caution, the bugs' offence is simply too strong."

"Hm."

"He actually shifted his position sneakily?" Luo Feng smiled.

"This is the accurate position..." Luo Feng ordered. "Alina, Combine the million king's' attacks at this point."

"Yes master."

Weng...

At the core of the blur of bugs that the mother nest sent, it controlled the million kings simultaneously. At this time, they

were all of one mind. Every one of them had a large energy ball at the tip of their claws. If it's just one shot alone, that was something an undying could totally ignore.

A million gathered into one however, even a pinnacle emperor would fall if he was hit.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Countless light balls tore through the skies, almost like countless shooting stars streaking across the skies, all gathering in one spot. The light beam that gathered after 100s of thousands of km tore through the brittle space between.

"We are under attack!" The official undying level Yan flower plant that had spread 100 thousand km about the mountain had unleashed its law domain long ago, spreading an extra 10,000km about. It immediately detected the terrifying attack. However, by the time it detected it, it was too late.

The distance was too close!

Rumble!

The glaring light made even Luo Feng shudder within. It smashed straight into the countless flowers about.

Tearing the entire plant apart!

It was almost like having one's hair close to fire, the strands would be instantly reduced to ash. The flowers suffered the same fate. Against this attack that made even pinnacle emperors shudder in fear...the flowers were reduced to ash. However, the thick beam of light continued to pierce through the mountain, condensing further within.

After piercing through hundreds of thousands of plant life form, it condensed in a spot and exploded.

Silence!

The land and skies seemed to experience calm!

After which...

Rumble...

The mountain the black armored youth hid within was completely destroyed, and countless rocks were reduced to nothing with more being thrown all over within the torn up space slits. The plant life form Yan flower's countless flowers were instantly reduced to nothing, it was a true annihilation. Luckily its size was huge enough, with a diameter of over 100,000 km, if it was any smaller, it would have died.

The explosion spread over 200,000 km, hitting the F9 grade ship.

Tear...

The ship barely withstood the blast before being torn apart finally.

The terrifying blast hit within the ship and the black armored youth was so scared he even kept both underlings within his world ring, withstanding the blast alone.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

After several waves of attacks within the rooms, the terrifying force finally dispersed.

"What a terrifying attack." The black armored youth looked at the torn up cabin before him, his expression changing, "Even with such distance he could destroy the F9 ship. Even normal pinnacle emperors wouldn't have such strength, is this the attack of a bug army?"

The combined attack of a bug army was well known as terrifying within the trillions of races.

"Subservient bugs?" He rushed out of the ship and his fists became a blur. Without much precision, he shot out incredibly powerful undying energy straight at the direction from which the blast came from!

A 1,000 undying energy light beams instantly shot out!

This instantly depleted his undying energy within to almost zero. However this was fine, as long as he didn't burn any, or destroy any bit of it...it would eventually return to his body. As the undying energy was infused with his consciousness and belonged only to him!

This was the power of an undying.

...

Thousands of undying energy light beams shot out.

Luo Feng could only laugh at the scene, "This Na Shi youth sure is smart, knowing instantly that that was a bug clan attack. However, since I know the bugs' weakness, why would I give you the chance?"

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Countless undying light beams tore through the skies. However, they hit nothing, after flying for awhile, they hit the distant mountain range. As for the target, the bug army, straight after they had unleashed their attack earlier, Luo Feng had immediately kept them within his internal world.

The bug army was one of his trump cards!

He couldn't be careless about it.

After all, the emperors undyings all had the power to destroy the bug army. Hence, he had to be extremely careful with them, the moment they were destroyed and Alina died, he would have lost his trump card.

"Poor Na Shi punk, go and die." Luo Feng instantly vanished and passed the Sha Wu wings to the Golden horned beast.

A silver winged beast immediately appeared in mid air.

Sou!

It flapped its wings and with three flaps, it became a glaring beam of light and shot through millions of km at its target.

The moment it made a move, it was to kill!

Delaying the battle may have consequences, hence Luo Feng naturally wanted to settle the fight as fast as possible.

...

As he swiftly tore through the skies, the black armored youth who had failed in his attack frowned. He waved his hands and his two underlings immediately appeared in mid air.

"Let’s separate, release your law domains."

"We cannot rely on the scanners, we can only use our law domains." The youth ordered.

"Yes your majesty."

Even though the two official undyings were still shocked by the attack before, they knew they had no choice.

Sou! Sou!

The three Na Shi warriors separated and simultaneously unleashed their law domains, covering the surrounding tens of thousands of km. Without knowing where their enemy was, they couldn’t flee...they could only get ready for battle.

"Relax, the reason his attack was that strong before was probably because of a combined bug army attack." The black armored youth communicated. "And the bug army has to store energy to unleash that powerful attack. Therefore, each attack takes quite some time. I’ve already retaliated earlier...he’s probably already kept the army away, as he probably cannot bear to sacrifice his bug army."

Sou!

A flower flew from the distance.

"Yan flower." The youth’s expression changed.

"Master, I've lost 62% of my undying body. Luckily I detected the attack a little earlier and spread my flowers apart, hence I managed to save 38% of my undying body. It will take me many years to recover." The plant communicated.

The black armored youth was shocked.

Just how powerful was that attack from before? The Yan flower had a diameter of close to one million km, even with its defense and preparation before it only managed to save 38% of its undying body.

"Enemy!"

One of the officials communicated.

The black armored youth's expression changed and immediately kept the Yan flower. Looking ahead, a silver winged beast was rushing straight over. Its powerful pressure and huge size terrified him.

"Silver wing emperor!" The black armored youth communicated. "Silver wing emperor, I'm from the automaton camp, there are warriors on your bounty...don't force me."

The youth thought, "There are very few Na Shi warriors in the outer region wars, this silver wing emperor probably cannot determine within this short time if I'm from the automaton camp." He had explored the Yan Ji main continent for awhile. Through his scanners, he frequently discovered the automaton conversations, hearing about the bounty."

"This demon camp punk still wants to lie to me, go and die!" The rumbling voice resounded in his mind.

Simultaneously, the huge silver silhouette rushed over.

"Fight!" the black armored youth gritted his teeth and shouted.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

He led his two underlings and got ready to fight!

Chapter 815: Flee

The Golden horned beast flapped its wings and unleashed Strike travel, instantly leaving an after image in the air. The silver wings acted like sharp blades rushing at the black armored youth, and it tore through space like tofu, leaving a terrifying silver light.

"Die." The beast's eyes gleamed, unleashing its pinnacle technique right from the start.

"Weng weng weng..." A droning sound could be heard.

The youth suddenly stopped as he pointed at Luo Feng. His red gem like eyes flashed, "Go and die!"

Immediately, a black thread appeared in mid air. It was like a thin black snake reaching tens of km in length, but only half a meter thin. The Golden horned beast could easily see it. This wasn't some black thread, it was a black chain that acted like a whip.

The black whip slashed through the skies like a long chain, stopping the beast.

Hu!

Hu!

The black whip was a blur in mid air.

The silver wings slashed at the black whip. Chi chi chi...instantly knocking it away. The energy from the whip however seemed to constantly affect the beast, causing it to feel uneasy with its speed and sense of time. It was almost like it affected the flow of time.

It broke through the beast's attacking presence.

"Time flow has changed!" The beast flapped its wings and floated in mid air, its eyes staring coldly at the youth.

"Silver wing emperor." The youth floated in mid air and gazed at the huge beast. "The automaton warriors have a bounty on you

and you still dare to show yourself? If I were you, I'd have left the main continent long ago. Let me advise you...to leave quickly."

"Time laws?" The beast let out a low growl.

"Right." The youth smiled and nodded his head. "You should know that a warrior versed in the time laws is very good at fleeing. Even though you are more powerful, it's impossible for you to kill me, it'll be a waste of time for you."

The other two underlings stood beside him.

"Waste of time?" The beast spat out human language and roared.

While creating Moon policy, the primal chaos city leader had arranged many other race warriors for Luo Feng to fight, and he had managed to kill every one of them. Among which, there were some well versed in the time laws. Luo Feng was naturally clear on how troublesome it was to deal with them, even so, he had the experienced it before.

"You can try if you don't believe me." The youth said softly.

His red gem like eyes gleamed.

Chi!

A formless soul attack immediately attacked the beast.

It instantly passed the general armor. Since its material was special, it had great ability in blocking undying energy. Hence, it instantly reduced over 99% of the attack, leaving just a little, and with the beast god image roaring within...

Soul defense technique Beast Howl. It dispersed what remained of the attack, leaving behind a weak inkling that did nothing against the beast.

There were many ways to defend against a soul attack, this was linked to one's spirit energy levels.

When Luo Feng was a normal warrior on earth, before he was even a star traveller, his spirit energy was unable to pass through

metal! Normal metal alone was capable of blocking spirit energy. As his strength grew, the spirit energy began to be able to pass through different materials.

The Yun Mo planet ship could block any soul attacks below undying level.

The weaker it was, the easier it was to block.

When one became undying...

Materials that could stop an undying's soul attack were rare. The efficiency was much lower as well. But, the general armor could block 99% of a soul attack. It was simply too heavenly, and such a treasure was definitely a top class treasure within the universe. Even the knights wouldn't be able to find such a treasure.

"Howl..." The beast howled and rushed at the youth.

"Weng!" "Weng!"

The black whip lashed about and the time flow changed with it.

The beast however let out a mad roar and unleashed its strike travel, flashing over and over and changing its position.

"Bastard." The youth's expression changed.

The control of time flow was usually affected a limited area. If the golden horned beast was stuck in one spot...then it would be much easier for the youth. However, with the beast flashing about now, changing its position constantly, it forced the youth to constantly change the area he was affecting and this was very taxing.

"Stop him." The youth ordered.

"Yes your majesty!"

One of the two officials controlled a blur of silver threads, over 10,000 of them and used them to engulf the beast. The other controlled a water like cage that rushed at the beast too.

"This Na Shi youth is trying to stop me, and trap me within a small space, then either fight it out or flee. That would be his choice." Luo Feng looked at the two official underlings and understood his battle style.

Countless silver threads rushed over.

A water cage rushed over!

"You two officials dare to fight me?" The beast howled loudly, causing the vast ice land to rumble. The ice layer on the ground and mountain around him to tear apart.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

The beast's speed reached its limit, leaving the others stunned as it warped about.

The silver threads and water cage couldn't even touch it.

"How can it be so fast?"

"It's absurd."

"Our spirit weapons cannot even catch it." The two officials were stunned.

The black armored youth was stunned too. "In terms of instantaneous speed and warping, even a pinnacle emperor wouldn't be that fast." He didn't know that the Sha Wu wings was most adept at movement.

"You two little punks will die first."

Hu!

He warped in mid air and the beast rushed straight at the two officials. They tried to control their spirit weapons to protect them but they were simply too slow.

"Be careful!" The black armored youth controlled his black whip and was about to keep the two undyings in his world ring. However, the moment the world energy spread out, the Golden

horned beast used its two wings to form a ripple through the space, completely shattering the world energy.

Howl...

Against the black whip, the beast used its right wing to stall it, while its left wing acted like a huge blade that was over hundreds of km long, slashing through the air!

Hua!

It left a dazzling flash of light over 10,000 km long in space that lingered for a long time.

Rumble! The two officials instantly exploded from the attack.

At that instant.

One of them began to reform.

"Luo Sha, Luo Sha." The reforming official's expression changed to that of an extreme shock. "Luo Sha is dead, he's dead."

"What." The distant black armored youth's expression changed.

"Your majesty, Luo Sha is dead, and I lost 6% of my undying body. Luo Sha was a high official, getting killed with one hit..." The surviving underling was shocked. "This silver wing emperor has pinnacle emperor strength!"

A high emperor could kill a high official, however it would take quite some time.

They didn't know...

The beast itself had the strength of a high emperor, and with the Sha Wu wings, it had the strength of a pinnacle emperor.

"Pinnacle emperor!" The youth's expression changed. "A pinnacle emperor proficient in space laws, he should be able to teleport, if he uses that...I'd long have lost out. However it hasn't used it at all. Yet, its speed is unbelievable...hm, he probably has yet to study teleportation, and studied the other parts of space laws instead."

"I cannot mess with a pinnacle emperor."

"If he burns part of his undying body, I'd be dead."

The youth gritted his teeth.

Flee!

...

He was completely shocked. One of his two underlings, a high official was actually destroyed in just one hit. That was terrifying!

"Silver wing emperor!" The youth howled, his voice transmitting via undying energy towards the Golden horned beast.

Howl...

The beast turned, its dark gold eyes staring at the tiny little creature.

"Stop!" The youth's gem like red eyes suddenly shot out two red lights. They swiftly expanded and covered a 100 km around the beast, the beast suddenly stopped within the light.

Sou!

The youth turned and fled.

He accelerated and fled in a straight line.

"Time stop?" The beast instantly understood. Even though its body was affected, he could still think and function mentally, but was only unable to move. Its wings were unable to move too, its eyes and ears unable to see or hear anything.

Darkness, silence!

This was a silent dark world...only its consciousness wasn't affected.

There were usually only two ways to break the time stop.

One was to be adept in time laws.

The other was for those not trained in time laws, was to break

through forcefully.

Break! Break! Break!

Luo Feng howled within.

The beast howled madly from within, naturally unleashing all its strength. The Sha Wu wings also shook violently, almost like it was bound by a formless rope.

Crumble.

Something crumbled.

He stared at the vast ice land ahead, seeing the distant mountain range crumbling from the bug army’s attack, hearing the howl of the winds.

"Flee? You think you can flee?" The beast instantly felt the location of the treasure. It was already one million km away.

Chapter 816: Target 30 seconds

"Not good." Luo Feng felt the Na Shi youth fleeing swiftly and knew the situation wasn’t good.

"After him!"

The beast flapped its wings and tore through the skies, instantly disappearing from sight.

The black armored youth had already reached sub light speed and close to light speed, it was the maximum speed one could hit here on Yan Ji main continent! Because of the universe secret region environment, it was impossible to breakthrough. The Golden horned beast had no way to pass this limit too. Also, since the black armored youth was flying in a straight line, it was impossible to catch up.

"What do I do?"

"I cannot catch up."

"Unless I unleash my world projection, spreading it over 90 million km to slow his movement, otherwise I won't be able to catch him!" Luo Feng pondered for a while. According to the information he gathered from the battle before, he made a new decision. "This Na Shi youth can actually stop time? It won't be easy for me to kill him then. Hm, I’ll have to trick him then!"

The beast continued to chase the youth.

One ahead of the other, they were flying at the maximum speed.

Luo Feng activated his large scanner.

Even though he could still detect his enemy without it, he didn’t want to reveal this fact. With the large scanner, the enemy could rely on his mini scanner to jam Luo Feng’s scanner. However, that scanner only had an area of 20km, and with sub light speed...

With such speeds, the air ripples would be torn apart. In fact,

there would even be space ripples around.

Even though they sped past, there would still be clear indications in the air and space.

Through the air and space indications, one could naturally determine the accurate location of the enemy.

...

"He’s still chasing."

"Just what grudge does this silver wing emperor have with me, to chase me non stop. Even though he knows he cannot catch me, he’s still not giving up." The youth maintained his max speed and flew. With his mini scanner, he knew that the silver wing emperor was still scanning him. He was filled with rage, "Keep chasing, let’s see how far you can chase me."

"I’m already at maximum speed, you will at most be at the same speed."

"This way, you will never catch me." The youth gritted his teeth.

Xiu!

Like two shooting stars, a small and a large one was flying along the same path.

This chase lasted over six hours.

"Hahaha..."

"Hahaha..." The originally ashen black armored youth suddenly revealed a manic laugh. He maintained his speed as he laughed, "I knew you’d never be able to catch me." ... " Since he would never be able to catch up, he would give up eventually! Haha, looks like he’s really given up."

His mini scanner had discovered that the signal from the large scanner had disappeared.

Obviously he had stopped scanning.

"When he stopped his scanning when I was in the cave before, that was understandable. However, with me flying at max speed...I may change directions suddenly. Since he’s stopped his scan, he naturally won't be able to find me." The youth was very happy, he could finally relax after the chase.

He continued flying forward for over three hours, then changing his direction for another day, then changing for another day...

A total of nine days had gone by.

Finally he flew above a large river.

"I’ve flown consecutively for nine days, changing my direction constantly. Without the large scanner...he naturally won't be able to find me." The youth stood in the air above the river and smiled coldly. "Silver wing emperor? Hehe, I won’t forget your chase, this grudge...I will definitely return it."

Sou!

He pierced straight into the river. It was blue in color and deep, as cold air emanated from it.

...

Half a day later.

A black disc ship appeared in the air above the river, within the control room.

A black armored and black winged Luo Feng sat in his sofa, lifting a glass of boiling tea and sipping.

"Cautious indeed." Luo Feng smiled. "How would you know...that despite all this, I can still easily find you."

The powerful calling that Luo Feng’s cells reacted to, just how strong was that.

Every cell was jumping from it, and locked in on the treasure’s location.

"Killing him sure is difficult."

"I didn’t expect a low emperor to have the ability to use time stop." Luo Feng muttered. "Looks like he should be a genius from one of the Na Shi races." Just like humanity with its many other races, some with more talent than others, the demon race had the empires, royals and so on, the Na Shi race was similar.

"Time stop."

"If only I had this move too." Luo Feng muttered.

Teleportation and time stop, they were both heavenly techniques.

Teleportation, it was a space heavenly technique.

Time stop was that of the time laws.

In comparison, time stop was stronger. The moment one was hit by it, they would instantly be unable to defend, the enemy could choose to flee or attack. Of course, it took different amounts of time to break through the time stop. Luo Feng was unprepared, he didn’t expect a low emperor to have the ability to use it.

If one is prepared, he could maintain his defenses. However he would still require about a second to break through.

To a pinnacle emperor, he would simply take 0.1 second to forcefully break through.

However...

To an emperor, 0.1 seconds was enough to attack multiple times.

"Luckily, the Na Shi race truly thought I was an emperor level with an undying body. With his level of strength, he wouldn’t even be able to damage me, hence he chose to flee." Luo Feng thought. "However that was right. Even if he attacked me, the Golden horned beast has the general armor and the cloud contact vine within it. With these two defenses...even if he self destructs, I may not die."

The cloud contact vine was huge.

Hence, it could form a layer of armor over the entire beast easily.

...

The disc ship floated above the river, suddenly a huge silver beast appeared and the ship disappeared.

Hu!

The beast looked down and rushed into the river.

It easily rushed tens of thousands of km in, only then did it stop. The secret regions were filled with dangers about, this river was cold enough to freeze even a domain lord warrior. But of course, it was no threat to the Golden horned beast.

"Alina."

"Master."

"Million bugs, once again, give my enemy beautiful fireworks."

"Yes master."

The beast looked down at the huge deep river. It reached over one million km deep. But, some regions were only 200,000 to 300,000 km deep. The beast saw through the bottom rock layer, down where the youth was hiding. The experience from the previous battle made it very clear that it was impossible to defeat this youth through normal battle. Especially with his time stop.

Luo Feng didn't know his strengths before.

Now that he did, he naturally wanted to eliminate him with one move without giving him a single chance.

"Kill him within 30 seconds!"

"Weng weng weng..." The malevolent tiger armored kings appeared around the beast. A million of them were like countless locusts. And beside them, the mother nest appeared.

Everything happening about was jammed by Luo feng's large

scanner.

As he maintained about 600,000 km of distance from the enemy, and the enemy's small scanner only had a diameter of 20km, he naturally didn't discover this.

"Attack." Luo Feng ordered.

"The coordinates are..." He informed Alina.

...

Below the rock layer of the river, within a cave lay an F9 ship. The youth had a total of over ten such ships. As he had twelve undying underlings all with different improvement speeds, the strongest were the two that came along with him before.

Among the other ten, six were officials while four were normal undying generals.

Within one of the cabins in the F9 ship was a G grade cabin. With a length and width of 10m and height of 5m, it was more expensive than the tens of other F9 grade ships.

"Your majesty, the silver wing emperor truly doesn't care about his safety. With the automaton bounty, if he flies in the air, he could easily be detected by the automaton camp, Hence, it's normal that he didn't chase. And he cannot deal with you either, you don't have to worry."

Three underlings sat beside him.

"Hm." The black armored youth nodded.

"This G grade cabin should have some use against that terrifying attack from before." The youth thought.

A cabin able to diffuse 90% of the attack would be not bad already.

Luo Feng had the Sha Wu wings and the material used to make it had an effect better than a G grade cabin, yet it could still only diffuse over 90% of an attack.

"Ambush!"

The youth’s expression suddenly changed.

Rumble!

A terrifying attack tore through the layers of stone and hit the ship. This made the youth’s eyes gleam with fear: "I didn’t even detect any scan, how can we get attacked? Is the silver wing emperor so terrifying that even his large scale scanner is better than my mini scanner?"

Rumble...

The F9 ship was almost like a box being ripped open, the internal cabins were reduced to bubbles as the explosion hit the G grade cabin.

Rumble! The G grade cabin was like a soccer ball being kicked.

Sou!

It became like a shooting star and flew out. The surrounding millions of km of space was already torn apart, and this G grade cabin had a huge dent in the part where it was hit. A tear occurred at the middle of it as layers of space spun madly within, it was tragic for the black armored youth.

The moment he sensed the attack, he instantly kept his three underlings.

However, the force of the combined attack from the bug army was simply too terrifying. It instantly destroyed the F9 ship and exploded on the G grade cabin. Even though it only destroyed part of that cabin, the force it generated...reduced the chairs and tables within to dust. The space particle flow within flowed madly, even the low emperor youth was shaken so badly his body exploded.

Sou! His body reformed.

"It actually destroyed 3% of my undying body." The youth was completely shocked. Without the G grade cabin, he probably would

have died instantly from that attack. After which...he expanded his law domain.

At this time, he was already amidst the particle flow.

"Silver wing emperor!" He discovered a huge silver beast amidst the particle flow rushing in, flying straight at the cabin.

Chapter 817: Fall

"Open the cabin door." The youth immediately opened the door and flew out.

He was clear.

If he hid within the cabin, it was just like turtle in a jar. He wouldn’t be able to dodge the opponents attacks at all and would lose all mobility.

"The silver wing emperor is back again after failing last time. A pinnacle emperor like him, without a guarantee he wouldn’t waste his time. That means he knows how to deal with me this time." The youth kept the cabin as he flew out and immediately fled.

This was a space layer with countless fragments flying about, this was akin to large asteroids clashing about. How strong would this force be?

An undying may be able to fly within, but it did take quite some time to accelerate.

"Hua! Hua!"

The silver wing emperor however was like a fish in water, the Sha Wu wings were a treasure that could control its own space energy. Hence, it wasn’t affected at all within this mad flow of fragments, it left behind a demonic image as it swiftly rushed at the black armored youth.

"Stop!"

The youth was just about to unleash its time stop but the beast had already dodged.

"Not good." The youth gritted his teeth.

"Hmph, since I know you have that ability, would I let you do it again?" The beast was extremely fast, warping from place to place, attacking the youth.

The time stop ability was only effective within a certain area.

Just like a rifle from earth.

Hitting a still target was easy, but a moving target, especially one with extreme fast movement, was very hard! One theory was that since the beast was huge in size, unleashing time stop required using it over a large area and with the beast warping about, it made it extra hard for the youth.

"Stop!" The youth pointed at the beast.

Xiu!

The tens of km long black whip waved about, wrapping around the Golden horned beast. The beast's one wing was wrapped by the whip and its speed was affected. "The youth was extremely happy, "I've done it!"

Rumble!

Even though the beast's left wing was held on by the black whip, it still rushed just as fast at the youth.

"Stop him." The youth grit his teeth.

The thin long whip glowed with black light and constricted tighter. The left wing of the beast however wasn't damaged at all. This was the Sha Wu wings, a true treasure. Even a universe master would find it extremely hard to damage this wing. The whip had a slight effect on it. But, how could it possibly completely stop its movement?

Rumble!

The beast got close to the youth.

"Stop!" The youth once again used his move.

"Stop my ass, explode!!!" The beast rushed forward, howling within his consciousness.

In an instant...

A red terrifying pyramid shaped crystal floated between the beast and the youth, both were extremely close.

"Flame god crystal!" The youth revealed a look of fear. Especially when he felt the ripples of energy from the crystal, he was shocked, "It’s over, it’s over!"

"A flame god crystal is akin to a high emperor. This, this...has this silver wing emperor lost his mind? This is a high emperor’s self destruct. Even he, a pinnacle emperor, at this distance would lose a great portion of its undying body! Even so, he’s not burning his undying body to kill me...rather, using such an expensive crystal?" The youth had many thoughts in his mind before dying.

"Teacher, teacher save me!"

The black armored youth immediately broke an item within his world ring.

"I’ll drag you along with me!"

At this moment...

Through his communicator, he began to send messages madly to the countless warriors within the demon camp. "I’m about to fall, the enemy is the silver winged emperor, the coordinates are..." This message was instantly sent to countless warriors.

If he had spoken about the bounty, allowing others to contact the automaton race, the message would be instantly destroyed by the AI system. Because communicating with the other races was... considered treason!

The four camps, treason...was like betraying an entire race.

Death sentence!

Even a knight wouldn’t be able to save him. Of course, a pinnacle being like a universe master may be able to do something. One had to know...many subservient races like the Gold horn race etc, didn’t have a being like a universe master.

...

"Disciple!" In a distant region far away in the universe, the place where the Na Shi race lived.

"He's in the outer region wars... no!!!"

A similarly black armored larger man roared, "Disciple, you, you have to survive." Even though he had given his disciple an item, with which he could teleport via his god country to there. But, that was the outer region wars, the place where the four camps fought, it didn't allow any knights within!

Unless it was a huge war.

Otherwise...

Only beings under knight level were allowed within. Of course, a being like the primal chaos city leader could occasionally break the rules due to his high status. The subservient races wouldn't dare say anything. However, no knights of any other race were allowed.

...

Rumble!

It may seem long, however the instant the crystal exploded, the black armored youth didn't even have time to get further than 1,000km away. Against that high emperor self destruct power, the closest 10,000 km had the strongest explosion.

Rumble...

The space fragments that flowed madly about were instantly reduced to stream particles that couldn't be broken down any further. The youth and the beast did the exact same thing...defend!

"Hu!" The beast closed its wings about itself, completely wrapping itself within.

"No!" the youth immediately placed the G grade cabin before him and controlled his Yan flower, the plant life form to block him. The plant life form knew that if its master died it would die too,

hence it used all its might to defend him.

Explosion!

Explosion!

Explosion!

The surrounding tens of thousands of km were reduced to particles. Even with the G grade cabin before him, the explosion spread all around. It at most reduced half of the explosion. In an instant, the youth and his Yan flower were reduced to nothing, leaving behind only the G grade cabin, weapons, G grade metal world rings and other particles...

The beast used its wings to protect itself.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Against the terrifying explosion, through the Sha Wu wings and the general armor, the force was reduced to a thousandth of its original. Even so...it was still akin to a high emperor's attack! The cloud contact armor wrapped about the entire beast was destroyed. Luckily, it was a high official...and its body was akin to a low emperor human.

Even though it was destroyed, because of its undying body, it didn't lose too much strength.

"Hm." The Golden horned beast felt the ripples and was barely bothered by it.

Naturally...

It was just a small portion of the attack.

"Haha, a high emperor's self destruct is able to harm even a pinnacle emperor. With the Sha Wu wings and general armor, along with the undying body cloud contact vine...even against a pinnacle emperor's self destruct, I probably wouldn't die." Luo Feng was feeling exceptionally good.

The blast was dispersing and reducing its strength gradually.

The beast gazed into the distance, the G grade cabin, black whip and world ring etc were all floating there. Actually, the world rings used by the powerful warriors are mostly made of G grade metals. As the rings take up very little metal, it was cheap and within the budgets of powerful undyings.

How powerful were the ripples from an undying fight?

If they used normal F9 grade metals for their rings, they would be easily damaged.

...

Within a world ring.

The nervous officials, normal undyings, the underlings of the black armored youth were all filled with fear as they learnt of their master's death.

"No!"

"No!"

They only had enough time to shout out.

Suddenly, plop! Plop! They all fell one by one. Even though their bodies were still present, their souls were destroyed.

Just like when Hu Yan Bo died back then, his slaves too all died along with him.

The master's death!

This also meant the death of the slaves! Even if they were incredibly strong, it couldn't change this.

...

Amidst the mad flow of space, only slight ripples remained from the explosion.

The beast relied on the Sha Wu Wings, general armor and cloud contact armor to withstand the blast, it was unhurt by the explosion. Of which, the Sha Wu wings and general armor were

incredibly sturdy, and were able to diffuse over 90% of the blast! The cloud contact armor was unable to do so much, but it still withstood a large portion of the blast...

Until it crumbled!

Through the first two layers, the remaining force was still able to make a low emperor level cloud contact armor crumble, after that third layer, the force was negligible.

The true defense was still within the Sha Wu wings and General armor.

These were both incredibly valuable treasures.

The worth of the Sha Wu wings needn't be mentioned, even knights would go mad for it.

The general armor could diffuse the force of the attack, it was even more adept at blocking soul attacks. Humanity didn't have such a treasure. They didn't even know of its existence or know how to use it. Luo Feng was also trained in the nameless manual, hence he could use it.

"Hahaha..."

"It took the loss of an eight hundred million points flame god crystal to kill you. Yet, it allowed me to get the treasure which makes all my cells go mad for. It's worth it."

The Golden horned beast flew up too, and it's dark eyes looking at the G grade cabin, the black whip and the two world rings along with the armor remains and so on. It felt a strong calling within its cells from one particular world ring. One that was over 10,000 times stronger than the calling of the soldier and general armor, its cold eyes revealed excitement.

Spending so much.

Was totally worth it.

Chapter 818: Hexagon Prison

At the edge of Yan Ji main continent, there was a majestic golden palace amongst the desert, and it stood out within the desert.

Strong warriors normally hid themselves within mountain caves, underground caves, underwater caves and so on. As for this incredibly visible palace, it definitely belonged only to pinnacle warriors of the area, and the current owner of this palace was...

Black Jade emperor!

As a pinnacle emperor with teleportation ability, he truly feared no one within the Yan Ji main continent.

Sou!

In the air above the palace, a 3m tall silhouette appeared. It was a human shaped black ball of flame. This flame gathered into a black robed warrior.

"Black Grace Emperor."

The powerful being Black Jade emperor had immediately discovered the enemy arriving, communicating, "You are from the demon camp, why are you here? Do you want to fight?" They were both the top powers of the main continent, both with teleportation ability, and if they did fight, it would only be a waste of time.

"Black Jade emperor! Ci Wei Ka!" The black robed warrior communicated. "I know the Silver Wing emperor's location. If you want the coordinates, you'll have to exchange for it with two hundred million indigo gems worth of treasure. Remember...this location is his current location, you'll have to act fast or he'll be gone soon."

Sou! Sou!

Two silhouettes appeared outside the palace. One was a short skinny masked Black Grace emperor with beast claws, and the

other was the automaton Ci Wei Ka. Ci Wei Ka had been staying in this palace since he put out the bounty, because...the moment he got the whereabouts of the Silver Wing emperor, he could immediately teleport over with Black Jade emperor.

"You say you know where he is? However you want two hundred million indigo gems just for the coordinates?" Ci Wei Ka roared.

"It's a treasure worth two hundred million indigo gems, and I have no way to use your automaton currency." Black grace emperor communicated. "You can continue to waste time. The longer you wait, the farther he'll go. Then you wouldn't be able to find him anymore. Twelve seconds have already passed."

"Bastard."

Ci Wei Ka gritted his teeth within.

Even a pinnacle emperor wouldn't earn money this fast. Even if they took it easy for over 10,000 years, they probably wouldn't even earn this much, and yet he demanded this absurd amount just for the information.

"I'll pay." Ci Wei Ka flipped his hand and a space ring appeared as he tossed it over.

Black Grace emperor received it and quickly scanned through.

"Not bad."

"These are the coordinates." He immediately sent it over to Ci Wei Ka and Black Jade.

"You will come with us." Ci Wei Ka ordered.

"Relax, this news was given to me from a low emperor, and it was probably before he died, it's definitely right. Since I've already received the two hundred million indigo gems worth of treasures, I'll accompany you. Let's go." Black Grace was confident, as he truly feared no one here on the main continent.

Sou!

Ci Wei Ka, Black Jade and Black Grace all instantly followed Black Jade's teleportation to the lake where Luo Feng had just fought the black armored youth.

****

Within the slits of space.

The Golden horned beast didn't care much about searching through the items after detonating the flame god crystal. He immediately kept the G grade cabin along with the two world rings and black whip into his own space.

"I cannot delay!"

"Before his death, he may have called for help, I better leave fast. I can go through the treasures later."

Sou!

The beast tore through space and returned back to the actual universe, appearing in the depths of the river. After which, he switched back to his earth body, melding the Sha Wu wings on his body. As to why...it was because the beast's body was simply too huge, since the body was over 100km, along with a tail that was over 100km long too, as well as its wings.

The mini scanner only had a scanning area of 20km diameter, it couldn't even cover the entire beast's body.

Rumble!

He flapped his wings and flew up, rushing through the rock stratum and out of the deep river, out to the surface.

Sou!

He swiftly fled.

"The battle before caused too much of a commotion, the combined attack of the bug army may attract other warriors over. I have to quickly flee." Luo Feng flapped his wings and unleashed Strike travel. His speed accelerated, even though he was rushing,

he was extremely happy within.

He had planned for pretty long to get this treasure from that warrior.

He had wanted to attack the moment he felt that calling, however he forced himself to return to the camp and raise his strength before returning. He finally managed to kill him and got the treasure.

...

At the bottom of the river.

Hu!

Ci Wei Ka, Black Jade and Black Grace all appeared simultaneously.

"Such powerful energy ripples." Black jade communicated.

"Very strong indeed." Black Grace's expression changed too.

"The Silver Wing emperor may be here, keep scanning." Ci Wei Ka couldn't care less, immediately using his large scanner and small scanners to cover the area about.

...

"Not good." Luo Feng who was flying swiftly activated his large and mini scanners simultaneously.

His large scanner detected the enemy.

His small scanner was to protect himself and jam signals from stronger enemies.

When the three warriors appeared in the cave beneath the river, Luo Feng's large scanner immediately detected them.

"It's them!" Luo Feng was shocked.

Luo Feng had no way to identify Ci Wei Ka because he had never revealed himself before in the battle before.

As for Black Jade and Black Grace however, Lou Feng immediately recognized them. When he was chatting with the other emperors back in the camp, he got to know of several beings he couldn’t deal with on the main continent.

Black Jade and Black Grace were amongst them.

"They actually teleported here! That automaton...he could very likely be the one who put the bounty on me, that extremely wealthy one." Luo Feng laughed as he recognized Ci Wei Ka, "I have to thank you. If you didn’t give me so much resources, the cloud contact vine wouldn’t have been able to breakthrough to undying so quickly, and I wouldn’t have been able to kill that Na Shi warrior and get his treasure too."

"Stop!"

Luo Feng was swiftly flying slowed down fiercely and flew slowly, he relied on the mini scanner to protect himself. Also...the moment he detected the enemies, he immediately shut off his large scanner.

He didn’t dare fly too quickly as it would generate space ripples and tears in space, this would make it easy for the enemy to track him.

...

The three other race warriors activated their scanners.

"Anything?"

The three of them were all shocked.

"Black Grace emperor." Ci Wei Ka looked at him, "I trusted you and passed you the treasures immediately. However the Silver Wing emperor isn’t even here. Did you give me the coordinates too late? Or are you deliberately deceiving me?"

"It hasn’t even been thirty seconds since I acquired the coordinates." Black Grace communicated. "Thirty seconds, he

couldn’t have fled more than nine million km...and our large scanners, the smallest has a diameter of three hundred million km, there’s no way he’s out of our scanning range. The fact that we cannot find him...shows that his small scanner is very advanced."

"Advanced?"

Ci Wei Ka was unsatisfied, "I’ve battled him, his scanners were average."

"You battled him in the past, wouldn’t he then go purchase a better scanner after?" Black Grace scoffed.

"Don’t fight!" Black Jade roared. "I’ll head into the space slits to check if he’s in there. Also...Black Grace...help feel the space about and see if there’s any special changes in the ripples, the moment there’s any, it might be him."

"Hm." Black Grace nodded, "I’ve already got my treasures, I’m willing to help."

Tear!

Black Jade tore through the space and pierced deep in, emerging a few seconds after.

"Anything?" Ci Wei Ka looked at him.

"There are countless fragments within but nothing special." Black Jade said. "I think he should have returned to the original universe after his battle, the chances of him being within is very low. Let’s check the surrounding area well."

"Ok." Ci Wei Ka nodded.

There were many ways to scanning the space about.

The easiest was to use undying energy to scan, however this was a crude way of doing so.

A higher level scan would be like using a scanner, the level of scan would be dependent on how advanced the scanner itself was. A lousier scanner would be like a normal undying scanning, a

better one would exceed even an emperor’s.

A higher level one would be using law domain or world projection.

Law domain and world projection both were usage of the universe laws. These were things only warriors of this level had, it wasn’t something one could simply have with comprehension. Within a law domain...the god was the owner. Within the world projection, the sector lord was the owner, they could clearly feel everything within.

Of course...

The thunder hell of nine absolute god country were other space techniques that could do this.

"I’ve set up my Hexagon Prison with an diameter of one hundred million km." Ci Wei Ka said. "As long as he’s within one hundred million km, I will find him."

Shua!

The three of them rushed out into the air above the lake.

After which Black Jade brought Ci Wei Ka and teleported swiftly to six spots about, leaving behind a ship in each location. One had to know that the nine absolute god country was very mysterious. It was something an automaton knight spent a lot of time and effort on, and it had many uses. Even without one ship, even though it couldn’t unleash its strongest god country.

The other 8 still had many uses.

Each ship could even unleash a domain more powerful than Thunder hell.

Six ships in different locations...they activated the Hexagonal prison.

"Weng..." Countless beams of lights shot out and engulfed the one hundred million km area, spreading over the mountains and

permeating through tens of millions of km of land and river...

Everything was within its scanning area.

Luo Feng, who was flying slowly to avoid creating space ripples naturally was covered within.

Chapter 819: Checking Every Inch

In the air above the vast land, six pyramid ships floated in the distance. With the six of them as base points, they shot out countless beams of light that interweaved and linked together, forming a white space. It was almost like a white fog space...the hexagon prison!

Over 100 million km in area was completely cut off from the outside world!

"Within this prison, even weapons or incredibly weak creatures cannot escape detection!" Ci Wei Ka floated in the air above the river. Even the river and mountains were all part of the white fog space.

"Incredible." Black Grace emperor said shocked.

"This is something an automaton knight built." Black Jade smiled. Any automaton was a master of mechanics. They could easily build a huge empire, and of course as they got stronger and their comprehension grew, the things they built would naturally get stronger.

The things a knight level master built would naturally be extremely rare and expensive.

"That Silver Wing emperor cannot escape." Ci Wei Ka said softly.

"Search!"

He gritted his teeth, "Check every inch of this place, anything with a life imprint or life force, search it all."

Weng!

Weng!

Weng!

The hexagon prison’s mist suddenly shot out visible white threads, as countless threads began to search the area within

thoroughly. For such a scan, just one wave alone was incredibly detailed, and the amount of energy it used was incredible. It was enough to make a normal undying broke.

"One suspicious item, two..." The six pyramids swiftly reported.

Thirty nine seconds had passed and the search was completed. They found eighty two suspicious items.

"Lock in on them."

"Target confirmed." Ci Wei Ka ordered.

"Black Jade, to save some time, come with me to check these items." Ci Wei Ka looked at Black Jade beside him and said.

Black Jade nodded.

The area within the prison was afterall over 100 million km, and these eighty two targets were scattered throughout. Just flying alone would take over one hour, and they couldn’t afford to waste time. The more time they wasted, the easier it was for these to change.

"These are the eighty two points." Ci Wei Ka swiftly sent them over.

"Leave it to me."

Sou!

Black Jade grabbed on to Ci Wei Ka and swiftly arrived at the first point.

"Hm?" Ci Wei Ka looked at the alloy remains wrapped about by the white threads, sending his undying energy to scan it further, frowning, "It’s just the remains of a universe ship."

"On to the next one." Black Jade once again teleported.

...

Of the eighty two suspicious items, sixty two were ship remains, nine were weapon fragments, ten were fragments of damaged

undying bodies and one world ring. Basically anything with any energy was detected.

When they found the world ring, Ci Wei Ka was very happy. He shouted, "Silver Wing emperor, do you think that I wouldn't detect you if you hid in a world ring?"

He immediately destroyed the ring, and normal items scattered around Several of the sturdy items were ok, while everything else...Ci Wei Ka didn't even find anything that could hide the Silver Wing emperor.

"This world ring, according to my scan of the surrounding rocks, have been here for over 100 million years. This was one from a battle that long ago, it's weird that it wasn't discovered." Black Jade said, "However, the Silver Wing emperor won't be inside."

"Just where is he?" Ci Wei Ka gritted his teeth.

"Black Grace." Ci Wei Ka looked at him.

The black robed Black Grace emperor said coldly, "Don't suspect a pinnacle emperor. I wouldn't degrade myself and lie just for your two hundred million indigo gems worth of treasure!"

These warriors all had eternal lives. At their level, respect and dignity was much more important than anything. While they may massacre others or get cursed ...there were some matters like lying and cheating that would be considered as a huge disgrace.

If it were some huge treasure, that may be explainable.

But for 200 million indigo gems...this was something a pinnacle emperor wouldn't do.

"Then where is he?" Ci Wei Ka floated in the air above the river and looked about.

"There are three possibilities."

Black Jade communicated mentally, "First, he's hiding in a slit of space and hasn't returned to the actual universe, and he's deep

within. From a normal standpoint, the chances of him digging deeper into the slit of space after a battle is extremely low, not over 1%."

"Second, he's within the hexagon prison, only we cannot find him and the prison cannot detect him. This can mean that his scanner or other techniques are very advanced, and the chances of this happening is at 20%."

"Third, he's escaped your Hexagon prison area, and this has the highest probability."

"How did he escape?" Ci Wei Ka looked at him.

"There are many methods." Black Jade said, "Silver Wing is well known for his instantaneous speed and dodging. With his accomplishments in space laws, he may have comprehended teleportation. After killing the enemy, he may have teleported away."

"Teleportation? It hasn't been a year, how could he learn that so quickly?" Ci Wei Ka shook his head, "It cannot be."

"It's hard to say."

Black Jade continued, "Another reason is that after his enemy sent out messages before his death, it may have been leaked to the human camp. The Silver Wing emperor definitely has friends within the human camp. Just when we were about to make a move the last time, didn't someone come and teleport him away? It may be the same this time."

"I don't believe this!"

"I don't believe!" Ci Wei Ka gritted his teeth. Even though he knew that Black Jade's words were logical, he didn't want to accept it. He couldn't accept the Silver Wing emperor escaping once again.

"Hexagon prison, use maximum energy!" Ci Wei Ka ordered, "Area...the entire prison!"

"Destroy!"

"Destroy everything within the prison, the rivers, the mountains etc, reduce them to nothing!" Ci Wei Ka's eyes gleamed with madness. "Reduce this entire area of over 100 million km to nothing, only then will there be no doubt."

Rumble...

Large amount of energy poured from the six ships, and mad explosions occurred within the entire area.

One had to know that the strongest combined attack from the bug king army would at most spread over 10 million km. This huge area...was much bigger! Hence the strength of attack within each area would definitely not compare to the bug clan's attack, it could at most destroy E2 or E3 grade metals.

No matter how strong the energy was, after it spread over such an huge area, the overall damage would be lessened.

Though this was weak.

The river stones and mountains, other than few exceptionally sturdy ones, were mostly unable to withstand such an attack. An endless stream of rocks and mountains were exploding to nothing, and the rivers were destroyed too with large amounts of the ground disappearing.

99.9% of everything was reduced to nothing.

Only few things remained torn apart.

Some other even more sturdy items remained undamaged.

Actually back when Luo Feng was in shattered stars, every fragment there could take a sector lord pinnacle's attack. Even though Yan Ji main continent was much bigger, its materials weren't as sturdy.

...

"Damn."

"He’s actually doing something like that, this energy usage must at least be akin to a high emperor’s self destruct." A seemingly split apart rock lay amongst the rubble. Its energy and material etc all seemed just like any other rock.

In truth, it was the transformation of the Mosha clansman. By relying on its natural ability of cloning, it completely transformed into a rock. Hence...unless a warrior uses his undying energy to scan the internal portion of this rock, simply relying on scanners of its appearance, there was no way for them to know.

"Spread over one hundred million km! So much energy was used. Using a flame god crystal would be understandable, which was the most expensive method to condense an undying’s energy. However relying on a device to do so...so much energy must be worth 10s of millions of mixed elements, that automaton punk must be furious."

...

"Attack!"

"Attack and destroy everything!" Ci Wei Ka gritted his teeth. He wanted to completely destroy everything within this area...only then would he be satisfied and sure that the Silver Wing emperor got away.

******

When Luo Feng was trapped in this situation, within a spacious hall in the virtual universe.

There were 108 ancient thrones within, and every one of them had warriors, be it human or other races, they gave off terrifying energies.

"We gathered everybody because, according to information from the outer region wars, the human sector lord Luo Feng has successfully killed a low emperor!" A purple armored giant with a peculiar helmet spoke.

"Impossible."

"He cannot kill a low emperor yet."

"I request...for everybody to view the footage."

The news made many about deny it immediately.

"Attention, relying only on his sector lord body, he's naturally unable to kill a low emperor. However...the contribution points were awarded to him, it means he does have some special methods to kill a low emperor. According to the rules of our Hong alliance, since he's done so, whether its treasures or methods, as long as one kills a low emperor...it means we can bring him in." The purple armored being said.

Chapter 820: Impressive

The purple armored being gazed at the others. Be it human or other races, saying, "Everything is according to the rules. Since he fulfills all the requirement, we should accept him."

"Agree!"

"Agree!"

Large amounts of warriors agreed.

"The Hong alliance only accepts true absolute warriors! If one can rely on treasures or special techniques to kill a low emperor, it still proves his strength. However, what I'm worried about is that it may be his guardian that killed the low emperor. And that guardian isn't recorded in the army system. Naturally the army would take it as...Luo Feng's contribution." A jade green life form said with a sharp voice. "Hence, I request to see the footage."

"Looking at the footage will prove everything."

"Ye Zhen knight, take out the footage." Many warriors looked at the purple armored human.

"Viewing his footage is beyond my authority." The purple armored human said, "I haven't even seen it yet."

"Ah."

"How can that be?"

"I personally requested it from the army system..."

"But my authority is too low."

"I failed."

"He's not even a knight, how can his video be so hard to get?" The originally quiet hall had over a hundred warriors immediately begin to argue. It was obvious that this lack of authority for his footage was something beyond their understanding.

The purple armored man said, "This is the authority level set personally by the primal chaos city leader."

Silence.

The over 100 warriors all went silent, glancing at each other, as their eyes were filled with helplessness.

The Hong alliance was a powerful alliance made of many other race warriors led by humans.

With humans as the leaders, the primal chaos city leader ranked amongst the top three in humanity. His authority and power in the Hong alliance could only be imagined, and as for the authority levels he set...the knights present couldn't say anything about it.

His authority level was extremely high. As long as he wished it, less than three in the alliance could see the footage.

"Any objections to accepting Luo Feng in?" The purple armored giant looked at the others.

"No objections."

"Nothing."

"Agreed."

"Agreed."

They all swiftly nodded and forgot about the footage.

"Since everybody agrees, I will immediately arrange for a team to invite him officially into the Hong alliance." The giant nodded and vanished. The others began to vanish as well and in an instant, only 108 empty seats were left.

******

On Yan Ji main continent.

"Attack and destroy everything." Ci Wei Ka gritted his teeth.

The hexagon prison immediately shot out a blur of white lights that gathered into lasers. Each beam had at least ten sector lord

pinnacle strength, and over a 100 of them were destroying everything in the area.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

The sturdy stones and metals were instantly reduced to nothing against these lasers, few became fragments and even lesser were left undamaged.

Chi!

A beam of light hit the Mosha transformed stone, this was afterall 10 times pinnacle sector lord strength, and the mosha body was only sector lord pinnacle. After becoming a stone, its law comprehension etc were all useless.

Pa, the stone tore open and became seven fragments, the remaining parts became dust.

"I’m about to be discovered!"

...

"Continue to attack, reduce everything to nothing." Ci Wei Ka began to examine the information clearly from his hexagon world.

"Black Jade emperor." He communicated to him.

"Hm?" Black jade looked at him, his eyes cold behind his mask.

"I’d like to trouble you to look for Death Spirit emperor." Ci Wei Ka said. "When we got the report from Black Grace emperor, I immediately invited Death spirit over. He’s already in the space above the Yan Ji main continent. He teleported here via god country, these are the coordinates."

"Hm." Black Jade vanished.

Ci Wei Ka was feeling the pinch, hate and unhappiness, "I thought that Black Grace, as a pinnacle emperor wouldn’t give me false information. I immediately informed Death Spirit. Now that he’s teleported via god country over, if he came here for nothing, I cannot not give him anything.

To make a pinnacle emperor teleport via god country over for nothing? How could he do that, he naturally had to give some gifts to satisfy him.

After a few seconds.

Shua!

Two silhouettes appeared. A short masked black jade and a scaled 1,000 eyed Death Spirit emperor. His formless pressure caused Ci Wei Ka to feel uncomfortable, even Black Grace felt a shock.

Both were pinnacle emperors, but the difference in power was still huge.

Death Spirit was strong in the soul side, and there were many emperors that died under his hand. Naturally his position was higher.

"Where's the Silver Wing emperor?" He asked.

"This..." Ci Wei Ka felt embarrassed.

"Space ripple!"

"Space ripple!"

Black Jade and Black Grace simultaneously felt a space ripple. This familiar ripple...to the two that knew how to teleport, they instantly deduced...there was a warrior that teleported.

"A warrior teleported!" Black Grace said coldly, "I'll lock down the space around us."

Weng!

Black Grace who had been watching beside felt a bit guilty for taking the two hundred million indigo gems worth of treasures as they searched for the Silver Wing emperor. He couldn't possibly return it, naturally he wanted to try and help.

He had long set up his undying energy about. He then activated it to become countless undying threads, forming a spider web,

locking down an area of about 30 million km.

"The Silver Wing emperor is there!" Ci Wei Ka easily detected him with is hexagon prison. The prison also locked down on two targets, Ci Wei Ka was extremely excited. "Beside him is that teleporting undying that saved him last time, Star Fantasy emperor."

"It's Star Fantasy from the human camp."

"Chase."

Black Jade and Death Spirit were filled with killing intent, while Ci Wei Ka was excited too.

"Ci Wei Ka, use your hexagon prison to stop him. With the space lockdown, they won't be able to teleport anymore, and can only fly! With the hexagon prison stopping them within a million km distance, we can easily catch them." Black Jade was very excited, as he was anticipating the rewards from the capture.

"Understood" Ci Wei Ka was extremely excited.

Black Grace stood by the side, using his space lockdown to help, communicate, "Ci Wei Ka, with this, we are even."

"Haha, Black Grace, thanks." Ci Wei Ka was extremely grateful.

Black Grace and Black Jade had spread their undying energy to scan. However Black Jade had suddenly gone to get Death Spirit... with that, just for Black Jade to spread his undying energy again to scan would take quite some time. The speed of the undying energy spreading was only maximum light speed.

Black Grace however had been there all the while and maintaining his scan. Hence, he could unleash the space lockdown the fastest.

...

"Silver Wing emperor, there's trouble." Star Fantasy smiled gently. Her voice resounded within the Golden horned beast's

mind.

The moment she teleported here, the space was on complete lockdown, she couldn’t teleport away.

"Haha, no problem, we cannot teleport away but they cannot teleport over too." The Golden horned beast replied, "Stay on my claw, they can’t catch us."

"I’ve heard of your legendary speed, we’ll rely on it then." Star Fantasy smiled. Her dreamy wings flapped and she landed on the beast’s claw scale, undying energy binding her to the scale tightly.

"Let’s go!"

The beast flapped its wings and unleashed strike travel, leaving behind warps in the space as it accelerated to a shocking speed.

"Weng weng..." Countless white threads wrapped about the beast’s surroundings. Even though it wasn’t like the purple threads of the nine absolute god country, these threads only had one ten thousandth of its strength, but it was much more numerous.

Even though it couldn’t stop the beast, it did slow it down.

"Not good." The beast slowed down with death spirit. Black Jade and Ci Wei Ka were chasing behind, along with Black Grace who was watching the show.

"Haha, Silver Wing, you cannot escape."

The beast looked back and easily saw hundreds of thousands of km away, there were four little dots that were closing the distance swiftly.

Hua!

The beast flapped its wings and a huge space slit appeared. It flew in, however Black Grace’s space lockdown was everywhere.

Death Spirit, Black Jade, Ci Wei Ka and Black Grace all simultaneously flew into the slit, the hexagon prison easily tore the space and pierced in.

...

Within the slit of space.

The six pyramid ships were like sturdy stones unaffected by the mad flow of space, maintaining their prison! Black Grace maintained his lockdown, however the space fragments...made the others all slow down a lot.

Countless fragments were all around, there was no way to get rid of them all.

Their flight was affected greatly.

"Howl!" The beast howled happily, flapping its wings.

Hu!

The beast was fast like a demon, completely unaffected by the mad flow of space within.

"The mad flow of space doesn't affect him?"

"That's impossible!"

The calm Black Grace was shocked. The other two emperors were shocked as well. They didn't know that the Sha Wu wings had its own space energy. Also, unleashing its second form would allow the beast to control the space movement around him! Now at only the first form, even though it couldn't control the flow, it could still easily fly within...unaffected by it.

Like a fish in water.

It flapped its silver wings with terrifying speed.

Even though the hexagon prison was affecting the beast, the space flow was affecting Ci Wei Ka and his party...its effect on Ci Wei Ka was the greatest.

He watched...

As the huge silver beast flew further and further, breaking out of Black Grace emperor's space lockdown area. After which, they

teleported...and vanished.

"Bastard!!!" Ci Wei Ka howled unsatisfied.

The other emperors all stopped and were silent.

Black Grace who was simply here for kicks couldn’t help but exclaim, "Impressive."

Chapter 821: Happy Surprise

Black Jade and Death Spirit looked at Ci Wei Ka.

"Ci Wei Ka." Death Spirit emphasized, "Even though we don't want to admit it...with the Silver Wing emperor's strength and his allies, we have no way to kill him."

"Hm." Black Jade nodded.

"Damn." Ci Wei Ka gritted his teeth in disgust.

If only his nine absolute god country was complete, then using it alone, he could stop the Silver Wing emperor and stop him from escaping. The nine absolute god country had forbidden formations to stop warriors, back then when they battled, Ci Wei Ka had hesitated to use it.

As it was forbidden, each seal cost about one billion indigo gems worth, hence he hesitated.

Even getting a pinnacle emperor only cost that much?

That hesitation...

Made it too late.

Later on when the beast used the bug clan army and unleashed its strongest attack while the god country was replenishing its energy, it destroyed one ship and it immediately threw Ci Wei Ka's plans into disarray.

"Death Spirit and Black Jade." He looked at the two of them and communicated, "This is my mistake. Since we have no way to deal with him currently, we'll give up. As for you two, you've both shown effort. Death Spirit even rushed over from Star tower, I will repay you two accordingly."

Black Jade and Death Spirit's gaze became gentler.

They had worked hard. Seeing that there was no hope of getting the Silver Wing emperor, they didn't request for the initial reward

agreement. However they still deserved to be repaid somewhat.

...

Automaton virtual world.

After appeasing the two emperors, Ci Wei Ka arrived in his own quarters and sat in the alloy chair, looking at the information on the screen.

"This plan would have a 99% rate of killing the Silver Wing emperor." Ci Wei Ka revealed a pained look. "However, it would make me spend almost all my cash, would it be worth it? I could completely lower myself to ask my master to rebuild the ninth ship. Even completely rebuilding it...would only cost a few billion indigo gems."

"The plan however would make me lose almost all my cash."

Ci Wei Ka was troubled.

He had given the two emperors about two hundred million indigo gems each. Without any success, this was generous enough. It meant that his expense so far still wasn't that huge, only a few hundred million indigo gems. This new plan however was absurdly expensive.

"Heck."

"Even if I don't use it after buying it, I can sell it away."

"Even if it's not against the Silver Wing emperor, it'll be another trump card." He gritted his teeth, "I'll get it."

He immediately began to craft his order.

The automaton race relied on their weapons to battle. Hence, one had to have sufficient wealth to buy powerful weapons to deal with stronger warriors. Even if one had enough wealth to buy a SSS god base, even a knight wouldn't be able to deal with them. One attack...would kill a pinnacle emperor without a doubt.

This was the power of the automaton weapons.

Similarly...it was extravagant.

******

Within an endless river on the main continent.

Silver Wing emperor and Star Fantasy emperor appeared in the depths of the river.

"Star Fantasy, thanks for your help." The beast let out a low rumbling noise.

"I didn’t do anything, I just teleported." Star Fantasy’s voice was gentle. Her blurry wings flapped gently, as her demonic figure appeared and disappeared. She laughed, "To personally see the Silver Wing emperor unleash his flying technique within the space slits, that’s an extra benefit for me."

"Right, Silver Wing emperor, seeing the way you fly, theoretically, you should be able to teleport already." Star fantasy asked.

"I’ve comprehended part of teleportation, along with space combination, the two combined creates a special flying method. I’ve been spending time on this. However later on...I will quickly comprehend teleportation fully." The beast answered.

"Ah?"

Star Fantasy was shocked, replying with respect, "Combining teleportation and space combination to create a flying method? I’m filled with respect."

The space laws were indeed split between teleportation and space combination, and space movement. Every one had its own subdivisions, teleportation had inanimate teleportation and space resonance along with Contact void and many others...only when one fully comprehended everything could he teleport.

This was but one way to do it.

Just like how humans could be split into men and women, they

could also be split into infants, children, youths, adults, mature. Using a different mindset...there were many ways to go about it, this was afterall a combination of the whole space laws. Hence, they could naturally all be blended together.

"You overestimate me." The beast said.

"That's a fact. In terms of instantaneous speed, you are the fastest amongst all the emperors I've seen." Star Fantasy said.

"Thanks." The beast wasn't proud at all because it knew that this was but a lie he said. With sufficient accomplishment in the space laws, he could easily create something suitable, in terms of flying... it mostly relied on the Sha Wu wings.

...

After saying goodbye to Star Fantasy emperor, Luo Feng returned to his earth body and swiftly sat in his ship. He flew in the vast skies, looking for a new base.

While flying.

He couldn't help but feel curious and excited, he made the mosha body and the Golden horned beast examine the treasures the youth left behind.

******

Within the world ring.

Black clothed Luo Feng and the beast appeared. Mosha Luo feng held two world rings and within them lay the Na Shi youth's treasures.

"Just what treasure is it within this that can make both the earth body and the beast feel its powerful calling, every cell jumping from within?" Mosha Luo Feng held the world ring that gave off the powerful calling. The beast was sending its spirit energy in to examine it.

Rumble!

The black armored youth was long dead. Hence, the spirit imprint was like water without a source, and was incredibly weak. It immediately crumbled and the beast's spirit energy pierced in.

Hua lalala...

Large amounts of items appeared on the ground before the beast.

"That's it!" The beast felt the powerful calling, and black clothed Luo Feng immediately grabbed the item.

This was a palm sized black and light, glossy soft metal board.

This...

Was similar to the black metal board he had discovered back on earth. It was similar in material and size, technically, it was a little bigger.

"The second black metal board." Mosha Luo Feng held his breath, "This is it!"

He could feel the soldier and general armor.

A heavenly treasure he had no way of getting within the human treasure trove...the nameless manual.

It was because of this metal board!

This was the root of the inheritance.

"No wonder the calling far exceeded the soldier and general armor." Luo Feng thought. "Just the material of the board...is more mysterious than any G grade metals I know."

"It should hold the nameless manual within, let's hope it's the second volume." Luo Feng anticipated.

The nameless manual had a total of nine volumes.

The one he found on earth let him learn only the first.

This second board may not necessarily hold the second volume. It was hard to say, it may even be the seventh or eighth. That way, it was impossible to study it without learning the earlier volumes.

It had to go in order, like that Na Shi youth...even with this metal board, without the first volume, he had no way to train it.

"Howl!"

The beast let out a howl and looked down, using its spirit energy to permeate the black metal board.

"My children!" A thread of consciousness pierced into Luo Feng' mind. This was similar to when he did the first board on earth, the same voice, after which endless illusions followed, however in terms of willpower, Luo Feng was obviously stronger than back then.

He quickly passed through them.

Just like before, large amounts of words entered his mind, flooding him with information.

This information was more than before, a total of 59,103 mother flame words.

The details within this one involved the second, fifth and seventh volume.

Of which the second and fifth were complete, while the seventh one only had over 3,000 words and was incomplete.

Now...

Of the nine nameless manual volumes.

The first was complete.

The second was complete.

The third was missing.

The fourth was missing.

The fifth was complete.

...

The remaining four were missing and incomplete.

"Hahaha, this is a true windfall. I always thought the earth body and the Golden horned beast's bodies weren't strong enough, and now I got the second black metal board. The second volume is complete, at least I can begin its training." Mosha Luo Feng stood beside, extremely excited.

"Howl!!!" The beast raised its head in excitement.

Glee!

This was something that allowed them to breakthrough the limitations of their genes. Luo Feng had never heard of any other manual that had the same effect. With his current status, he had access to many manuals, and even techniques created by warriors like the primal chaos city leader. Yet, he had never seen something like this...this was something that the laws of the universe should have destroyed.

"To train the second volume, I would need some time." Black clothed Luo Feng muttered to himself. "The first volume back then took the earth body three months and the Golden horned beast twenty nine years. This second volume would require quite some time too, I'm in no rush to begin now, let's see what other treasure he has."

"To acquire this black metal board is a huge windfall for him. To a low emperor that can unleash time stop, he may have other treasures within."

He kept the second black metal board.

He once again began to examine the other items that were left behind carefully.

Chapter 822: Encounter

After completely searching through and taking out the treasures the Na Shi youth left behind, the goods spread over 10,000 km across the vast grassland.

Even though it was plenty, there were only few with value.

One of which...instantly attracted his attention.

"29 cm 1,000 year light?" Black clothed Luo Feng looked at a laser like item, this 29cm of light was lying on the ground, after careful examination, he could feel the light warp about it, naturally being drawn in.

1,000 year light, it was a peculiar item, it was a material used to create time based weapons, these sort of materials would occasionally occur within a black hole or within a secret region.

It was priceless.

"This 29cm 1,000 year light, it would cost at least 3 billion points in the treasure trove." He muttered, "That Na shi warrior actually had such a treasure."

"Green White dew, 32km, diameter 2.1m-8.2m."

"360 beads of 9 light grains."

...

After separating the goods, he got more and more excited.

"Seeing how he’s accumulated so many materials, he must have been planning to forge a powerful time base weapon." Luo feng muttered, "That black whip was made of good materials too, it could change in size and meld with the time laws, however its price is only within 1-200 million points. How could it compare to these...just the materials alone would cost about 8 billion points, and this is with my discount and all. That Na Shi youth would probably have to pay even more, the weapon he would create from

these would have been terrifying."

After documenting all the items.

Luo Feng smiled.

Very good.

The points and wealth accumulated from killing normal warriors could never compare to simply killing one with a huge background. Of course...the bigger their background, the harder it was to kill them. That Na Shi youth...from Luo Feng's perspective, was much harder to kill than Ci Wei Ka.

The black armored youth, Ci Wei Ka and Luo Feng.

They all had huge backgrounds. If they succeeded in killing Luo Feng...the Sha Wu wings, the beast god armament, the Luo Ke holy water, the black metal boards, the general armor, they'd truly strike it rich.

Even with background...the knights behind the black armored youth and ci wei ka would never dare barge into the outer region wars. As for Luo Feng's teacher the primal chaos city leader, he had said so himself...he didn't wish to have to go save Luo Feng, afterall he could do so with his position.

However it was somewhat of a disgrace.

Unless he was completely forced into a corner, the city leader would never come.

******

"Hm."

"The spoils are not bad." Luo Feng nodded.

The beast beside him was gazing down at the blur of items, suddenly a seemingly normal crystal attracted its attention, he looked down...it dark gold eyes staring at the crystal amidst the countless other items, it was a round and normal looking crystal.

Sou!

Black clothed Luo Feng flew to it and stared.

The round crystal ball was the size of a soccer ball, it lay on the ground.

"Xiu." World energy floated about the crystal before permeating it.

Weng!

Just as the world energy entered the crystal.

It suddenly lit up.

Hua!

All sorts of colors glowed from it, it shot out light in all directions, almost like a glaring sun, endless lights engulfed the entire world, within the lights, Luo Feng and the beast felt discomfort within the space and time.

"My god." Luo Feng stared.

"Howl." The beast howled, staring wide eyed.

The 2 bodies stared at the normal looking crystal that was glowing brightly with many colors, that mysterious powerful energy...and the discomfort of the time and space...instantly made Luo Feng understand!

"Huge treasure!"

"I've found a huge treasure!"

"Damn, this is that Na Shi youth's true treasure, I've been curious...at low emperor level, how could he unleash time stop. That move is even harder than teleportation. This must definitely be a huge treasure." Luo Feng muttered, staring hard at the glaring crystal.

Actually, when the Na shi youth unleashed time stop, Luo Feng had thought...he had used a combination of his talent and law

comprehension to do so.

After seeing the mysterious crystal...

Luo Feng instantly deduced, that ability was most definitely from the crystal ball. Luo Feng had seen many treasures, however he rarely saw something with such powerful energy.

Chi chi chi..." A blur of mysterious words began to appear on the surface of the crystal, the strokes of the words were like engravings, even though Luo Feng didn't understand them, he instantly understood them.

"These words!"

Luo Feng was staring intensely.

"Demon note inheritance! It's the same words from the demon note inheritance!"

Yes.

Luo Feng had seen these words once before, it was back then when he accepted the demon note inheritance. The same mysterious words from before, even though he didn't recognize the words, he still instantly understood what they said.

The content was simple, the summary was...

"This is the inheritance crystal of Dream light god, any sector lord life form with a soul can fully accept it."

"After completing it, he can begin training in Dream light god techniques."

"Completing the inheritance to perfection will make one a god messenger. The messengers can meld these crystals with their body, if successful...he can become a new Dream light god candidate."

"The universe is vast, however there will only be one Dream light god."

"If one becomes the candidate, the others with the crystals can only at most become messengers. Only when the candidate falls will a new one emerge."

"The inheritance occurs once every 10,081 eras, this one was used 82 eras ago, it requires another 9,999 eras...to accept another."

...

Luo Feng blinked after reading.

He understood this dream light god candidate...meant that there were many that actually made huge progress with this inheritance. It was obvious the difficulty was far below that of the demon note inheritance, back then the demon note inheritance had said, over countless years, not a single being had completed it.

And the way of inheritance seemed different too.

The demon note inheritance went step by step, only reaching the end...will it allow one to have great progress!

This dream light inheritance was first learning the technique and training it, when one reached the level of messenger, he could wait for the current candidate to fall and grow.

"Another 9,999 eras for the next one?"

"Damn."

"1 hundred million years?" Luo Feng couldn’t help but laugh, "Looks like the last inheritance was definitely used by that Na shi youth, he definitely got the technique within, hence he could use time stop."

"What do I do about this?" Luo Feng muttered.

This was a treasure, yet he couldn’t use it.

Simply guessing alone, it was clear that this was related to the time laws, he however walked the path of the beast god, this path...was a true path of the universe masters, mainly fusing gold and space. Naturally he wouldn’t waste time in studying the time

laws, specializing was more efficient, spending time on what he was proficient in.

However he couldn’t use this...

But it’s value was undeniable, this was an inheritance crystal, one that occurred once every 10,081 eras, it was hard to determine its worth.

"I cannot use it."

"It’ll be a waste in my hands, anyone who wants to use it will have to wait 9,999 eras." Luo Feng shook his head, "Only those that have lived that long would have the patience."

"Hm, I’ll go ask teacher on how to deal with this."

He instantly made the decision.

******

The dream light god inheritance crystal was something he had never seen within the treasure trove, it was obviously much rarer, such a treasure...it was easiest to get an answer from the primal chaos city leader.

"True Yan is training in the space laws too, he’s at the final step now to becoming a knight. This is useless to him." Luo Feng was very grateful to True Yan, if he could help him, he would definitely do it, however...True Yan was at the final step, many valuable treasures were useless to him.

The useful ones, Luo Feng couldn’t afford.

...

Virtual universe, at the highest peak of thunder island, endless primal chaos energy engulfed the palace, that was the city leader’s palace.

Shua.

Luo Feng appeared outside the entrance and stepped in, walking

inwards.

"Teacher." Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

"What's the matter?" A calm voice resounded from the chaos energy.

"I've just acquired a treasure from the outer region wars." He said respectfully, "This treasure...I've never seen it before, after checking it, mysterious words appeared on the surface and I got to know that it's an inheritance crystal for the dream light god."

"God inheritance crystal?" The city leader walked out from the chaos energies.

Even though he didn't show any of his strength, a life form at that level naturally made Luo Feng submit. The city leader's expression was casual, his eyes deep and profound, he smiled, "You actually got an inheritance crystal, your luck sure is good, even the Hong alliance has only collected over 8,000 such crystals, as for the dream light god crystal, the Hong alliance only has 1, it's very rare."

"Ah..." Luo Feng blinked.

"Not strange."

The city leader said, "Back then when you accepted the demon note inheritance, there were 32 palaces there. The demon light inheritance has tens to over 100, why the surprise?"

Chapter 823: Couldn’t Bear

Luo Feng was disappointed within.

Whether it was selling away the inheritance crystal or using it in the future, the rarer it was the better.

From what he heard...there were tens to hundreds of the Dream light inheritance crystal.

"Of the over 8,00 crystals the Hong alliance has, the ones with the most similar crystals is at most 101 of them." The city leader stood there, chaos energy revolving about him, "The Hong alliance only has 1 Dream light inheritance crystal, hence the price of yours is pretty high."

Luo Feng was happy within as he listened intently.

"A God candidate inheritance is lower than a god general inheritance." The city leader said, "Even with great progress in the god candidate inheritance, one would at most reach the limit of emperor level...only with the fusion of the crystal and becoming one with it would one have the strength of a normal knight, which is the strength of your teacher True Yan."

"True Yan?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"Hm."

The city leader nodded, "Your teacher True Yan is invincible amongst the emperors, akin to a normal knight. This is the strength level of a Dream light messenger, as for the candidate... even with great progress in all the techniques, he would at most be a pinnacle warrior, not akin to a normal knight."

"Also..."

"There is a bad side to accepting this inheritance. If one doesn’t make great progress in it, that’s ok. However if one goes far with it, their limit in their life would forever be that of a candidate."

The city leader looked at Luo Feng, "Meaning, training in the inheritance techniques may raise one’s strength early on, however later on, they would be affected by it and never will be able to truly become a knight."

"Ah." Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

Couldn’t become a knight?

Fortune begets disaster, one would be extremely strong early on, but never able to become a knight.

"Becoming a knight itself is extremely hard, hence many geniuses don’t have that kind of ambition, even willing to train in the inheritance techniques." The city leader said, "As one has to be sector lord level to train in the inheritance, undyings are unable to receive it...hence the price for each inheritance isn’t too high."

Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

If a sector lord could receive the inheritance, how high could the price be?

"Normally they have their teacher’s help, within the Hong alliance, accepting one inheritance...one can use points to exchange for it, it’s usually priced within 1 billion to 3 billion points, according to the different inheritance and power levels, the price differs." The city leader continued, "If it’s a god general inheritance, that’s completely different...the emperor undyings all fight hard for their slots, getting their teachers to help, the price of one time alone could reach several tens of billion of points, also, they would owe favors for getting their teachers’ help."

"Tens of billions of points along with favors, just to try and get one chance for the god general inheritance." The city leader said, "You should know how much more valuable it is. True Yan has accepted one before."

"Ah..." Luo Feng was curious.

"A god candidate inheritance has a limit of an emperor level strength, even becoming the one and only candidate would allow one the strength of a knight."

"The god general inheritance is trillions of times harder, the moment one accepts it, that would have the limit of knights...even against universe masters, they will be able to survive. It's akin to the creator of the Nan shen 7 forms, Xi Luo Duo! Also akin to the Tian Shi palace master whom you know, though it's not truly the level of a universe master, they can be considered almost at that level." The city leader said, "Of course the god general inheritance is much harder, it's extremely hard for one to complete them, even so, they still benefit a lot. Definitely much greater in amplifying the soul and other techniques, even strengthening the body."

Luo Feng nodded.

He had received the inheritance before, his spirit energy amplitude exceeded 3,200.

"God candidate inheritance, God general inheritance."

"The difference is huge."

"The strength difference is huge, so are the future prospects. Hence with regards to the point exchange within the Hong alliance, the difference is huge as well." The city leader looked at Luo Feng, "As to the Dream light inheritance crystal you've got, it's useless in your hands. You have 2 choices..."

"1, sell it to the virtual universe company, it will be priced at 30 billion points."

"2, you can use it to exchange for a god general inheritance, as there is only one every 10,081 eras, the next suitable one for you will happen 120,000 years from now."

"2 choices, you can choose."

After he spoke, he remained silent and awaited Luo Feng's answer.

Luo Feng was troubled.

2 choices...

Tough choice!

30 billion points had many uses, he could exchange for many treasures, if used well, they could raise his strength greatly, no one truly knew...what they truly needed at each point in time, afterall, it was hard to predict what encounters they would face.

The god general inheritance chance was much more valuable, something that emperors would fight for with the help of their knight teachers. Spending tens of billions of points and owing favors just for the chance of a slot, Luo Feng was very clear, having received the demon note inheritance before, just how heavenly the inheritance was.

If he received an inheritance related to the body, his body amplitude may rise tens of times, that would be impressive.

Deities of the world, at its limit could only amplify 36 times.

"How do I choose?"

"Even though the god general inheritance is good, it'll happen 120,00 years from now, I won't get any benefit within these years." Luo Feng frowned.

If it were other warriors, they may immediately exchange for the slot.

Luo Feng was different.

He had only lived for a few thousand years, what was 120,000 years? It was simply too long, his accomplishments within a few thousand years were this much, just how much could he grow with that 120,000 years? What would he encounter? There would definitely be times where he would need more points.

******

He stood there and considered hard for 20 seconds, with his

calculation speed, he thought of countless answers.

"Teacher." He said respectfully.

"Have you thought of an answer?" The city leader looked at him.

"I would like to keep the crystal for now, as to whether to exchange it for points or a slot for inheritance, I'll make the decision when the time comes." He said.

"No problem."

The city leader nodded, "I will help keep a slot for the god general inheritance, that one is for the Square god general inheritance, I will keep it...until 120,000 years later."

"Thank you teacher." Luo Feng was grateful.

There was no such thing of saving a slot, was it that simple? This was purely the city leader helping him out.

"Go on."

"Yes."

Luo Feng left respectfully.

Watching Luo Feng leave the palace, the city leader nodded within, "Looking at the army footage of Luo Feng, he...can actually easily kill a pinnacle official, even using a flame god crystal to kill a low emperor. Even though the Sha Wu wings diffused a lot of the explosion, its strength lies in its speed, in terms of attack and defense, they are secondary...his golden horned beast body can actually withstand the blast, this disciple's encounters are much more mysterious than I thought."

"Who knows what they are."

"Other race inheritance? Or a special treasure from the universe itself? Or something from before the big bang..." He shook his head, "The encounters and treasures are there, but everything still depends on the person. Let's see how far he can go."

The city leader knew much about Luo Feng.

However, with regards to the Nameless manual, the soldier and general armor, no one knew about them, it was unknown amongst humanity.

However as he observed Luo Feng's growth, he naturally deduced...Luo Feng definitely had some powerful encounters, only with his own knowledge and vision, he could think of countless possibilities, but it was hard to confirm which it was.

****

Within a cave on the Yan Ji main continent, Luo Feng had set up his temporary base.

He activated his mini scanner and his cloud contact vine spread 10km about as security.

The mosha body had become a stone within the cave, as for Luo Feng's earth body and the golden horned beast, they began to train in the 2nd volume of the Nameless manual.

"This 2nd volume is much harder than the 1st."

"Howl."

"The genes are evolving, how unbelievable." As he trained, Luo Feng couldn't help but compliment the manual, training the 1st volume...had led his genes to evolve past a normal human sector lord, now with the evolution of the 2nd, his genes could evolve to the level of a normal golden horned beast sector lord!

Humans and the golden horned beast had a huge difference in gene level.

However with the nameless manual, it could remedy that!

A technique that surpassed the laws of the universe...it was simply unbelievable!

...

Peng!

The beast’s body completely crumbled, it once again began forming a new body within, continuing with the training.

...

Within the 2nd month of his training, in his villa in the primal region Yu Xiang mountain, virtual universe.

"Your majesty, a team from the Hong alliance has come." The manager Dylan pointed outside.

"Ah?"

Luo Feng walked over, frowning, Hong alliance?

Outside the large entrance of the villa, a group of undyings stood, all with different appearances, some human, some from other races, a total of 9 of them.

"Greetings." Luo Feng walked over, curious, He could guess... from the formless pressure they gave off, they were all emperors.

"Your majesty Luo Feng." The leader was a pink armored lady with pink long hair, her body somewhat translucent, she smiled and Luo Feng was naturally affected by it, "We are a special envoy group of the Hong alliance, we’ve come here to formally invite you to join the Hong alliance."

Chapter 824: Joining The Hong Alliance

Luo Feng frowned, joining the Hong alliance?

According to the information he had gathered on them, along with talking with other powerful warriors, normally, only emperors would get officially invited! Becoming an emperor was the prerequisite to joining, he had never heard of a sector lord being invited.

"Please come in, I'm quite surprised by this, can we sit and talk slowly?" Luo Feng smiled and asked.

"Since your majesty invited us, we naturally would not reject."

Luo Feng led the team from the Hong alliance into his spacious villa's living room.

Luo Feng had already gotten his people to prepare a banquet earlier on.

"Please sit." Luo Feng smiled.

The members all sat down, simultaneously, they looked on with interest at Luo Feng, since they were in this team, they naturally knew about him...that he was the disciple of the legendary being the primal chaos city leader.

And to be invited into the Hong alliance at Sector lord level, it showed that he wasn't ordinary at all.

"I still don't know your names." Luo Feng finally sat.

"Human, Desire emperor." The leading absolute beauty, the lady with pink armor smiled and said.

Ferocious clan, Chasing Lightning Emperor."

"Fog clan, Dripping water emperor."

...

The 9 envoys replied, there were 2 humans, 7 other races, all

emperors.

"Hm, all emperors." Luo Feng complimented, "It’s rare for me to meet so many emperors too, and other race emperors."

"The weakest in the Hong alliance are at least emperors, we are not worth your compliments." Desire emperor smile was enough to make an undying mesmerized and faint, "You should know the reason for our visit, the Hong alliance involves many other races forming a huge alliance, we definitely will not force anyone to join, however once one joins...he cannot betray the alliance, are you willing to join?"

The others all looked at Luo Feng.

"Of course." Luo Feng nodded.

What a joke.

Who would dare reject an alliance with all the super warriors of humanity within, his 2 teachers were also a part of it, how could he not join? And once he was in, he would know almost all of the emperors of humanity. This was truly expanding his horizons and network.

"Ding!" The moment Luo Feng replied, a glaring star appeared within the living room.

It was resplendent.

It became a beam of light and flew onto Luo Feng’s shoulder.

Rumble!

A blurry image of a human silhouette floated in space, his formless pressure and the light he projected made it so that Luo feng and the other emperors couldn’t lift their heads to get a clear view of him. It was almost like ants facing a god, no resistance.

The light silhouette lowered his head and looked at Luo Feng.

"Human Luo Feng!" the light spoke, it was hard to tell whether it was a man or woman, it pierced straight into Luo Feng’s soul.

"Welcome to the Hong alliance, from now on, you are an official member!"

"The universe is filled with dangers, for the race to survive, warriors have to fight, whether its for the Hong alliance or humanity, this is a duty for everyone, and yours too." The light dispersed, the voice resounding over and over within his mind and there was silence in the living room.

...

"To fight for the Hong alliance and humanity..." Luo Feng muttered.

"Excuse me" Luo Feng awoke and looked at the 9, "May I know who was that?"

Even though the city leader always controlled his strength around him, he would occasionally emanate energy comparable to that silhouette earlier...and that silhouette's energy earlier didn't seem weaker than his teacher's.

"That's an enigma of the Hong alliance." The cool looking bug soldier Chasing lightning emperor laughed, "Every time someone joins the Hong alliance, this scene will appear, it would make countless members wonder just who that is, some say it's the appearance of one of the Hong alliance's palace masters, some say it's some AI, the virtual universe can simulate any kind of pressure, this is a possibility."

Luo Feng asked curiously, "A palace master of the alliance?"

"Your teacher...the respected primal chaos city leader is one of the palace masters, they are all beings that surpass the 7 stars." Chasing lightning said.

"Surpass the 7 stars?"

Luo Feng looked at the 1 star mark on his shoulder, "I'm considered 1 star?"

"Right."

Chasing lightning nodded, "Anyone who just joins the alliance will all be 1 star! 1 star is the lowest position of an official member, everybody starts there, don't worry about it."

"One star when one just joins, I'm naturally not affected." He said curiously, "This 1 star, 7 stars, palace masters...can you explain to me?"

Desire emperor quickly jumped in beside.

"Luo Feng, you are already a member of the Hong alliance, you can read up on the detailed information yourself." Desire emperor said, "Everything can be searched, if we explain to you, it'll take forever. There's simply too much information about it, we cannot summarize everything, before you enter Hong alliance city...take a look at the information, that way you'll understand more before you get in."

Luo Feng nodded and smiled, "Since I'm already an official member, let's have a banquet together."

"Haha, how can we reject a banquet from your majesty?"

"It's a rare chance."

The team of 9 emperors wished to get close to Luo Feng too, it was after an enjoyable banquet that Luo Feng left the group.

...

Within the study.

Luo Feng sat in his study and swiftly began to read about the Hong alliance.

"Hehe, that's quite a bit." He held his breath and read, he didn't have access to the information before, now there was plenty to get through.

Pictures, footage, words, everything.

From the pictures and footage...

The main camp of the Hong alliance was within a space specially opened by the virtual universe company, that space had countless stars and in the center was a huge floating ancient city. There lived countless warriors, it was the Hong Alliance city.

It was where countless humans and other race warriors gathered.

It seemed peaceful...it was the virtual universe after all.

The security was strict here...everyone had different levels of authority according to their strength and contribution.

Their strengths were determined by their battle records, the higher they were, the more points they got and they would be separated into 1 star, 2 stars, 3 stars...until 7 stars, a very simple distinction, all warriors had their star markings on their shoulders.

That way, it was easy to see who was at what level.

Those that just joined were all 1 star, and later on, according to their battle records, the virtual universe system's Hong alliance point system would automatically calculate and appoint stars to them accordingly.

1 star, a mark of a new comer, they were normally normal emperor level .

2 stars, a strong warriors amongst emperors.

3 stars, emperor limit.

4 stars, the beginning knight level, True Yan was at this level.

...

7 stars, the lowest level of a universe master, the Tian Shi palace leader was at this level.

"What a big city."

"The Hong alliance city is separated into the outer, inner city

along with the palace." Luo Feng looked at the footage and complimented, "The humans sure have many strong warriors, close to 100,000 emperors, with the other races together, the number of emperors exceed 3 million."

In the footage.

The ancient city that floated amidst the stars had a blur of warriors about...over 3 million emperors gathered together, their strengths split into 1 to 3 stars, all living in the outer city. The inner city was almost empty.

The ones with 4-6 stars lived in the inner city, these were almost all knights.

At the core of the city...

There was a majestic over 1 million km tall palace, almost like a huge blade piercing into space, this was the Hong alliance palace.

There lived the 7 star beings, these beings...were at least on the level of the Tian Shi palace leader or Xi Luo Duo.

The palace masters...were those that surpassed the 7 stars.

They were all beings that could easily shake up trillions of races.

"Hu."

"This is the true hidden strength?" Luo Feng exclaimed, The primal chaos city leader had the ability to reverse time and revive other warriors, over countless years, the accumulation of warriors, Luo Feng had guessed...that there would be many emperors, however there were a total of hundreds of thousands of human emperors.

"The Hong alliance's other races truly make it strong."

"The pinnacle other races are very strong, even though they are weak alone, with so many gathered together, there are a total of over 3 million emperors."

"Even so...the leader of the alliance is still humanity."

"Looks like in terms of pinnacle strength, humanity still wins."

Luo feng could easily guess.

Like Xi Luo Duo, he was already considered the greatest being in history of the gold horn race. And his level, similar to that of the Tian Shi palace leader, they were still not at the peak of humanity, the Huge axe founder, Void gold master, Dragon line master, primal chaos city leader...the difference in strength was obvious.

"Humans as leaders, taking up huge territories and resources, naturally the other races can only follow and serve from behind." Luo Feng thought.

"Who knows..."

"Just how many palace masters there are in the alliance." Luo Feng had tried searching but his authority level didn’t give him anything.

Chapter 825: 2nd Volume

Luo Feng carefully read through the Hong Alliance information, getting more shocked as he read.

The Hong alliance gathered all the strong warriors about, and just who would get the treasures owned by an entire race? Naturally the powerful emperors or knights, and the universe masters that stood above them all. They owned large amounts of the entire race's wealth.

Hence...

Several auctions held by the banks for their guests, compared to the deals of the Hong Alliance...were considered small fry.

Their normal deals alone were worth billions of mixed elements.

Some larger deals were worth even more.

Some other even rarer items only involved barter.

...

Auctions! Huge deals! Elite teams that explored secret regions! Outer region wars elite team! Teams formed from similar interests and goals! In all...even though there were only more than 3 million in the alliance, they controlled large amounts of humanity's wealth and protection.

Humanity was ruled by the Hong alliance!

The primal chaos city leader, Void gold master and other super powers they may all benefit the survival of the race, however when it comes to their own personal development, there would naturally be conflict! Afterall, the city leader, void gold master, Dragon Yan master...they all had their own goals!

Humanity had its own internal competition, the other races naturally fought hard to get more resources too!

In all...

The Hong alliance was a true place where fish and dragons mixed, the powerful were all within.

"Just the information I'm allowed to access has so much, it sure has huge benefits and the competition is fierce...hm, I'll have to spend some time studying this information."

"However, I'm currently training the Nameless manual volume 2."

"The earth body's training is fast, it'll complete soon, then I will have enough strength to stay on the main continent with just the earth body alone."

******

Yan Ji main continent, within his base.

Luo Feng wasn't in a hurry to go to Hong alliance city, it was a deep and huge place that he'd have to explore properly. "The 1st volume of the nameless manual took 3 months for the earth body to complete, the golden horned beast however took 29 years."

"This 2nd volume should be about the same."

...

As time passed, in a blink of an eye, Luo Feng had already trained in the 2nd volume for close to 3 months.

Internal world, within the vast beach.

A half naked Luo Feng sat crossed legged on the sand, his body glowing as he gave off a different energy. Just like the golden horned beast or Hui suo beast, even asleep, they gave off a powerful energy, this was the pressure formed from the evolution of life itself.

The golden horned beast was a pinnacle bloodline, at sector lord pinnacle, it was ten times that of a human!

Completing the 2nd volume, his earth body would be 6 times that of a normal human! That was akin to the royal family of the

demon race.

"Phew."

He opened his eyes, "Done."

"My body has reached 6 times that of a normal human, not the 9 times that I guessed." He shook his head and laughed, "I'm too greedy, this gene evolution is already heavenly, it's made my body akin to a royal bloodline demon. If I complete the 3rd volume, I'd probably reach the pinnacle space beast bloodline."

This nameless manual had a total of 9 volumes.

The 1st amplified 3 times.

The 2nd, 6 times.

The 3rd...

Until the 9th.

Simply relying on it allowed his normal human body to evolve past a golden horned beast or Hui Suo beast bloodline, his basics would surpass all. Breaking through the constructs of the universe laws, just how heavenly was this? Luo Feng's high position naturally made him realize just how valuable this technique was.

"Time to try absorbing blood river crystals, I absorbed a total of 8 before...now that I've competed the 2nd volume of the nameless manual, my foundation has grown further, almost compared to a golden horned beast, akin to a royal bloodline demon." He thought, "I may be able to become the Black warrior that hasn't occurred over countless years in Blood river continent."

Hua hua...

The ocean rushed against the shore, covering his calves.

"Begin." He flipped his hand and a beautiful blood river crystal appeared, he slashed his palm with his finger and grabbed the crystal.

The pain from the absorption of the 9th crystal was easily withstood.

He stood on the beach.

Regaining his composure after awhile.

"Very good."

"Success!"

"The absorption of the 9th was successful, let’s see how the 10th goes." The originally calm Luo Feng couldn’t help but hold his breath, swiftly grabbing another crystal, easily withstanding the illusions. As the energy poured into his body, it was completely different from the golden horned beast absorbing the energy into separate parts of its body. This energy poured into his entire body.

Chi chi chi...

All his muscles shook violently.

Ka! His expression changed as he fought hard, looking down at the crystal in his palm, it was already translucent as the final changes occurred within his body.

"I must succeed!"

"I must!" He frowned and felt his entire body.

His bones and muscles felt like they were being torn apart, about to crumble at any time. The blood river energy poured into every cell in his muscles and the pressure within grew larger and larger, finally as the last bit of energy entered, the pressure faded away like water seeping away.

The scales that had covered his entire body began to disappear.

Luo Feng stood quietly on the beach, silent.

"Hahaha...I’ve succeeded!"

"I’ve become a black warrior a true black warrior!" He couldn’t help but wave his right fist excitedly, triggering ripples in space as

his powerful force rushed in all directions, causing the calm waves to rise over hundreds of meter into a tsunami as it poured over.

"10! The 10th has succeeded."

"The black warrior is a legend in blood river world, yet I've succeeded." Even though he knew early on that he might succeed, he still couldn't help get excited over the success.

His success was actually very normal.

In terms of genes, he far exceeded the aboriginals of blood river world, even akin to a royal bloodline demon Qi Niu...Qi Niu even absorbed more than him, one was because its genetics were high enough, secondly he was a aboriginal of blood river world, from birth, it had been shaped by the formless beast god pressure about, it naturally could absorb better.

"Even though I almost failed at the end, it went through."

"If my guess is right..." His eyes gleamed, "Whether the earth body's strength soars or grows slowly, it all depends on this."

"Blood river energy!"

His eyes gleamed with madness.

Rumble, dark gold appeared throughout his body, his eyes gleamed dark gold too as his body seemed to shrink a little, almost like iron, sturdier. At this time...he didn't seem like a human at all, he seemed like an absolute beast.

"My guess was actually right!" His eyes gleamed with glee.

"Hahaha..."

"I actually got it right."

"Triggering the blood river energy in the earth body after absorbing 10 crystals creates a change in my genetics, my strength actually soars and reaches 10 times that of before." He was extremely elated.

Right, his body strength was 10 times stronger than before.

Back then when the golden horned beast absorbed 10 crystals, it's right claw had the strength of its entire body, akin to 2 times that of before.

1 was 2 times! This was 10 times!

Luo Feng had guessed this early on.

The theory was simple, as the golden horned beast's body was huge, the blood river energy could only cover its right claw! Just its right claw could absorb 10 crystals, akin to its entire body's strength...just how strong was it? The claw alone was akin to only a tenth of the body before, now it was as strong as the entire body...

10 times!

The claw was at least ten times stronger before it absorbed the crystals!

The beast had absorbed 100 crystals, making its right claw now 10 times that of the entire body, how much had it evolved? At least over 100 times.

...

The beast's body was huge, it was both a good and bad thing. The bad side was that it made absorbing the crystals harder.

The earth body absorbed the crystals' energy into his entire body, his entire body evolves, naturally his body could easily reach 10 times that of before.

"Very good, that's a good surprise, looks like my theory from before is right." He was very excited as he shouted, "Beast god transformation!"

Countless scales began to appear throughout his skin, he became a human beast god.

"I've succeeded."

"The beast god transformation is a success, hahaha...my earth body has enough strength now." As he thought of battles ahead, he couldn't help but laugh loudly.

...

Training in the nameless manual evolved his genes, his strength was akin to 6 times that of a pinnacle sector lord human! With the trigger of the blood river energy, this evolution from the blood of the beast god itself...made his strength rise 10 times. He thus now had 60 times that the strength of a human pinnacle sector lord.

The beast god transformation's 1st level amplified his strength by 2 times!

That was 120 times!

The general armor's requirement was 100 times sector lord strength.

"Haha..."

"I've got another emperor's strength." The human beast god flipped his hand and a silver crystal appeared, general armor crystal, "General armor, fusion!"

Sou!

The general armor immediately entered his body and became countless threads that connected to his every cell and muscle and organ etc...the pressure from the fusion was huge, however now Luo Feng could easily withstand it, the word general appeared on his chest before disappearing within.

"General armor, appear!"

A silver armor swiftly appeared throughout his body, it gave him the strength of 10,000 sector lords, easily making his body strength reach emperor level! Along with his blade work and pinnacle techniques...

He got the strength of an emperor!

"Haha...from today on, I have 2 emperors' worth of strength."

"With the earth body and the golden horned beast both at emperor level, those I'm unable to deal with alone, I can use both bodies!"

Chapter 826: Hong Alliance City

With the completion of the 2nd volume and the successful absorption of 10 blood river crystals, becoming the legendary black warrior, plus the General armor...his earth body may be weaker than the golden horned beast, but he had the strength of an emperor! 2 emperor's worth of strength...Luo Feng was definitely confident.

It was hard to kill each other in a fight between emperors, even the golden horned beast with the Sha Wu wings had to rely on a high level emperor self destruct flame god crystal worth 800 million points to kill his enemy. And it was normally hard to even use the flame god crystal as the explosion would affect its own user!

If the golden horned beast didn't have the Sha Wu wings and general armor, it would have died too.

Hence...

When emperors fight, they could at most suppress each other, death was a rare thing. Using numbers...with 2 emperors joining hands, the enemy couldn't flee.

"Since the earth body is ready, it's time to head to Hong alliance city to check it out!"

******

The earth body took close to 3 months to complete the 2nd volume, as for the beast...it would probably take about 30 years, Luo Feng didn't have the patience to wait that long before heading to the city.

Luo Feng pressed the automatic transfer button in his villa of the virtual universe, as a member of the Hong Alliance, he had one more location he could teleport to, Hong Alliance city.

Xiu!

He vanished and was transferred to another space.

...

The entire virtual universe’s greatest space, where the strongest gathered, it was the Hong alliance space.

A vast space with stars revolving, there lay an ancient majestic city floating, it was Hong alliance city.

Weng!

As he landed, one of the countless stars about lit up.

"This is Hong alliance city?" Appearing within a living room no more than 1,000 square meters, he looked about and frowned, this was a small living room. While his height wasn’t that tall, there were others that exceeded 10 m etc, this was simply too small.

"Luo Feng Luo feng." Babata sat on his shoulder and shouted, "I’ve received mail, this is your living quarters, all the outer city members have the same living space, it has an area of 3,200 square meters."

"So small." Luo Feng shook his head, "The Yu Xiang primal region villa is thousands of square meters, this space will be hard to even practice or do anything."

"Luo Feng, according to the Hong alliance city management system, Hong alliance city isn't a place for you to practice, it’s a place for the strong warriors to gather, they all have the same body build, a student level body."

"I feel it." Luo feng nodded.

Back when Luo Feng had first entered the black dragon mountain island in the virtual universe, it was the same, all the humans had the exact same body build, this was set to prevent fights. Just looking at their appearances was hard to determine their strengths.

Yu Xiang mountain however was a gathering spot for geniuses.

A place to nurture geniuses, for them to battle and train. Hence everyone had bodies close to their real bodies in reality. If one was a domain lord level 9 in reality, they would be so in the virtual universe...that way, it was suitable for training and battle.

The Hong Alliance city however reverted back to the original settings, everyone had the same weak body.

"Not just the emperors, even the knights have the same bodies here." Babata said, "Hence as long as the knights control their pressure, even if a knight stood before you, you wouldn't be able to tell. As everybody has the same build, the only difference is the consciousness...and one can control their pressure, making it impossible to tell."

"Let's go take a look."

Luo Feng walked out.

...

It was a quiet vast little district, every living quarters took up 3,200 square meters, all 2 storeys high, each with its own style.

"The outer city is the most crowded and bustling, afterall, the inner city is mostly filled with knights and there are only so few of them? At least it's clear...the outer city has over 3 million residents, separated into little districts, each with at most 10,000 residents." Babata told Luo Feng.

Walking within the little district.

Luo Feng felt...almost like he was walking in a little district of earth, however seeing the different styles of each living quarters, seeing the many different warriors, be it rock life forms etc...only then did he feel he was in Hong alliance city, a place where the strong gathered.

He looked up to the skies.

The endless space, stars littered throughout.

"According to the information I gathered." Luo Feng said softly, "Every star represents a warrior within the city, I wonder which one is mine."

"Hm? There are a lot of warriors ahead." He glanced forward.

In the land ahead there were many chairs and tables, the warriors sat in their groups and drank and chatted, with a glance... there were at least a hundred of them, about 5 of them human while the others all from other races.

"Ha, a new comer?"

"I've never seen you, have you just joined the Hong alliance?"

"Come, let's drink together."

Immediately, many warriors lifted their glasses and waved.

"Hehe, even though they are from different races everybody is friendly." Luo Feng thought, simultaneously ordering within, "Babata, don't reveal my identity." The title of being the primal chaos city leader's disciple was too shocking, and that news... definitely has spread throughout the Hong Alliance.

Plus, it was rare to see a sector lord in here, he didn't want to become a spectacle.

"Understood." Babata said.

Luo Feng headed towards the friendly warriors and smiled, after which he grabbed a glass of wine from the bar and headed to the 5 humans, they naturally formed a group around him.

"If you don't mind, I'll sit here." Luo Feng was wearing black armor, his appearance slightly altered, plus with very few knowing the news of Luo Feng joining the Hong alliance, other than the 108 knights of the management level and the envoy team, no one else knew.

"Haha, dispense with the ceremonies, come sit."

"Sit."

The other 5 emperors smiled.

Luo Feng looked at their star markings on their shoulders, 4 2 stars and 1 3 stars.

"You just came to Hong Alliance, let me introduce you, I’m Wood Jade emperor. A long haired warrior with dark skin said, "These 4..."

...

Luo Feng chatted happily with the 5 emperors, occasionally, other race warriors would come say hi, this made Luo Feng get to know many other race warriors, he felt...as though the atmosphere was peaceful within the city, one had to know the emperors on Yan Ji main continent definitely didn’t get along well.

And it was hard to see so many emperors, how many emperors were there on Yan Ji main continent? Other than those rushing over by teleportation to kill or escape, it was extravagant to see 2 emperors together otherwise.

In primal chaos city however...

They were everywhere!

"Ice mountain is here."

"Scum."

The other race warriors suddenly got noisy, making Luo Feng get shocked. He gazed over with the other warriors...in the distance, a silhouette in white armor walked, it was a single eyed warrior with a mask and hundreds of braids.

This ice mountain warrior walked over to the bar, got his wine and walked to a table to drink alone.

"Ice Mountain, why are you still here?"

"You think you can just sit here?"

"You sure are shameless."

"Hmph, if it were outside, I'd long have killed you."

The many warriors all mocked, Ice mountain however continued to drink his wine, after which he stood up, stretched and glanced over, snorting coldly, "What a bunch of idiots." After which he walked away into a little district.

Watching him leave, Luo Feng asked curiously, "What's up with him? Did he enrage everybody?"

"Ha...I wouldn't consider it that." Wood Jade laughed softly, "There will naturally be competition where the strong gather, our little district currently has over 8,000 emperors, all from different races. As time passes, some will stay here for long, groups are naturally formed. The large groups will have over a thousand while the small will have hundreds."

Luo Feng nodded.

After being sent to a small district, they would be stuck here, many had stayed here for trillions of years, naturally their would get closer to each other and groups were formed naturally.

"Several deals and other things that happened, that Ice mountain didn't help out the larger leaders, hence everybody treats him that way." A huge armored man with 2 beast claws said beside, "Luckily this is the virtual universe, if it was reality, he'd be dead."

Wood jade continued, "Actually, what he did wouldn't even be considered wrong."

"Ah?" Luo Feng was stunned.

No wrong, and yet he was in this position?

"He can only blame the fact that he's from a weak race." Wood jade shook his head, "The race powers have a huge influence, that Ice mountain is from the Nuo Bu Si race, a weak race. I heard that the entire race only has 1 knight. Within the entire Hong alliance, they have no influence whatsoever. What do you think...for such a weak clansman from a weak race, it'd be better for him to stay low

profile, however for him to mess things up like that...haha, everybody here are mostly emperors, even if he was the son of that race's knight, no one would care."

"However, as I said before, what he did cannot be considered wrong. The fault lies in his identity." Wood jade smiled, "Like us humans, even if we did the same thing, who would dare mess with us? Just like when you walked over earlier...didn't you see how passionately everyone greeted you."

"Because...in Hong alliance city, humans are the strongest." Wood Jade said softly.

Chapter 827: Shop in Hong Alliance City

Wood Jade emperor was very good at starting conversations and connecting. When Luo Feng wanted to go walk around Hong Alliance city, Wood Jade said confidently, "I’m extremely familiar with everywhere within the city, I’ll accompany you and introduce you to a few things."

"That would be troublesome for you." Luo Feng smiled.

"No trouble at all. Undyings have limitless life, they can’t always be training. And the dangerous battles only occur once in awhile. Over the long years, we do have to do some other things no? To accompany a good friend around Hong Alliance city is a happy thing." Wood Jade smiled, revealing his snow white teeth.

With Wood Jade leading, Luo Feng began to explore the city.

...

Hong Alliance city, the lowest level of strength here was at emperor level. Countless warriors gathered in such a city, and the city itself was naturally very advanced. Rare scenes that occured in a typical place was very common here.

Large ship deals.

Plant life forms, metal life forms being exchanged.

Warrior employment.

Special item acquirement missions.

Huge auctions.

Gambling establishment.

"Gambling?" Luo Feng looked at the peculiar looking seven storey palace. On it were three human language words Pu Ya palace.

"Warriors all have the characteristics of taking risks, and over eternal life, there aren’t that many new things to do. Pu Ya palace

is a gambling place...a hobby, come, I'll introduce you." Wood Jade dragged Luo Feng in. The moment they entered, they saw large numbers of warriors about.

This huge palace took up several km in space, it was bustling.

"Open!"

"Open!"

"Open!" The many emperors all stared ahead, laughing as they shouted excitedly.

"Number 1031." A loud voice shouted the numbers.

Many of them within immediately cursed. There was one however that shouted, "1031 is Nong Cang emperor, he's struck it rich this time."

"Nong Cang, you've won 100 million mixed elements worth of treasure, you'll have to treat me next time."

"Don't be stingy."

"Is Nong Cang a stingy human?"

Loud shouts came from all over, after which, a curly long haired tall man shouted out, "Go go go. Those with tickets can all head to the Nine fragrant palace hall."

"Luxurious."

"Generous indeed."

Large cheers could be heard.

Luo Feng looked over immediately, asking curiously, "Wood Jade, what's going on?"

"This is a one out of 10,000 gamble." He laughed. "And this lottery system allows the gambling den to earn quite a bit."

"Ah?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"These sort of games are very simple. They produce treasure

worth 100 million mixed elements, these aren't some random lousy things. The treasures here are worth at least that much when exchanged or sold outside." Wood Jade explained, "One treasure from the gambling den is produced and then they will sell 10,000 tickets. Also, every ticket is priced at 10,000 mixed elements."

"When all 10,000 tickets are sold, they will choose one number out of the lot, the one with that ticket will get the treasure" Wood Jade said.

"So it's like that." Luo Feng realized.

It was interesting.

It was akin to 10,000 warriors buying one item together, and one out of all of them would get the item alone.

Investing 10,000 to get back 100 million.

Of course many of them failed.

"Since the ticket is only priced at 10,000 mixed elements, occasionally gambling is fun." Wood Jade walked and explained. There were many different types of gambling, and they were quite similar to the gambling of earth itself, with some unique traits of its own.

The smaller ones were worth a few hundred mixed elements, while the higher ones were in the hundred millions.

However the higher ones would have prominent figures occasionally come give it a shot. Afterall, even emperor pinnacles wouldn't dare gamble so high.

...

"Hu." Walking out of Pu Ya palace, Luo Feng was shocked, "How much does this place earn? So many warriors coming here to gamble, just earning a little from each of them would be plenty enough."

"Pu Ya palace is the only gambling den in the entire city. Even

though it is taxed by the alliance, it’s profits are shocking, and it cannot be bought or sold either." Wood Jade exclaimed. "There’s no way to request to build another gambling den in the city, there’s just this one. I’ve heard that a palace master is the boss of Pu Ya palace. I’ve even heard that it may be several palace masters together owning it."

Luo Feng nodded.

"Not just Pu Ya palace."

Wood Jade walked in the alley, pointing to the huge shops, "All the businesses have number limits. These shops...have to have at least a knight backing before they can begin. Hence, not everyone can simply have businesses here in the Hong alliance."

"Of course there are pros and cons."

"Other than Pu Ya palace and few other unique places, there are many shops that are also unique but limited in numbers, naturally there will be competition."

"Haha..."

"Even though we emperors are unable to open a shop, we don’t need to pay for lodging and so on in here, but only for gambling or buying things. Naturally we will have no expenses if we wished it. However as long as a shop is open...it requires paying taxes to the Hong alliance all the time." Wood Jade pointed ahead. "Look, that’s the best shop with lots of goods...it’s named universe treasure hall. I’ve heard a human palace master opened it."

******

The hall was split into two levels, and every level was the same size as Pu Ya palace.

One had to know that space was limited in the city, and even the emperors lived in tiny spaces. Hence for a ship to be several km in area, how much stuff could fit in there?

"Hu."

"Hehe."

Luo Feng entered the universe treasure hall. Looking at the countless treasures displayed about, every one of them had a picture that showed footage, picture and information about the item, including it's background, specialty and price.

"The treasures on the first floor are priced from one million mixed elements to 100 billion, there's everything." Wood Jade pointed out, "Look at the stairs heading to the second floor."

"Hm?" Luo Feng turned to look.

"Universe treasure hall is the best ship. There are countless treasures on the first floor, and the second floor has even more valuable items. Some could be bought with mixed elements. Others were contraband, and one had to exchange for them with other treasures...using a barter system." Wood Jade explained. "You should know that several treasures in the universe are extremely rare and unique. To give them an accurate price is very hard... especially unique items, since they may be useless to some, but crucial to others. It's hard to put a price on some items, but exchanging makes it a simpler deal."

Luo Feng nodded, walking and looking about.

After awhile, they reached the stairs.

"This isn't a place you can go." Nine beautiful other race ladies stood next to the hundred meters wide stairway, and one of them stared coldly at Luo Feng and said.

Luo Feng was stunned.

"The second floor isn't open to just anybody." A piercing voice resounded. A man with purple scales and was dressed in a peculiar gold robe that made him look like a purple jade statue walked over, immediately walking to the stairs and shooting Luo Feng a glance.

"Yang."

Wood Jade walked over. Looking at the gold robe warrior, he said, "One has to be a four star or above being to go up. Or have over 100 billion mixed elements in your account of the Universe first bank or Universe galaxy bank. Fulfilling any one of these criteria will allow you to go up."

"And who's that seemingly arrogant fella?" Luo feng laughed.

"He's called Wu Pin emperor." Wood jade said softly. "Even though he's from another race, his teacher is a seven star being, and his teacher spoils him and views him as his own."

"A disciple of a seven star?" Luo Feng laughed.

"That Wu Pin emperor is pretty vicious. Since he's been outspoken and friendly with powerful warriors, he has powerful friends. Yang, we are from different circles...we cannot mess with him." Wood Jade said. "Different circles have differences, naturally those with a stronger background would all mix together."

"Ah." Luo Feng nodded.

"There are countless treasures on the first floor. They are in the trillions, and this is enough for you to view for a long time." Wood Jade smiled.

"I guess so."

Luo Feng nodded.

He laughed within at that Wu Pin emperor. Looks like the other races did feel inferior to humans, and against the truly confident humans...they didn't care about the other races. His arrogance was probably a sign of his own feeling of inferiority.

...

The universe treasure hall was indeed the best shop in Hong Alliance city. There were many rare treasures, and some that even the virtual universe treasure trove didn't have. Of course, there

were some items in the virtual treasure treasure trove that weren't available here too.

However...how could the items in the treasure trove compare to the ones here.

"Sure makes me want to buy stuff."

"Hehe, the treasures needed for Golden horned beast training Deities of the world, there are a few here." Luo Feng was happier as he looked around. He didn't intend to buy anything initially. However after seeing trillions of treasures, he couldn't help but want to buy something. However, the things he was truly interested in were normally worth a few hundreds of millions to billions of mixed elements.

Unfortunately...

He had no money on him, even though he had several items after killing that Na shi youth, he didn't exchange them for cash.

"Hm?" Luo Feng's gaze suddenly landed on a over 8m tall peculiar gold armor. Even though this was simulated by the virtual universe, the instant he saw it, he immediately thought of the soldier and general armor.

"This is..." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

Chapter 828: Gold armor

Luo Feng carefully examined the gold armor before him, especially the energy that was simulated from it. It was similar to the soldier and general armor. But the only thing was...this armor was something scanned and simulated in the virtual universe. Hence, Luo Feng couldn’t feel the calling here.

If it were in reality, he would easily feel it.

That was impossible in the virtual universe.

"The feeling it gives me is similar to the two armors I posses." Luo Feng looked at the picture. On it was detailed information about it along with a price.

"Hm?" Luo Feng couldn’t help but reveal happiness, "Mother flame race..."

The detailed information of the picture.

This armor was acquired from an ancient battle in the race wars. It’s original owner was an emperor of the Mother flame race, who was incredibly powerful. Ten emperors died from his hands...and later on, he was killed by a knight!

The warrior was instantly reduced to nothing from the attack, the gold armor on him however was undamaged. It was a shocking and a mysterious treasure.

This armor was kept as a memento of the battle, after careful examination...

It couldn’t change its size!

Unable to be absorbed into any body!

However its material is sturdy enough so that even a knight would take quite some effort to break through it. Because of the tests, there are three very tiny tears in it.

Even though it cannot change its size...an undying can become

undying energy and enter it. The undying can then form his body accordingly. According to the tests, even if one cannot fuse with it, as long as one wears it, soul attacks would be diminished by over 90% by it!

Even other attacks would have the same effect!

Just with the soul and physical attack diminishing properties... this golden armor is a true treasure, it is priceless! However it's weakness is...its form is fixed and cannot change, making it slightly troublesome.

1, A fixed golden armor is rigid at the joints. If one is a fighter, he will find it hard to wave his blades.

2, A two meter tall god having to form an over 8m tall body affects his strength greatly. A human undying with a height of 2m would definitely never purposely make himself 10m, 1,000m or even 10,000 m tall. Even though it was possible, it would have great effect on his strength. Hence the original form was the optimum.

3, Even though this gold armor had a helmet, it's face area was revealed. As long as a soul attack goes through that area, it wouldn't be blocked by the armor. It's power wouldn't be diminished.

3 great weakness.

Combined with it's incredibly high price...five billion mixed elements, it made it so that no one would even bother asking about the armor.

"Five billion mixed elements?" Luo Feng nodded, "Not bad, it isn't too absurd."

"Yang."

Wood Jade walked over and saw Luo Feng engrossed in the description of the golden armor. He couldn't help but laugh, "This armor is very mysterious. It can block both physical and soul

attacks. However it’s weakness is obvious, especially the revealed face portion, it makes its strength useless. Especially with its five billion mixed elements price...haha, this armor is useful even for emperors, but who would be willing to pay five billion for an armor they have to change their undying body to fit with so many flaws?"

"Ah?" Luo Feng looked at him, "No one has bought it before?"

Even with so many weaknesses.

It’s strengths were shocking, there should be some who would buy it.

"Of course it’s been bought before." Wood Jade laughed. "Back then the Black phoenix bought one. To fit into it, she changed her body just and even specially making an alloy armor to help it."

"What happened?"

"She met another other race warrior in a secret region and because she changed the size of her body, her strength got lowered! And the other race warrior was much stronger, discovering her mask’s weakness after a while. As her special alloy mask isn’t as good as the gold armor, it only decreased half of the soul attacks."

"The enemy’s soul attack went through her face."

"She fell in the war!"

"Ah what a pity."

Wood Jade shook his head, "One has to know that the most terrifying emperors are those proficient in soul attacks. They pass through space itself and are incredibly fast, able to go in through anywhere. As long as there’s a weak spot anywhere, the defenses of the other parts are useless. The gold armor is useless against it, even making an undying change her form just to fit it, it’s simply a waste and useless."

"If it were cheaper, like about 500 to 600 million, people will buy

it more."

"But five billion..."

"It’s enough to make an emperor feel the pinch and not buy something like that." Wood Jade said, "Over countless years, there have been several unlucky warriors that have fallen. Hence no one buys it stupidly anymore. However it is strange...this armor has been transferred about several times, even taken by the enemy but returning after a few battles. However, the price has always been fixed. Theoretically, the price should drop after so long, however it’s always remained at five billion. Ah...when it first appeared its price was fifty billion, and after the 1st user fell, it dropped to five billion. Over countless years, it’s stayed the same."

"Transferred a few times?" Luo Feng was curious, "The universe treasure hall only has this one?"

"They have a total of three."

Wood Jade said, "However, this one with the three tears was the one sold to Black phoenix, I knew her."

"Hm."

Luo Feng nodded and eyed the armor.

Simultaneously decreasing physical and soul attacks?

Unable to change in size?

Unable to fuse with the body?

Mother flame race?

"This is it!" Luo Feng was very sure from the four points. "This is the higher level armor from the soldier and general armor."

"Mother flame race? The soldier and general logo are the same."

"Unable to fuse with the body? Hmph, the mosha body untrained in the nameless manual cannot fuse with the armors too."

"Unable to change in size? It can only do so after the fusion."

"Weaken physical and soul attacks? This confirms it...this is similar to the soldier and general armor."

Luo feng was very excited within.

The Hong alliance was indeed a place where the strong and countless treasure gathered. He randomly stumbled upon a mysterious gold armor and even though all its treasures were priced accurately, it was lucky that no warrior in the alliance had a way to use this armor properly. Hence it wasn't too expensive.

"I definitely have to buy it." Luo Feng thought.

Luo Feng was very clear about his own trump cards.

Even though the Sha Wu wings were very strong, the more important thing to him was the nameless manual and the general armor. Because, these two could raise his strength. The general armor allowed him to have an extra 10,000 sector lords' strength, making up for the difference between him and the undyings.

It not only increased his defense and offense, it increased his chances of survival.

General armor!

The Golden horned beast and earth body both had emperor level strength mainly because of it. In terms of law comprehension, Luo Feng relying on the Beast god presence was only at level 18. This is far from Ke Di's level 20 from back then. However with the mysterious general armor...he had intrepid strength.

Along with the Sha Wu wings and his own pinnacle technique, he could easily kill a pinnacle official. Even relying on the flame god crystal to kill a low emperor.

"If I didn't have the nameless manual and the general armor..."

"I'd only have official level strength."

"I have to thank the creator of the nameless manual." Luo Feng guessed that since earth humans were nurtured by that great

creator, the Mother flame race was probably nurtured from the same creator. The nameless manual should therefore be from the same great creator.

"I have never met him, but he’s given me so much." Luo Feng thought.

"Wood Jade emperor." Luo Feng said.

"Yang?" Wood jade looked curiously at him.

"I need your help in something." Luo feng smiled and walked out of the shop with him.

...

To buy the gold armor, he needed five billion mixed elements!

Luckily it was only five billion, and it was not enough to force him to sell the inheritance crystal. But the goods left behind by the Na Shi youth...Luo Feng had to sell them all.

As for those goods...with his discounted price, Luo Feng would still have to spend at least eight billion points. Naturally the other emperors couldn’t get it at such low prices. Luo Feng was the disciple of the primal chaos city leader, only because of that was he so privileged. The Virtual Universe Company earned very little from him.

...

After a day and a half, Luo Feng finally sold everything.

He first got an estimate from the Virtual Universe Company, they agreed to use seven billion to buy everything.

After which, he asked around the shops in Hong alliance city, and they agreed to buy some, the highest giving him 7.8 billion.

It was crucial to get a good price!

Wood Jade passionately brought Luo Feng around, first to the district where he stayed, then to friends, asking for prices...finally

he sold everything at 8.6 billion.

"If I exchanged for treasure within the Virtual Universe Company and then sold it here, wouldn’t I make it rich? It’s a pity that the Virtual Universe Company is very strict to all primal region members, banning any sales of items." Luo Feng sighed. The company nurtured him well and didn’t earn much from him.

Hence the prices were so low.

...

A day and a half later.

Luo Feng came alone to the universe treasure hall, making sure there was no one else around. The treasures were extremely expensive, and it took an emperor countless years to buy one. With only more than three million emperors in Hong alliance city, only a few would come in and browse, it was mostly empty.

"Come here." Luo Feng called the employee.

"Valued customer, what do you want to buy?" He walked over.

"This gold armor is special, I’ll buy it." Luo Feng said.

Chapter 829: Decision

"Gold...gold armor?" The worker stared hard with disbelief. This gold armor had been displayed here for a long time with no one buying it. There were some in the management of the treasure hall that suggested getting rid of it or lowering the price, however no suggestion ever went through. It remained here and its price stuck at five billion.

"Dear customer, please wait." The worker said, going to call the owner of the first level. It was a seductive looking human lady with gold curly hair, her sleeve had the mark of three stars

A three star warrior!

The lady smiled at Luo Feng, "Let's go in and talk."

Luo Feng nodded and entered a room behind the shop, and the two of them sat opposite to each other.

"Let me introduce myself, I am Can xin emperor, the secondary owner of the treasure hall." She said.

Luo Feng nodded silently.

"It's rare to meet someone who wishes to purchase the gold armor." She smiled. "I will warn you, there have been many that have purchased it before but none have ended well, and five billion is not a small amount..."

Luo Feng nodded.

He was pretty wealthy, however he still wasn't able to simply dish out 5 billion for a worthless item. This however was an armor that was similar to the soldier and general armor, one that even a knight would find hard to destroy. It was too obvious that this was a higher level version of the other two.

Even if it meant selling everything, he had to buy it!

"I'll buy it." Luo Feng said.

"This is the contract." The lady said. "With the virtual universe system as witness, both parties will sign and you will immediately transfer the funds to us after. If we do not send it to you within the time, you'll be refunded ten times the amount.

Luo Feng and the lady signed.

Luo Feng immediately transferred the five billion to the Universe treasure hall account.

"I hope to remain anonymous within your records. I don't wish for anyone to know I purchased the armor." Luo Feng frowned.

"Relax." The lady said confidently, "Our treasure hall has a confidentiality clause. Of course, if you reveal it yourself, you cannot blame us."

Luo Feng got up and left.

The lady watched as he left and she vanished from the hall.

...

Virtual universe, a space opened specially for a knight.

The lady appeared within a vast ice land, and in the center was an ancient palace. It was completely empty within, but on the surface of the ice outside the palace, sat an old man.

"Palace master." The lady stood before him respectfully.

"What huge deal did the treasure hall do?" The old man looked at the lady. This was the palace master of the treasure hall, a knight level being. Normally only huge deals would require him to appear personally.

"The gold armor has been sold." The lady said.

"That useless broken armor?" The old man said curiously.

"Yes." The lady replied.

"Who bought it?" The old man asked.

"He didn't reveal his identity, leaving only his virtual universe

contact number to contact and receive his goods." The lady replied. "And it's very hard to search for his identity from his number."

"I can't do so either, naturally it's hard." The old man waved his hand, "You may leave."

"Yes."

The lady vanished.

Only the old man was left in the vast ice land. He frowned, "A lousy gold armor is worth five billion, why does the master value it so much? The master ordered that the price would remain at five billion, and to inform him immediately when someone buys it. Is this armor truly that mysterious?"

His master...

Was a true absolute being of the pinnacle race of humanity, he was the true owner of the Universe treasure hall.

******

Virtual universe, within the highest palace on thunder island surrounded by chaos energy, a silhouette appeared outside. His body was demonic like a mountain, long with a dragon tail, along with eyes that seemed to hold the entire universe within. Just standing there alone, he gave off a huge force that shook the space about.

"Primal chaos city leader." He stood outside and said, his voice reaching into the palace and resounding within.

"Long Yan, why aren't you coming in?" A calm voice resounded from within.

Two warriors.

One was enough to shake space.

One was calm like the ocean.

"Without your approval, how could I dare barge in?" Long Yan's

voice was booming as he mocked before entering.

The chaos energy parted naturally, revealing a pathway, allowing Long Yan master to easily see the primal chaos city leader in his throne. Long Yan was straightforward...walking straight towards the throne beside and sitting down, "I'm here because of the Yan Shen race gold armor."

"That armor?" The city leader's eyes gleamed, "Long Yan, have you found the way to duplicate it?"

"No." Long Yan shook his head, "That creator was simply too powerful. To make these armors in bulk, even after so many years of studying it, humanity still hasn't created a single one."

"Then why have you come?" The city leader asked curiously.

"Someone has bought one of the gold armors." Long Yan master said.

The city leader looked at him. So what if someone bought it? He knew too...Long Yan purposely set the price at five billion, mainly to force those without confidence to give up on it and those with confidence of using it only to buy it. They may have had some encounters that allowed them to use the wonders of the armor.

However to tell him personally, could it be...

"The buyer of the armor is your disciple Luo Feng." Long Yan master said.

"Ah..." Even though he had guessed, many thoughts had rushed through his mind as Long Yan confirmed it.

"Your disciple is from earth, and the humans of earth were nurtured by that great creator." Long Yan said. "The Yan Shen race was also produced by the same creator...I'm afraid, your disciple may have a way of using the gold armor."

"So what if he does? How many gold armors are there within the race?" The city leader shook his head. "The most important thing

for the race is to study how to make the armor in bulk, studying the Yan Shen race's limitless amplification Royal armor. Just a few sets of the gold armor alone is useless for humanity."

The city leader and Long Yan master...such absolute beings, how far did they see.

The way to create the Yan Shen race's most powerful Royal armor was the only thing they were looking for. It was obvious that the Yan Shen race could make it in bulk, there was obviously a way to do so. It was a pity even after killing many Yan Shen warriors, and searching their souls, using all methods, they still haven't found the answer.

"Haha...I won't bother about your disciple then, you as the teacher can manage him yourself." Long Yan boomed. "If he discovers any important secret in relation to growing humanity's strength, that would be a huge contribution."

"Hm." The city leader nodded, "Leave it to me."

"Has your main body returned?" Long Yan suddenly asked, his expression serious.

"Not yet." The city leader shook his head.

"Be careful." Long Yan said seriously, "Don't fall."

"Even if I do, I'll use my clones to make another body, using some energy and time." The city leader said.

"How many energy crystals are required to make another body of yours? And how much time? That's a huge blow to humanity. And the loss of your body for such long periods of time has a huge effect too, you are an important strength to our race." Long Yan smiled, "Don't get too crazy, know when to retreat."

The city leader nodded.

"I'll be leaving." Long Yan turned and vanished.

...

Within the palace, the primal chaos city leader sat in the throne, Long Yan had been gone for awhile.

"Even though Luo Feng had created a pinnacle technique, his law comprehension is average." The city leader frowned. "Even relying on the Sha Wu wings...he is still very weak, however the strength he displays is shocking. Even not relying on the wings, he still has a high emperor's strength. I always knew he had some special encounter or treasure, and from the looks of it...it should be the Yan Shen race's soldier and general armor."

"Sigh!"

He sighed.

He was very disappointed.

It was because even though the soldier and general armor were powerful...these were created in bulk by the Yan Shen race. They may give him the strength of a god and were extremely useful during his undying phase. However as his strength grew, the effect of the armors got less and less useful. They were only useful in bulk!

It had a temporary effect on one only.

"I thought he had some great encounter, or got some treasure produced by the universe, or from before the big bang..." The city leader shook his head. A true treasure was supposed to get stronger as a warrior's strength grew, like the Sha Wu wings in the hands of an undying could only unleash average strength.

However in the hands of a knight, it was terrifying.

At the universe master level, it was still useful.

This was a true treasure.

"This is only a conjecture."

"We'll see if he can really use the gold armor." He said softly. "Maybe he cannot use it and has some other hidden things. But, if

he can use it, it also means he has a special way of using armors from the Yan Shen race."

Humanity knew of the way to use the armors long ago.

However...

They couldn't copy it. Other than the Yan Shen race, no other races could use it. Just like back during the first few wars, countless undyings were reduced to nothing, and countless fragments of the soldier and general armors were broken apart and mixed in the remains. The humans later on never discovered these fragments, thinking them as part of the debris.

And as the gold armor wasn't completely destroyed, it was valued and treated as a treasure.

Chapter 830: Decades

After Luo Feng purchased the gold armor from the Treasure hall in Hong alliance city, he had set the delivery to be three days later at the 26th camp.

Naturally rushing over from Yan Ji main continent would require a few months, to even a couple of years. However Luo Feng was very anxious to get the armor. Also, the many deals he had selling the goods of the Na Shi youth were mostly set in the 26th camp too. Hence, he had to rush over.

Using the Star eating plant's god country teleportation, he immediately returned to human territory.

This time he teleported to a close space to Cang Bird star.

After flying in the dark universe for two days, he arrived there and used the space pathway to head to the 26th camp in the 7th battlefield.

...

Within the transportation pathway of the 26th camp.

"New recruits are here."

"Go lead the new recruits."

"Hm, why are there so little this time?" The leader of the new recruits, the white robed undying and his underlings were all shocked to see so few of them. According to the rules, normally only after 100 sector lords were gathered would they send the group. And usually the accompanying domain lords and universe levels would add up to a few thousand at least.

"This time however, there was only over 1,000 of them, about 10 sector lords.

"Weng..." A formless pressure spread out.

"Ah."

The expression of the white robed undying changed. His gaze landing on a silver armored and silver winged youth. The pressure coming from the youth was powerful, it made this undying go pale, "So an emperor has come, no wonder they sent so little this time."

Cang Bird star dared to make the sector lords, domain lords and universe levels wait, but they didn't dare do so to an emperor.

"Lord." The white robed undying welcomed him.

"I know where to go." Luo Feng said, after which he followed the familiar pathways within.

This scene made the undying and his underlings all smile, the group of new recruits blinked...this great being was at least an official too.

******

"My living quarters are the same as before." Luo Feng was given the same villa within. "Looks like no one has taken it since then."

There were two usual practices for the distribution of spaces.

The higher contribution points emperors would be given a place, and as long as no other undying takes it after he leaves, he would be given the same place after.

"Ha, Yang."

A voice resounded.

Luo Feng looked into the distance, about 100km away on a mountain peak, there stood a luxurious villa, a silhouette gazed over.

"Zi Ma." Luo Feng smiled back.

"It hasn't been long since you came last time, why are you back again? Haha, what a pity, Ku Tuo is currently at Star tower." The emperor said from afar, after which he soared through the air and appeared outside Luo Feng's island. This was an other race warrior with three heads, and one was bigger than the other two, "Not

inviting me over?"

"Would I dare? Please come." Luo Feng said.

The island was a personal private space. Without permission, no one was allowed to enter. Within the camp...no one dared break this rule.

"It hasn't been a year since your return last time." Ci Ma said.

"I have some business, hence the quick return." Luo Feng said. He immediately returned to Yan Ji main continent after buying the goods to fight it out with the Na Shi youth. After killing him and getting the second black metal board, he trained for another three months before returning.

Indeed it hadn't been a year.

...

After returning, Luo Feng met up with a few emperor friends and many of them said, "Yang, you were in black armor and wings before, why are they silver now?" Luo Feng immediately replied, "My armor changes color frequently, from black to silver, it may even turn gold soon."

This made many emperors laugh.

...

Back in the camp.

During the first day, Luo Feng swiftly handed large amounts of the goods to the Virtual Universe Company delivery department, sending them towards the emperors he sold them to.

During the second day, the gold armor arrived.

"Sir, these are the goods you ordered." The staff member stood outside the island, "Please confirm your identity...confirmation complete."

"Thanks." Luo Feng received the space ring.

The employee bowed respectfully and left.

Luo Feng used his world energy to enter the ring and easily discovered the one item within...the gold armor! Actually from the moment the employee arrived at the 26th camp, his body's every cell was already jumping from within. Luo Feng knew at that point, that the treasure had arrived!

He knew even without checking.

He was incredibly excited. Even though his guess before had a high chance, without feeling it personally, there was no way to confirm it 100%.

"Such a thrilling feeling."

"My entire body is shaking." Luo Feng's eyes held suppressed excitement. "Five billion mixed elements. Even the silver armor! Just in terms of soul and physical attacks, it can diffuse over 90% of it. This is enough to make an emperor go bankrupt. Even if it was fifty billion, I would still buy it! Much less just 5 for this gold armor!"

"I've struck it big."

"Let's see, the previous two were soldier and general, what would this one be called."

Luo Feng excitedly returned to his quarters and let the golden horned beast within his internal world study the gold armor.

Internal world.

A vast grassland, a huge mountain like golden horned beast lay there. Suddenly he got up quickly. Because it had been training the second volume of the nameless manual all this while, its body constantly crumbled to nothing. Hence, it had long forced the general armor pearl out of its body.

Sou! The over 8m tall golden armor appeared in the air above the grassland.

"Howl." The beast raised its head and howled, looking at the tiny gold armor.

Xiu!

The descending armor seemed to be hit by some strong force, instantly becoming a beam of gold light rushing into the beast's body. After which, it became countless gold threads melding with its every cell, and a peculiar imprint began to form at its chest.

There on the beast's chest, above the scales, the Yan Shen word King appeared before dispersing.

"King." Black clothed Luo Feng stared at the huge scale on the beast's chest. Surprised, he said "It's indeed what I guessed. A higher level than the two armors from before, this should be the King armor!"

"Soldier, General, King, I wonder if there are others that are even stronger."

"Who cares, this king armor alone is placing huge stress on the beast. Let's see if it can trigger the full power of it."

"King armor, gather!" Black clothed Luo Feng stared at the huge beast before it.

"Howl!"

The beast raised its head and howled, gold began to swiftly form throughout its body. The black scales quickly became gold, and in an instant, the entire beast had become a glaring gold, its powerful aura spreading throughout.

"Not enough!"

"The pressure is too huge!" The three bodies all shared one consciousness, black clothed Luo Feng changed his expression.

The beast howled and triggered its blood river energy! It's body strength amplified 12 times!

"Still not enough."

The beast began to shrink, unleashing deities of the world.

Beast god transformation!

Natural ability!

Using everything.

The beast's body kept growing in strength. The pressure form the gold armor was decreased over 99%. Yet it still felt painful and uncomfortable, it was obvious the beast hadn't pushed it to its limit.

"The beast's body is actually unable to fully utilize the King armor?"

...

Later on, Luo Feng forced out the King armor pearl and let the beast continue training in the second volume of the nameless manual.

Simultaneously, he left the camp and took a ship for a few months to return to Yan Ji main continent, beginning his training days.

Studying the laws.

Studying his Moon policy.

And also studying the second volume.

He would occasionally go out to hunt, it was pretty easy on him. As his earth body had the silver armor and silver wings, it made the warriors on Yan Ji continent know...there was a powerful human warrior called Yang with emperor strength. He was fast and intrepid with high emperor strength, and was not to be messed with.

In the blink of an eye, thirty years had passed.

"Haha, I've finally finished the second volume."

"Now I can completely unleash my strength. The beast can

unleash over 10,000 sector lords strength. I don't believe I can't fully utilize the king armor now." Within his internal world, black clothed Luo Feng floated in mid air and stared ahead.

The beast once again melded with the king armor pearl.

Hua!

The completely black golden horned beast shrank and became like a little beast god, instantly becoming its strongest form, and was covered in gold completely.

"I've already successfully pushed it to its limit."

"It truly takes 10,000 sector lords' strength to push the King armor to its limit." The beast howled with joy as it resounded throughout the grassland and skies. This King armor had given the beast a total of 100,000 sector lords' strength!

A human emperor body at pinnacle level could only produce 100,000 sector lords' strength.

This king armor's power was incredibly.

"Haha..."

"I fear no one on Yan Ji main continent anymore!" With such an intrepid body, he was able to completely block 100,000 sector lords' level of power, physical or soul. It meant that any attack from a pinnacle emperor and below was completely blocked. Even an attack stronger than that...would be diffused by over 90%.

In defense, the King armor was much stronger than the general armor.

Chapter 831: Billows in Yan Ji

In the 189th year Luo Feng was in Yan Ji main continent.

Within the edges of the continent, there was a majestic mountain range over a million km high. A silver armored and winged youth was lying on a stone, and beside him was a blood shadow blade. He muttered, "Hope that Night emperor has some good news for me. Hope it doesn't waste my time."

"Sou!" A silhouette appeared beside him.

"He's come." The youth got up.

"Yang, you sure are casual." Night emperor mocked. He was in a dark red armor and he had wings with gold eyes.

"Occasionally."

Luo Feng's eyes were like lightning, giving off a terrifying energy. As a black warrior with a thick mix of the beast god bloodline, he maintained his beast god transformation all the time...along with the pressure the Sha Wu wings gave off, how could it not be terrifying?

"Speak, why have you come to me. And, how come we cannot speak in the virtual universe, but having to come here personally." Luo Feng looked at him.

"Big news, big ... but good news." Night emperor emphasized.

"What news?" Luo Feng was curious.

Over time, he had acquired many emperor friends, of which some were in the main continent with him. The main thing was that his earth body form used the name Yang to interact. Naturally the golden horned beast had several friends too, like Star fantasy emperor. However, the beast made friends mostly with the rare other races, and it only had a total of three friends.

The earth body had many friends, of which he was closest to this

Night emperor!

Night emperor was one of the human races, a pinnacle emperor with the ability to teleport! He was intrepid and brutal, not easily recognizing others. However the moment he did...he was straightforward and easy with them. Luo Feng had sparred with him several times...after he was recognized, the two of them became true friends.

In the words of Night emperor, "Your instantaneous speed is simply too fast. Even though I'm able to teleport, the moment I do, you've already dodged. Unless one is proficient in soul attacks, it's extremely hard to harm you."

...

"We'll speak in your cave." Night emperor was being very cautious.

"So cautious?" Luo Feng smiled, he could feel the atmosphere as he brought Night emperor into the cave.

Within.

The two of them sat down.

"Yang, you should know of some of Yan Ji continent's legends right." Night emperor said. "Let's communicate mentally, just in case there's some warriors with scanners more advanced than ours. Haha...of course on the main continent, it's rare for that to happen. Anyway, we have to be careful."

"Yan Ji continent legends?" Luo Feng was stunned, "You are speaking of...Sacrificial tower?"

"Hm." Night emperor nodded.

The 7th battlefield had many mysterious places.

Like Yan Ji main continent and Star tower and other battle regions, they all had their legends, like the main continent usually had many sacrificial statues about. Even over trillions of years,

they had yet to fully decay, and their energy usage was shocking, making many warriors ponder about the indigenous people of the continent.

"I've heard of some." Luo Feng frowned. "Back then when the 7th battlefield was first opened, I heard that the four pinnacle races swept through the area to forge the battle regions. The indigenous people of the main continent were naturally driven out, and unable to stand up against the four pinnacle races. As it was sudden, only part of them got away, and many others were massacred."

"Yan Ji main continent is most known for its sacrificial towers, and every one of them...is a huge survival base. The indigenous people had many treasures stored within them before taking them along and fleeing."

"However as it was rushed, many didn't manage to get away."

"Some were taken away by the four pinnacle races, while some were left hidden in parts of the continent. I heard that they are mysterious in their construct, that even a knight's god energy cannot detect them. Our scanners cannot detect them at all." Luo Feng said, "Ten towers were discovered so far."

"Have you discovered a tower?" Luo Feng smiled at him.

Night emperor's expression was serious, nodding.

"Damn."

Luo Feng suddenly stood up, staring at Night emperor, "Are you lying to me? Am I truly that lucky?"

"I'm not lying." Night emperor emphasized.

"What's going on?" Luo Feng looked at him, frowning, "We are definitely good friends. However, the Sacrificial towers...they are survival bases from when the indigenous people fled,and they hold a large amount of treasure. That's the amount of an entire race, even though each tower only has a small portion, but it's still a

huge amount to us emperors. Such an amount of treasure, there's no need for you to share."

Every place had its own stories.

Like back on Shattered stars, Yan Ji main continent or Star tower.

They all had their own stories.

Yan Ji continent's Sacrificial towers were renowned, and several top battle regions in the 7th battlefield, like Star tower had even more precious treasures that would make emperors go crazy for. Of course, only one appeared once in awhile. But even so, the probability was still much higher than discovering a Sacrificial tower.

"You are right. Even as friends, there's no need to share." Night emperor smiled, "The reason I'm inviting you is because of your flying and dodging abilities. In a critical time with space lockdown, we can rely on it to escape. After sparring so many times, your flying ability...is truly impressive."

"Ha..." Luo Feng smiled.

"I'll tell you in detail." Night emperor emphasized. "I fought with another race emperor, who had hid within a deep cave. Even though he was weaker than me, he's still a high emperor. That fight...we gave it our all and the ground collapsed, and the space tore apart. He was already heavily injured and was fleeing, then we unexpectedly discovered the tower!"

"It's incredibly mysterious, even the knights cannot break through it or detect it. It's a survival base of the indigenous people of the main continent. Naturally both of us were unable to forcefully keep it in our world rings."

"However, at the entrance lay a body of one of the indigenous people. Both of us discovered a talisman to enter the tower. We immediately fought to acquire it, the main thing was that he had

the advantage as he got there first. Even though I'm stronger, I only got half of it."

"There were a total of six parts to that talisman."

"I got three and he got three."

"According to the items we found on that body, there was an instruction that said one could enter the tower with the talisman. However, the six parts had to be used from six different sides simultaneously to get the treasure within." Night emperor shook his head helplessly. "Since both of us got part of the talisman, we could enter the tower, However, we could only move about in the living areas etc, the treasure areas within had all sorts of security devices. Hence, we need six of us to enter simultaneously! And to activate that door..."

"Night emperor, these six life forms may need to be indigenous people." Luo Feng frowned. "The tower may have set that only indigenous people can enter, and it wouldn't let us other races take the treasure. Even with the six talismans, we may not be able to get it."

"I definitely understand that." Night emperor said. "However... didn't other warriors acquire the treasures from the other towers before?"

"Anyway, the treasure left behind by the indigenous people is within. Even though this is only one tower, it should be akin to at least a knight's wealth. And over countless years, its defenses may have already grown old and weakened." Night emperor said. "Risking it to get such a treasure, I'd definitely do it. Yang, will you go?"

"Danger comes with risk."

Luo Feng smiled, "Of course!"

Luo Feng was pretty confident of his survival ability. Looking at the history, there were others that had gotten the treasures from

sacrificial towers before, why couldn't he do so too?

"Let's go, follow me to look for Piercing tiger emperor." Night emperor said.

"Piercing tiger?" Luo Feng asked curiously, "Let's go."

Shua!

Night emperor held on to Luo Feng and teleported.

...

In another side of the continent, Piercing tiger emperor and his team were stationed around a cave in a mountain. It was normal to see one stay either in a cave or underground.

Within a palace.

Luo Feng, Night emperor and Piercing tiger emperor stood there. Even though Piercing tiger wasn't a human, he was from the human camp. Hence, he was naturally on good terms with the other two.

"Yang, Night emperor, why have you come here?" He asked. "And we have to communicate mentally even without any underlings around, looks like it's something big."

"A huge thing indeed." Night emperor began to repeat the story again and tell him about the Sacrificial tower.

"I'm in!"

He slapped the table, "How could I not go for such a chance? Even after exploring the many secret regions amidst life or death, we may not get such a treasure."

"Good." Night emperor was very excited. "I'm proficient in teleportation, Piercing tiger you are proficient in space lockdown and attack, and Yang is proficient in flying. With the three of us combined, and all of us having plant life forms...we can definitely get the treasure."

"We'll set the distribution of the treasure 2:1:1, how's that?" Night emperor looked at the two, "We'll all work together to get the treasure, I'll have the portion of two while you both get one."

Piercing tiger exchanged glances with Luo Feng.

After which, they both nodded at Night emperor." Good."

"Sweet." Night emperor smiled too.

He was clear that these two were not ordinary people. Piercing tiger had strength on par with him, as for Yang...his flying ability was absolute, and they all had their own trump cards as well. Especially Yang...every time he saw him fly, he would get shocked. This movement was something he created himself, and it displayed his amazing talent on how he must be heavily nurtured by the race. If it was something taught by his teacher, it meant his background was terrifying too.

Chapter 832: Sacrificial Tower

"This is a talisman." Night emperor flipped his hand and produced two triangular crystal like rocks with complex engravings on them. This was somewhat similar to the jadeite of earth.

"Once you send your spirit imprint in, you'll become its master." Night emperor said. "Only with this...can you enter the tower. Otherwise, you cant even get in."

"These engravings are infused with the space laws and water laws. Wow, how mysterious." Piercing Tiger emperor couldn't help but say as he received the talismans and examined them. Luo Feng sent a thread of spirit energy in and immediately placed his spirit imprint, it fused right into his skin.

The spirit imprint was an imprint of the soul, a mark of life.

Piercing Tiger kept his too.

"Alright, let's go." Night emperor said.

Xiu!

The three warriors from the human camp instantly vanished from the cave and appeared deep underground over a trillion km away.

...

Deep underground.

Luo Feng could feel the space warp, and in the blink of an eye, he appeared within a dark cave underground.

"This is..." Luo Feng looked at the huge object stuck in the ground before them. As the mud had covered part of it, he could only see a few hundred meters ahead. The huge construct had a round entrance that was completely shut. Even after trillions of years, it was still perfectly undamaged.

"Babata, scan it." Luo Feng said.

"I cannot detect it, and am only picking up the mud and stones within a 20km area."

"Ah? Even the mini scanner cannot detect it?" Luo Feng was shocked. He had long heard that the towers were undetectable, and even a knight's god energy couldn't detect it. However only after trying did he fully feel its power.

"It's right before me and yet my god energy cannot detect it." Piercing Tiger's voice was booming as it resounded about. "My god energy can only pick up the mud and rocks around, yet I can see it right before me."

"This is the mysterious Sacrificial tower."

Night emperor smiled, "Without being in front of it, even a knight cannot find it. This tower is the survival base the indigenous people used to flee in. Even though it is an important fleeing tool and yet it's so mysterious."

"Corpse!"

Luo Feng saw a corpse in the mud ahead. It was about 2.6 m tall, completely jade like, with 6 arms, bald and giving off terrifying energy. This was the energy of an undying, which was able to withstand trillions of years without any decay...naturally this was an undying.

"Quite some power, this undying energy has some pretty powerful god energy, he should be an emperor." Piercing Tiger walked over and glanced at it.

"It is an emperor." Night emperor looked at the body and smiled. "The tower was managed by six emperors when they were fleeing, they all had one talisman each."

"From the looks of it, he didn't suffer any pain when he died."

Luo Feng carefully examined the body too.

This body had a sense of anxiety, his eyes were wide open, yet he just died like that. It was almost like he experienced a very sudden death.

"He died very quickly. An emperor is very hard to kill, yet when he died, his armor was completely undamaged. It's obvious there wasn't even a battle." Night emperor said. "I think...a large group of knights from the four pinnacle races used their soul attacks and swept the entire main continent when they were forging the battlefield. Hence, all the life on the main continent...was completely annihilated, the six emperors were killed instantly too."

Luo Feng nodded.

...

Night emperor, Piercing Tiger and Luo feng stood outside the entrance.

"We'll wait patiently for the enemy to come." Night emperor said. "They should be here soon."

"Hm."

Luo Feng and Piercing Tiger sat crossed legged there and waited.

After awhile!

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Three figure appeared.

"Night emperor, you sure got here fast." An ear piercing voice resounded. A 3 m tall completely black and gold scaled snake like creature with small eyes appeared. It's silver white lips opened as it let out an ear piercing laughter. "Cackle...These are the two you've got to help you?"

"This brute must be Piercing Tiger emperor."

"Hm, silver armor and wings...never seen before." It glanced at Luo Feng.

"Let me introduce you."

Night emperor's gaze landed on the three warriors from the enemy camp, "I am...Night emperor!"

"I am Piercing Tiger emperor." The powerful booming voice resounded from Piercing Tiger.

"I don't have an emperor title yet, I'm called Yang." Luo Feng looked at the three enemies.

There were three of them...

Luo Feng instantly recognized, that two of them were from the Qi Chang race, and another was from the renowned Gold Cang emperor of Yan ji main continent. He was well known, Luo Feng knew much about it. The other two however...Luo Feng didn't know anything, as he hadn't spent a lot of time on the main continent afterall.

Among the two Qi Chang warriors, one was close to 3m tall and the other was 1.6m.

"We've already introduced ourselves. Ice Blade, what about your side?" Night emperor roared.

"I'm called Ice Blade." The 3m tall Qi Chang warrior laughed weirdly.

"Purple Clock emperor." The 1.6m tall Qi Chang emperor, who seemed skinny spoke. But its voice was even more piercing.

"Gold Cang emperor." This huge beast, which was as tall as Piercing Tiger and had thunder engravings on his face. He stood there and glowed with electricity, his energy...pressured against the human camp. Piercing Tiger however gave off his own terrifying energy, the space seemed to almost fall apart.

There were two camps.

One was the humans, and the other the automaton. Naturally on their side...none of them were automaton race.

"Now that we have introduced each other..." Ice Blade said, "Let's

go."

"Go." Night said too.

Gold Cang went along with Purple Clock and Ice Blade, while Luo Feng and Piercing Tiger went along with Night Emperor.

They all headed towards the entrance. It had been shut for a long time, however as Ice blade touched it, the seemingly solid and sturdy material became like a liquid and flowed, as Ice Blade walked in. Night emperor did the same. As for Luo Feng and the others, as this was the first time they entered, they were extremely cautious.

"How strange."

As Luo Feng touched it, the entrance door automatically flowed away, making him feel as though he was passing through water.

...

The six emperor level strength warriors stood within the huge 1km wide pathway, with the entrance behind them.

"Getting the treasure won't be easy."

Luo Feng looked at the three enemies. "That Ice Blade is a high emperor, his threat level isn't that huge. Gold Cang however is a well renowned warrior of the main continent...he should have the emperor limit strength."

"Yang, Night, this is going to be troublesome." Piercing Tiger communicated, "I didn't expect to meet Gold Cang here."

"Hmph." Night looked at Luo Feng and Piercing Tiger, saying, "That Ice Blade is weaker than me, he knew that without getting someone stronger, he wouldn't be able to get the treasure. According to the information I gathered, that Purple Clock... should be pinnacle emperor. And all of you already know Gold Cang, he is at Emperor limit."

"Emperor limit!"

The three of them felt stressed.

An emperor was sorted according to his strength, normally from low, high and pinnacle!

A low emperor's body normally reached around 10,000 sector lord's strength.

A high emperor reached around 30,000 sector lord's strength.

A pinnacle emperor however reached around 100,000 times the strength.

And 100,000 sector lord's strength...it was a human emperor's highest form. Without a miracle, it was impossible to breakthrough.

However, amongst the emperors, there were those with body amplification techniques, like the Golden horned beast had Deities of the world and Beast god transformation along with Strengthen, allowing its strength to amplify 20 times! True Yan had acquired the God general inheritance before. Naturally there were others that would have received them or had their own amplification techniques.

Body amplification was very hard!

Beast god transformation's first level was only two times.

Deities of the world was very powerful, it was a combination of the beast' swallow technique to amplify. Luo Feng's earth body...he only had the Beast god amplification. Hence he could only amplify its strength by very little,

It was extremely rare to be able to amplify even three to five times.

As for the god inheritance...

They were too rare!

Even knights were fighting for these slots. The Hong Alliance's large amount of warriors were all fighting for them too. To get one

usually meant spending tens of billions of mixed elements and owing many favors. It wasn't something normal emperors could afford.

...

Hence, emperors were normally sorted into low, high and pinnacle.

Only very few had body amplification techniques and soul amplification techniques, or they created their own pinnacle techniques or had some miraculous encounters, allowing them to unleash emperor limit strength.

Above that!

With everything added together, only then can an emperor have the strength of a normal knight, like True Yan.

And Gold Cang belonged to that category!

"Emperor limit is just one level above us. Even though we are weaker, the difference isn't too huge." Night emperor said.

"Hm, leave Gold Cang to me." Piercing Tiger's eyes gleamed with fighting spirit.

Luo Feng looked at him.

Piercing Tiger was renowned for his strength and intrepid powers, he should be able to withstand Gold Cang.

"Actually we have an advantage within this tower, that's Yang." Night looked about. The circular pathway was huge, but it had countless ancient statues about that gave off law energies, "This tower is very mysterious. Its entire structure has god energy everywhere, almost like the space is on lockdown within! This is also the reason I cannot simply teleport into the tower."

Teleportation was very powerful.

One could teleport straight into a ship from outside. If the Sacrificial tower was made from normal material, Night emperor

could teleport into the center easily.

"With the space lockdown, Yang's speed and dodging will become our greatest advantage. Plus Piercing Tiger and I are both emperor pinnacle. Even though that Gold Cang is emperor limit...we aren't too different in levels." Night said.

As they were discussing secretly.

The other group was doing the same.

After a few seconds.

"Let's enter the core region." Ice Blade said.

"Let's go." Night nodded.

Chapter 833: Ancient God Country

Even though they spoke in a friendly manner, both sides were extremely cautious. Since they needed to work together to enter the core area, hence they maintained the truce.

However the moment they entered the core...

With both sides from enemy camps, they would fight it out for the treasure!

"Hehe." Purple Clock emperor gazed at Luo Feng's group, his gaze was sharp like a blade.

Luo Feng looked over coldly too.

Both sides didn't hide their hostility. No one was stupid, there was no need to hide it.

"Corpses."

"So many." Luo Feng and the others walked within the walkway. It was 1km wide and 3km tall, and was winding about the core. Even though the entire height of the tower was tens of thousands of km, the length of this walkway was at least hundreds of thousands of km.

They would occasionally pass halls along the way.

Bodies could be seen throughout.

"All of them are undying bodies, and the bone remains should be sector lord level. As for the domain lord and universe level... anything below, they've long decayed into nothing." Luo Feng saw many bodies along the way. All these dead bodies experienced death at the hands of the four pinnacle races.

The knights of the four pinnacle races may not have discovered the Sacrificial towers.

However they at most hid the indigenous people, it couldn't block against the soul attacks!

With a sweep of the entire continent!

Everyone died!

Even the emperors died instantly, much less the other undyings and the weaker residents.

"Yang." Piercing Tiger communicated.

Luo Feng looked over.

"Have you noticed that all the bodies we've seen don't have any space or world rings or even weapons?" He said.

"Haha..." Luo Feng naturally understood.

"Night emperor and Ice Blade definitely did a good cleanup. They both entered much earlier, other than the core area...they've swept the entire tower of everything else. Six emperors' worth of treasures along with the large number of undyings about...Night emperor probably got a lot from it, it sure makes me itchy."

"Night emperor, how's the collection?" Piercing Tiger was straightforward as he asked.

"I only managed to get three emperor corpses, the indigenous people cannot compare to the humans or pinnacle races, and their emperors were much poorer than normal emperors." He said directly.

"Still complaining about it." Piercing Tiger replied.

...

They chatted mentally while walking. The two teams quickly reached the entrance of the core area.

"This entrance..." Luo Feng looked at the huge six edged star. The six edges were the pathways...each with diameters of 10 m. The pathways glowed with light within. It was almost like membranes surrounding each walkway, it gave off large amounts of terrifying energy.

"According to the information we gathered, the six of us have to head in from all six pathways. We will have to rush past the barriers and place the talismans in there. Only when they are placed in there together will the core area open, the treasure is within there." Night emperor said.

"Right." Ice Blade nodded, "Every pathway has many layers of barriers that normal officials cannot get through. It must be something the indigenous people used to stop their own later generations from rushing in."

"Layers of barriers?"

The Qi Chang race purple clock emperor looked coldly at Ice Blade beside him. Snorting, he said "Ice Blade, are you playing with me? The energy these pathways are giving off isn't weak at all. If it is a special attack, what will happen if we fall?"

"Don't enter if you are afraid." Piercing Tiger snorted coldly.

"Coward." Luo Feng egged him on.

"Ice Blade, the helpers you got sure are cowards." Night emperor mocked.

The human side mocked them.

It made Gold Cang, Ice Blade and Purple Clock frown. Purple Clock shot a glance at the human camp and snorted coldly, not speaking again. However from their glances...it was obvious they argued mentally for awhile.

Luo Feng and the human side communicated secretly too.

"I've already tried several times, relax, I'll lead the way in!" Night emperor said confidently.

"I have the Sha wu wings and general armor...the energy here can't possibly kill me. What's more... it's only the earth body, if something happens, it'll still be under control." Luo Feng was extremely confident.

"Night emperor, we trust you." Piercing Tiger trusted Night emperor too.

After awhile...

After both sides concluded their conversations, they arrived before the entrance. Since they were already here, how could they possibly retreat?

"Enter."

"Enter." Both teams said.

The human side followed a pathway while the other side entered through another.

six pathways...six warriors...

"This water screen is like membrane?" Luo Feng flapped his wings and covered himself, forcefully rushing in.

Chi!

The water membrane was passed through, as it's force was unable to stop Luo Feng's strength.

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

He flew past the many layers. Even though each layer was stronger than the previous one, his earth body had over 10,000 sector lord's strength. Hence, he easily reached the end. There was a wall at the end with a triangular slot in the wall, this seemed to fit the talisman he received before.

Luo Feng floated the talisman and gently placed it in.

"Ding!" The talisman fit in and the engravings around the pathway all lit up, and the space quivered.

Ding! The same sound could be heard from the other pathways.

After awhile, all six pathways shook.

All the engravings within lit up brighter and brighter. This scene made Luo Feng and the others get nervous. Such treasures usually

came with risks, how could one get rewards without any dangers? And everybody knew...that the dangers wouldn't be too great. Hence, they dared to risk it, even so, no one was fully sure.

...

Within the core control room of the tower.

A 3D image floated there. Through this image, one was able to see every portion of the tower. Naturally when Luo Feng and the other just entered the tower, their image was captured as well.

"Other race invasion."

"Other race invasion."

A six arm automaton puppet made of alloy sat in the control room. This was a puppet that resembled the indigenous people, but it was a living AI. Over countless years of looking over the tower, it evolved into a living AI.

It has been countless years, since it discovered an invasion from another race.

Sou! It immediately stood up and stepped through the water membrane beside.

This membrane was the pathway to a god country.

Just like the fixed pathway built within the Black Dragon Mountain empire country, the fixed pathway had a relation to the distance. The further apart the two spaces were, the more resources it took to maintain the pathway. However, the closer it was, the easier it was to maintain it.

Even the undying of the Black Dragon Mountain empire could maintain it, this pathway within the Sacrificial tower...was a very simple thing to create and maintain.

******

The AI appeared within a vast mountain range before a majestic palace. Gazing down from above...he could see the blur of living

quarters, countless Yan Ji indigenous residents stayed within this god country and survived.

"Sou!" A gold robed six arm silhouette appeared, it was an indigenous clansman.

"Master." The AI said respectfully.

"Aren't you in the tower, why have you come here?" The gold robed warrior said.

"Master, the tower has been invaded by other race warriors." The AI replied.

"Invaded?"

His eyes immediately gleamed like two lasers, causing the space around to crackle. After which he laughed loudly, "Sacrificial tower, our race's Sacrificial tower! How long...how long has it been. We've been hiding since forever, secretly surviving...fleeing the moment we got discovered, and struggling at death's door!!!"

"Haha..."

"We've finally been invaded! There are finally intruders!" The warrior laughed loudly.

"Emperors, all gather here. Third brother, bring them here." The warrior instantly boomed throughout the god country.

In a breath's time.

Eleven silhouettes appeared before him. These warriors all had six arms, rock like skin and were bald. They were all obviously from the same race. And the energies they gave off were incredibly powerful...they were all emperor level.

"God master."

"God master." The eleven emperors all looked curiously at the gold robed warrior.

"Why have you summoned us?"

"The Sacrificial tower we took back then, it's finally been invaded by other race warriors." The warrior said.

"Ah."

The eleven emperors all shook with excitement, half of them breaking out with glee and tears.

"How many years, how many years has it been since our race faced extinction...and the knights were made targets by the four pinnacle races. We formed groups of tens of thousands and fled, every team taking the race's inheritance and treasures, hoping to rise again. However the four pinnacle races were too fast. Only very few of our teams actually got away. Our team's six guides were leading the people in when the attack came!" An emperor was filled with tears, his entire body shaking. "We undyings were safe within the core region. Luckily our third small brother was smart. In case of emergency, he left markers about and we teleported via god country here to his god country."

"Who knew...that when we returned to the tower."

"Everyone there was already dead."

"The six guides all died outside. Without the six talismans...we couldn't access the treasures within. Without the items and treasures, even though we have countless people here in the god country, it was hard to nurture warriors."

"No talismans!"

"The core area was completely shut. Even if we teleported into the core region via god country, we couldn't leave it."

"We didn't dare return to Yan Ji main continent."

"Didn't dare."

"We didn't dare gamble. The moment we were discovered, the four pinnacle races would rush over to kill us, and we would face complete extinction."

"It's been too long."

This emperor with shaggy skin had tears streaming down his face, but his eyes gleamed with madness. "Finally, there are finally invaders from other races, they will bring the talismans...and we can finally get them and get our treasure."

"Finally, the chance has come." The gold robed warriors said seriously.

The other emperors all had madness in their eyes.

Chapter 834: The Arrangement

In the ancient era, a huge tragedy fell on the indigenous people of Yan Ji main continent. Back then they were all normal people of the universe, and they didn't even have 10 knights in their race. Against the might of the four pinnacle races forging the battlefield, they were like ants.

The knights knew that they were the main targets, naturally their chances of fleeing were low.

Hence they swiftly distributed their treasures to their people. It was originally distributed to 100 little teams with 9,900 other little teams that acted as decoys. The 10,000 towers had different levels too. These 9,900 teams were used as cannon fodder against the four pinnacle races...using the special energy of the Sacrificial towers to hide the rest from scanners and space ripples etc.

It's material itself was however just average.

Actually...

The 100 inheritance teams had many differences from the 9,900 little teams.

The inheritance teams had six emperors each. But the 9,900 normal teams only had six officials in total!

The treasures within were different too.

The 9,900 teams had little treasures.

The inheritance teams...they were truly treasure troves, they were meant to truly succeed the race eventually.

And obviously...

The tower Luo Feng and the others entered had six emperor guides, and it was one of the 100 inheritance towers!

******

On the mountain peak, the mad winds howled.

The twelve emperors of the survivors exchanged glances, as their eyes were burning with madness.

"Let's go to the tower." The gold robed warrior said.

"Hm." The eleven of them nodded.

The twelve emperors swiftly went through the water membrane...

...

Within the control room of the tower.

The leading gold robed warrior and the other emperors gathered within, and the AI appeared right after.

"Master, look." The AI pointed at the 3d image, "This shows the entire tower, they are following the pathway now."

"Six individuals."

The gold robed warrior stared hard at the six individuals who were clearly projected. Whether it was the gold eyes winged Night emperor, Ice Blade, Gold Cang emperor, Silver winged Luo Feng... they were all clearly shown.

"There are humans and some weak races." The warrior said.

"Completely simulate their energies." A fat emperor standing beside ordered.

Immediately, the six silhouettes were displayed as their original heights and sizes along with their energies.

With the tower's simulation, at least 10% of their energies was emulated. The surviving warriors all looked on, the fat emperor saying softly, "These six...should all be emperor pinnacle, with special items, they may be even stronger."

"What."

"Third brother!"

"Elder!"

The other warriors looked at him. This third brother was the cautious undying back then, teleporting them into his god country. Including the others that were originally in there...that was the only way to keep his people alive. He was the strongest amongst the group, and he hardly ever meddled in affairs. The person usually managing everything was the gold robed warrior.

"Third brother, are you sure?" The gold robed warrior looked at him.

"Yes, I, Qiu Chi Ka, will never be wrong." The fat warrior smiled. "And the six of them...should be from two different camps. Even though they are moving together, they are enemies, we still have a chance."

"Ah."

"Enemies?"

The gold robed warrior and the others continued to observe, swiftly discovering the little traits that allowed them to discern... that the six of them were from two different camps.

"This is our chance." Qiu Chi Ka said, "However, the weak will be useless in this fight."

"Elder."

"Third brother."

It immediately made some of the low emperors shout out.

"Pu Ai is pinnacle emperor, while La Di Mo and Men Bu are high emperor. The three of them including me will make it four. Big brother, you and the other eight should return to the god country." He made the decision. "You won't be of much help, and this fight will be very dangerous. We are unlike the other races with powerful techniques. When we lost our inheritance, we lost a lot of our techniques. The eight of you will still have to lead our race."

"Go back for the future of our race." He gazed at them.

The eight low emperors were reluctant.

"Yes."

"Yes elder."

"For the race."

They finally all followed the elder's orders.

"Elder, god master, you all have to come back."

"You have to survive."

The eight emperors were worried.

"Relax, we will send our true inheritance back to the race." Qiu Chi Ka waved, "Go on."

The eight of them turned around and left via the water membrane.

Only the four strongest and the AI were left in the control room. The indigenous people of Yan Ji continent used to live in their tribes. The main head of the tribe was the god master, while the strongest was the elder. The elder was in charge of leading the tribe while the god master managed it.

Four warriors.

The elder Qiu Chi Ka, god master Pu Ai, La Di Mo and Men Bu. Two pinnacle emperors and two high emperors.

"The enemy will reach the core area soon." The elder pointed at the projection. "The core area has the treasures, everybody knows that it's divided into two treasure rooms and one inheritance room."

"The two treasure rooms have all sorts of expensive materials, weapons and mysterious items."

"The inheritance room is our race's countless years of accumulation of techniques. With them, we will be able to pass on

our techniques to the later generations to produce more warriors." He said. "Our race's twelve emperors...all of them came from the disaster era, and none were produced after. This was mainly due to the lack of techniques to nurture the later generation. After all, the techniques we know...are only a small fraction of the race's entire collection."

"Our first goal!"

"To get the inheritance room, and teleport it to the god country." Qiu Chi Ka said, pointing at the two rooms that were being projected. "These two treasure rooms, one has to be opened by our race people, but we got the treasure within long time ago. The other room however requires one of our race people with a talisman to open."

"Two rooms, one with less treasure than the other."

"According to what I know, the second room has tens of times more treasure than the first!" He said, "The second goal is to open this second treasure room."

"Hm."

The other three nodded.

The three rooms all had different levels of difficulty in opening. Opening the room with the least amount of treasure was something they already knew about. As for the other two, one held treasures while the other held techniques.

"Even though the treasure is valuable, the techniques are more important to the race."

"Hence we have to first use all our strength to get the inheritance room." He ordered. "Don't get tempted by the treasure. They may be useful to you but they have little benefits for nurturing our later generations. Everything...for the race!"

"Understood elder." Men Bu and La Di Mo nodded.

"Understood third brother." The gold robed Pu Ai nodded as well.

"Alright." Qiu Chi Ka nodded. "We have a good chance of getting both the treasure rooms and the inheritance rooms. Afterall they have to be activated by our people."

The others nodded.

"Naturally we cannot fight it out with them. The moment we show ourselves, they will team up against us." He pointed at the first treasure room, the one they had opened in the past. "This first room...is the place where I've planned for them to fight it out."

"Elder, but we've emptied this room." Men bu said curiously.

"We just have to put some things in." He smiled. "The treasure case we got back then is still with me, it's just a box, only its material is valuable. I'll put the three cases that we got in the past in there, the cases will simply be empty. When they discover the cases and are unable to scan it with their god energy, along with some message from the deceased elders..."

"Right, right."

"It would be strange for them not to fight."

"They would definitely think we were all dead and there was no other life in the tower."

Qiu Chi Ka nodded, "It's not that we are smart, it's just that they would never expect for us to have survived. Remember...they don't know we are here, and that's our greatest advantage. Until the final moment, we cannot reveal ourselves. We should go arrange the first treasure room now."

He swiftly left the control room and began his plan.

He returned after awhile.

Within the control room, The four warriors looked at everything happening.

"Six talismans."

"They have it, the core has been activated."

"We have to find a way to get at least one of them. Only that way can we activate the inheritance room and the second treasure room."

...

Ge ge ge...

The six pathways shook simultaneously. After revolving for awhile, pathways opened at each end.

Their paths were all clear.

"Core area." Luo Feng carefully covered himself with the Sha Wu wings and entered, finally stepping through the pathway and landing on the ground.

It was a vast hall.

Gold Cang, Purple Clock and Night emperor were already standing there.

"Yang."

"Yang."

Piercing Tiger landed too. The two of them exchanged glances and walked to Night. Ice Blade, Gold Cang and Purple Clock stood together as well.

"Be careful, we are already in the core region. Even though we had to rely on all six to enter here, now that there's no more need to co-operate...a battle can occur at any time." Night communicated to his group. "Yang, especially you. Your undying body is weakest here, that Gold Cang is extremely strong, he may target you first."

"Understood." Luo Feng nodded.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

The distant Gold Cang, Ice Blade and Purple Clock instantly

became three beams of light and split into two. Gold Cang flew one way alone while the other two took another path, it was obvious they were trying to get to the treasure faster.

Chapter 835: Treasure Room

Gold Cang, Ice Blade and Purple Clock shot out in two different paths, looking along the pathways.

"Gold Cang is the fastest and strongest, I'll follow him." Night communicated, "Piercing Tiger, you and Yang head in the other pathway. We cannot let the other two get the treasure."

"Understood."

"They must be dreaming if they think they can get the treasure." Piercing Tiger mocked. The two of them became beams of light and chased after them, while Night chased after Gold Cang.

Two teams in different pathways!

As the entire tower was covered in complex engravings, it made it so that teleportation couldn't be used within. Hence the two teams could only rely on flying, and at this time, Luo Feng's strength could be unleashed, his silver wings flapped...

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Warping about the pathway, he swiftly accelerated. Piercing Tiger couldn't even keep up.

"Yang, go slow him down first." Piercing Tiger knew that he couldn't keep up with Luo Feng. Afterall Luo Feng wasn't as strong as him, but that wasn't the reason he was invited anyway.

"Relax, leave it to me."

Luo Feng got faster and faster.

These were internal pathways within the tower, and with the core area only stretching several hundreds of thousands of km, wrapping around the tower. It was narrow at certain parts, and the directions kept changing as well. There were spots where one had to completely turn 180 degrees just to follow the path. Luo Feng had to slow down rapidly and stop before turning.

In such a pathway...

Having to slow down immediately after accelerating, they had to do this over and over every few km. An emperor could easily accelerate and speed up, however to stop and start like this, it was tedious. Just like several bending pathways on earth, no matter how good a car one had, he couldn't accelerate and could only decelerate during a turn.

To these warriors travelling close to light speed, bending every few km or hundred km, it was a torture.

"The longest stretch is only a few hundred km. I still have to slow down almost immediately, I cannot go fast at all, only maintaining low speeds for turning." Gold Cang roared, and his eyes were filled with rage.

"Haha, Gold Cang, your speed is shocking. However in such a place, you cannot go fast at all. However, I as a Na Yi human with wings, I'm good at direction changes. Haha." Night emperor caught up from behind.

"Hmph!"

Gold Cang snorted and turned to look at Night emperor.

Rumble!

A thick bolt of lightning shot out from Gold Cang's eyes, the bolt dispersed immediately after shooting out. It seemed almost like countless lightning snakes, forming a huge net that shot at Night emperor who was behind him. The pathway was only that huge, the net completely covered the pathway.

Rumble. Night emperor's eyes flashed coldly, he became a beam of white light and forcefully broke through the net. However, it did affect his speed.

"You want to surpass me? Haha, Night emperor, you keep on dreaming. I will always be ahead of you. As long as there is treasure, I will definitely be the first to get it." Gold Cang mocked

as he turned and flew, occasionally shooting out more nets at Night emperor behind. Night emperor could only helplessly grit his teeth.

...

As the two of them fought on, at the other pathway.

Luo Feng was different, he naturally warped around. Since, all the other warriors couldn't reach their max speeds, naturally Luo Feng couldn't do so either. However he was proficient in changing directions, and this was a huge advantage for him. He easily reached close to ten times the speeds of Purple Clock and Ice Blade.

Ten times, how fast was that?

He instantly caught up.

"You wish to flee?" Luo Feng gazed at the two Qi Chang silhouettes ahead. It was the two emperors.

"He's caught up." Purple Clock turned and got a shock when he saw Luo Feng. "This Yang is extremely fast."

"No problem, his strength is the weakest of the three. He should only be proficient in flying in such confined spaces." Ice Blade said confidently. "Purple Clock, we'll rely on your ability."

"My one attack will knock him back." He said confidently.

Luo Feng was too fast.

He rushed straight beside them and was trying to get ahead!

"Howl..." Purple Clock opened his mouth and the ripples from his peculiar howl rushed into Luo Feng.

The silver armor diffused the ripples of the attack, and the remainder of it hitting the cloud contact armor within. This completely blocked off the attack.

Even though it was blocked, Luo Feng's speed was still affected.

"Hmph."

He flapped his silver wings fiercely and unleashed strike travel.

Hua! He became a beam of silver light and shot through in between the two emperors. He was so fast, that they had no time to react.

"Quick, stop him." Ice Blade said. "Purple Clock, you are most adept at stopping!"

"Bastard."

He gritted his teeth and howled again, immediately visible ripples formed a huge clock in the air. It flew extremely quickly. The speed of the attack naturally exceeded Luo Feng's flying speed. It trapped Luo Feng before shaking violently. "Weng..." It exploded as Luo Feng diffused the attack.

"Damn." Luo Feng shook his body as his speed decreased.

"Human, don't think about getting the treasure! It's mine!" Purple Clock howled.

"Up!"

Luo Feng shook his wings, the Sha Wu wings were indeed incredible.

Even though he was affected by the attack, with a shake, he once again shot forward. The other two emperors had no way to keep up at all.

"Now I know why Night emperor got him in. This human's flying is too peculiar, and his instantaneous speed is shocking. Even in such a pathway he can still go that fast."Ice Blade said.

"Purple Clock, with your little abilities! Haha...keep dreaming about the treasure." Luo Feng said.

He turned sharply at the turns in the pathways and continued.

Purple Clock soon lost sight of Luo Feng, and was even unable to attack him.

"Bastard."

"Chase."

The two gritted their teeth and chased.

...

Within the control room, the four indigenous warriors looked at the two chase scenes.

"They sure are incredible."

"The more intense the battle the better. In fact, it's best if they killed each other." Qiu Chi Ka said coldly as he looked at the projection. "These other races...back then the four pinnacle races forged the battlefields, destroying our home and taking it from us. In the future...we will definitely let them taste the destruction of their race!!!"

"Let them taste the destruction of their race!"

The four emperors gritted their teeth, as hatred was boiling within.

They were still very clear, that this was only a dream for the moment and that they had no way to fulfill it now. Even if their race was completely present, and was countless times stronger than before...a pinnacle race would still easily crush them.

After hunting large amounts of prey, the prey would naturally want revenge.

However if a hunter feared the prey, he wouldn't be a hunter.

The weak are prey to the strong!

The universe had many resources and trillions of races. Which race got more resources...would depend on who was stronger! It was simple as that.

"Two pathways, the four warriors' pathway...is closest to the first treasure room. That silver winged human is the fastest, he's

already reaching the room." Qiu chi Ka said softly.

...

Luo Feng followed the pathway and swiftly examined the large rooms along the way. He could see that they were all empty, completely empty.

"Hm?" He saw a room with an entrance size of 100m, and it was half open.

In it lay an undying body.

"This is a corpse of an indigenous person, he should have fallen from the spirit attack too." Luo Feng slowed down and got more cautious as he approached the different areas.

Glancing in.

There was a translucent platform within and before it lay the body. Luo Feng could sense from the energy that it was a fallen undying. There were three normal book sized silver cases on there too, and his eyes gleamed.

Sou!

He flapped his wings and became an arc, rushing into the room.

The room had an area of 100m. Luo Feng gazed about and ignored the body, as his attention fixed on the 10m wide and long platform, it had a blur of words on it. The language was within humanity's trove of languages.

"Words from the Indigenous people of Yan Ji main continent." Luo Feng had long learnt all the languages.

With his level of consciousness, he could easily learn and use an entire language in a few seconds.

"This is..." Luo Feng read and immediately understood.

The words said.

Our race is facing extinction. Each of these three cases contain a

world ring that holds large amount of treasures to be used for our race to rise up again. The cases' sensors have to be activated by our own people to work, and no other race can activate it.

"What exquisite construction. A G9 metal infused with engravings?" Luo Feng looked at the engravings on each case. "I probably need knight level strength to forcefully break it open. Just the construct alone, should be worth over a billion mixed elements. As to opening it..."

"Who cares, I'll settle it next time."

He smiled and instantly kept the three cases.

"Leave the treasure!" Ice Blade rushed in from outside, gritting his teeth and roaring.

"The treasure is mine!" Purple Clock's eyes were filled with madness.

Even though they didn't see any cases, they saw Luo Feng standing within. It was highly unlikely of him to stop while searching for treasure. Hence there must have been something that made him stop here.

"Gold Cang! Yang got the treasure!" Ice Blade roared.

His undying energy spread out and the howl immediately resounded about. Its speed was shocking, and the pathway Gold Cang picked...did have a meeting point with the one Luo Feng picked.

"Treasure?" Gold Cang's eyes gleamed.

"Yang got the treasure?" Night emperor was happy.

Sou! Sou!

The two of them immediately followed the direction of the howl and swiftly flew.

Chapter 836: Fight!

Within the control room, Qiu Chi Ka and the other warriors watched the scene nervously.

"Go and die, it's best they fight and killed each other." The God master Pu Air said, staring hard at the projection.

"Watch carefully, observe what moves they have." Qiu Chi Ka emphasized. "Even though we are all emperor level, because we've been hiding for so long, we haven't truly fought with other emperors. And these invaders have been fighting for so long...we have to observe and gain experience by knowing their trump cards. We need to acquire the inheritance and treasure room. Just relying on plans wont be enough, we have to rely on strength."

"Yes elder."

"Hm."

The other three nodded.

They were already prepared to fight to the death. This battle would determine the growth of their entire race.

******

Within the first treasure room.

Luo Feng kept the three cases he just got. Ice Blade and Purple Clock rushed in madly.

"This is part of an entire race's treasure, it's definitely worth much more than normal emperors." Purple Clock communicated, "Ice Blade, even if we have to burn part of our undying bodies, we have to get the treasure!"

"I know." Ice Blade's eyes were like little venomous snake eyes.

Among the two of them, Ice Blade was huge while Purple clock was small and skinny. In terms of strength, Purple Clock was pinnacle emperor while Ice Blade was only high emperor.

While the two of them communicated, their speed didn't slow down at all, as they rushed into the room.

"Hm?" Luo Feng turned to look at the two Qi Chang warriors rush in.

"Hmph."

Luo Feng flipped his hand and a blood shadow blade appeared. At the same time, the silver wings on his back began to flap.

"Cloud contact vine, help stop them." Luo Feng ordered.

Thin vines sprouted out from his arms. As they shot out, they began to swell rapidly, splitting into large amounts of vines and leaves, rushing like a tsunami at the two emperors.

Even though the cloud contact vine was only pinnacle official level, in terms of sturdiness and regeneration strength, its strength was akin to a low emperor human. Maybe the difference compared to a pinnacle Purple Clock and high Ice Blade was still huge, however simply slowing down and stopping...was something it could still do easily.

"Blood cloud!" Purple cloud howled.

Hua!

Two bloody flowers shot out from his waist portion, extending and swiftly swelling. The huge flowers were like the ceiling itself, blocking the large number of vines. The vines tried to extend through the flowers, however the edges of the flowers were filled with sharp thorns. They began to madly bite at the cloud contact vine. In terms of attacking, the cloud contact vine was obviously weaker, it madly wrapped around its enemy.

The two fought on, and were evenly matched.

"It's rare for normal undyings and even officials to have a plant life form. It's only common amongst emperors. However they normally only manage to grow them to pinnacle general level or

low official." Luo Feng frowned at the scene, "I didn't expect Purple Clock to have a pinnacle official Blood demon flower."

"Don't think of escaping." Purple Clock twisted his ugly face into a malevolent smile.

"Hmph" Luo Feng flapped and became a blur beam of light, wanting to escape through the 100m wide entrance. It was troublesome to be trapped in this small room. The moment he got out however, it would be much easier.

"Cackle..." an ear piercing laughter resounded as a huge blade slashed at Luo Feng.

"Break!"

A glaring silver light tore through the space like a stream, dispersing the huge blade slash, causing the space around to break apart like glass. However, it quickly recovered. Luo Feng's speed was affected even though he dispersed the enemy attack. At this time, a voice resounded from behind. "Yang, I'm here to help you!"

"Piercing Tiger!" Luo Feng was happy within.

It was indeed hard for him to escape from the room. But, with Piercing Tiger here, he naturally could fight it out or find a chance to escape.

"Ah!"

"Piercing Tiger!" An ear piercing howl resounded from the room. The small and skinny Purple Clock turned, and his expression was malevolent. Three fiery clocks appeared before him, each causing the space to crumble about it. After which they all flew towards Piercing Tiger wielding two huge axes.

"Hahaha..." Piercing Tiger laughed madly.

"Split!!!"

He used his left axe to protect himself, as his right axe slashed downwards. This slash...caused the land and skies to split apart.

The terrifying force caused the space around to go into disarray. Purple Clock gritted his teeth and used his fire clocks to block the axe slashing at the Blood demon flower.

Rumble...The axe clashed with the clocks.

The force of the clash caused the engravings about the tower to flash, later on they took the brunt of the attack, leaving the tower undamaged.

"Ice Blade, you and Blood cloud attack the human together! I'll stop Piercing Tiger!" Purple Clock howled. "Wait, once Gold Cang comes, we'll win for sure. We don't need to defeat them, just block the entrance and not let them out, we'll definitely win!"

"Leave it to me." Ice Blade howled.

...

Purple clock and Piercing Tiger fought outside the entrance, while Luo Feng and Ice Blade fought within. Luo Feng rushed over and over. Even though he could suppress Ice Blade, with Ice Blade bravely stopping him, along with the Blood demon flower's help... Luo Feng couldn't escape.

"Gold Cang!" Purple Clock who was getting fatigued saw a beam of lightning shooting over, and was extremely happy.

That lightning bolt was Gold Cang!

He flashed!

Gold Cang had arrived!

"Get out of the way!" He howled. It resounded directly within Piercing Tiger's mind. The formless soul attack was like a powerful bolt, attacking madly within his mind destroying the spirit imprints within his undying body. Even though Gold Cang was proficient in body amplification, not soul.

His soul attacks were still quite powerful.

"Ah..." Piercing Tiger felt his soul shake as he stammered.

Rumble!

Gold Cang's huge foot violently smashed into Piercing Tiger's head, crushing him in. Piercing Tiger was knocked hard into a distant wall. The walls shook a little, and the engravings flashed.

"Make way." Gold Cang communicated.

"Understood." Purple Clock communicated via soul directly to the Blood demon flower, "Blood cloud, let Gold Cang through."

Hua!

The entrance which was heavily clogged with the flower swiftly formed a pathway and Gold Cang rushed in.

...

Within the room.

The blood demon flower and the cloud contact vine had both almost taken up the entire room, causing it to become a world of plants and flowers.

"Human!" Gold Cang rushed in straight at Luo Feng.

"Die!!!"

A long ancient thunder pike appeared in Gold Cang's hands. It flashed as Gold Cang roared, and his body shrank by one size. However, gold light surrounded his entire body, was almost like a gold metal.

This scene terrified Luo Feng, "Body amplification technique!"

Body amplification techniques would cause changes to the body, Gold Cang had unleashed his move.

Xiu!

Gold Cang roared and waved his pike, and all the power was concentrated at the tip. Within the small confined space, it moved at close to light speed. Luo Feng had no time to dodge, he could only wrap his body in his wings as Gold Cang unleashed his

technique, using the wings to protect himself.

Chi!" The thunder pike clashed with his wings.

Luo Feng was knocked backwards, as the thunder pike continued on hit the wall. Accurately speaking the pike didn't pierce through the wings, however the force was strong enough to stick Luo Feng against the wall.

"What." Gold Cang was extremely shocked, "I didn't destroy his body?"

Even though he knew it was extremely hard to kill an emperor, this human Yang was only high emperor. With his full strength, even if he didn't kill him, he should have destroyed his body.

"Yang! I'll stop Gold Cang!" Night emperor rushed over in a blur.

Piercing Tiger was fighting with Purple clock.

"Night emperor!!!"

Gold Cang turned, his eyes flashing and raging at Night emperor. Even though Luo Feng had blocked his attack, Gold Cang was still clear that he biggest threat in the human team was Night emperor, followed by Piercing Tiger. They were both pinnacle emperors afterall.

The smallest threat was Yang.

"Ice Blade, stop Piercing Tiger." Gold Cang immediately ordered. "Purple Clock, even if you have to burn your undying body, we have to get the treasure. Leave Night to me!"

"Ok." Purple Clock gritted his teeth and instantly rushed into the room.

Ice Blade rushed to block Piercing Tiger.

As for Gold Cang...

He waved one hand, the thunder pike landed in his hand as his cold gaze landed on Night emperor. His body glowed with green

light with the body amplification technique, the formless pressure he gave off...made Night emperor shudder, he had to be careful.

"Burn my undying body to get the treasure?" Purple Clock gritted his teeth, as his eyes were filled with madness.

Luo Feng wielded his blood shadow blade...looking at Purple Clock.

At this critical point of the battle, burning one's undying body was the solution.

"Looks like, to get the treasure, everyone will have to burn their undying bodies." Luo Feng thought. "But...I don't have an undying body."

"Hand the treasure over! Or...die!"

Purple Clock's eyes were filled with madness.

Rumble!

Three fire clocks revolved. They were almost like small stars burning intensely and rushing at Luo Feng.

Chapter 837: Going all out

Three fire clocks burned the space about into stream particles. They revolved and formed a huge fireball which rushed towards Luo Feng, even controlling the space around and forcing Luo Feng into a corner, making it difficult for him to even move. The incredibly hot fireball rushed over...

"Hmph, controlling space?" Luo Feng flapped his wings and the wings easily tore through the suppressed space, unleashing strike travel.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

He Left behind three visible warps, making the fire clocks hit nothing but the wall, causing the engravings to once again shine and leave the walls undamaged again.

"What terrifying speed!" Purple clock's eyes were filled with shock and rage. Even though he knew that this human was proficient in speed, to dodge in such a confined space...left him baffled.

A spirit weapon attack was actually dodged?

Of course, the combined attack of his three fire clocks became much slower together. However, at such close distance, even normal emperors wouldn't have been able to dodge at all.

"Purple clock, don't waste time!" Gold Cang roared within.

"Bastard, leaving me the troublesome one to deal with."

He cursed within, after which his eyes gleamed as he looked at Luo Feng, roaring, "Human, go and die."

"Howl..."

Purple clock raged as terrifying undying energy erupted from within his body, causing Gold Cang and Night emperor to change their expressions. "Burning his undying body?"

"Good!" Ice Blade's eyes gleamed as he engaged Piercing Tiger.

"Haha..." Gold Cang couldn't help but laugh.

"Burning his undying body? Yang is going to be in trouble!" Piercing Tiger was shocked. "Yang, be careful!"

...

It wasn't just them who noticed what happened. In the core of the control room, the group of indigenous warriors held their breaths and watched as well. They then muttered, "Die, die, hurry and die." In their eyes, these invaders were better off killing each other.

Within the treasure room.

Purple Clock burned his undying body and his energy grew even stronger than Gold Cang's.

"Break!!!"

He looked coldly at Luo Feng, putting part of his burning undying energy into the three fire clocks, making them form three fireballs. Even though they seemed like normal fireballs...every one of them was much more terrifying than a star. They could easily pierce through a star like an iron needle through tofu.

Luo Feng could currently treat stars as playthings. However against these three fireballs...he could only rely on his wings and the general armor to defend him.

They were lightning fast, forming together and attacking. Luo Feng knew...

"I cannot dodge, I can only defend!"

As the three clocks had to revolve to form one fireball before, it was much slower. This time they rushed together! And infused with burning undying energy...their power was over 1,000 times stronger! How fast was it?

Luo Feng could only hide behind his wings and cover himself.

Rumble!

Rumble!

Rumble!

The first clock hit Luo Feng's wings and knocked him back into the wall, the terrifying force caused the entire room to shake. The engravings madly shining as the tower began to shake. It was using it's entire construct to diffuse the attack.

The second clock hit! And then the third clock!

Luo Feng was pinned against the wall!

"Rumble..." Te space around the room instantly crumbled into stream particles. Amidst the mad explosions, the engravings shined madly, trying to diffuse the attack. Gradually...the space recovered and peace followed.

"This..." Ice Blade stared wide eyed, his ugly face was warped.

"Wa!" Piercing Tiger opened his mouth wide.

Night emperor couldn't even speak, his eyes filled with surprise and joy.

"How can this be..." Gold Cang stopped his attack against Night and stared at the scene.

"I, I, I..." Purple Clock's expression was complex, shocked and in disbelief.

Against the wall of the room.

Luo Feng gradually slid down and stood back up, smiling at Purple Clock before him.

"I actually didn't destroy him? I burned 3% of my body and he didn't explode?" He was stunned. Burning the undying body was akin to burning one's soul. If he burned 50% of his undying body, that would mean losing half his soul, and his strength wouldn't even be 10% of what it was before!

And burning too much would cause one to lose too much of his soul, and would be unable to maintain a complete consciousness, falling into slumber.

A god's slumber...he would gradually recover his soul in that state. This process took an extremely long time, pass trillions of years, or maybe never even waking up.

Hence normally they would only burn 5% of their bodies! Recovering this much wasn't too hard.

Imbuing the attack with that much energy, like how he did with his three fire clocks...3% of his undying energy was enough, unless one truly simply decided to self destruct. Self destruction had an absolute power and superior advantage, and it would reduce their enemies to nothing!

Purple Clock thought...

Burning 3% of his undying body would at least destroy 10-20% of his opponent's undying body, that was normal.

However...

Luo Feng's wings weren't even scratched!!!

"Good!" Piercing Tiger roared excitedly.

"Yang, your survival ability sure is incredibly. Do you have a pinnacle emperor plant protecting you? Or pinnacle emperor metal life form?" Night communicated surprised, as those were the highest probabilities.

The plant and metal life forms naturally have advantages in their physical states.

If one had a pinnacle plant life form...its body will far exceed an emperor pinnacle human. Also, its regenerative abilities could definitely withstand that attack.

"Haha..." Luo Feng laughed.

Night and Piercing Tiger didn't ask more.

Who didn't have their own trump cards?

Yang's trump cards were probably related to survival and fleeing, only it was at a simply absurd level.

"Haha, the treasure is ours." Night emperor communicated excitedly. "Hurry and escape from the room, we will escape later on! After we get out, we will teleport and distribute the treasure."

"Right, let's go." Piercing tiger said too.

...

The battle scene had changed.

Before, Gold Cang, Purple Clock and Ice Blade had the advantage, they had planned for Purple Clock to destroy Luo Feng's body. Once it was destroyed, his weapons and world ring and so on will be thrown around. Naturally they could take the chance to get the world ring at that time. The world ring...was after all just a storage world.

They would have their own ways to get the treasure within. However now...

"Gold Cang, I cannot deal with him." Purple Clock communicated.

"Gold Cang, what do we do?" Ice Blade said nervously.

"I didn't expect this little human who seemed the weakest to have such a move. He definitely has treasures that aren't proficient in attack or some metal or plant life form." Gold Cang's eyes raged. "Purple Clock, Ice Blade, you two are useless, completely useless. I'll have to go all out now!"

The two seemed enraged.

"When we get the treasure, I get 70%. Purple Clock you get 20% and Ice Blade you only get 10%!" Gold Cang communicated. "Otherwise I lose too much."

"Ok."

"No problem."

Ice Blade and Purple Clock weren't stupid, they knew that with Yang's defense, only Gold Cang could actually destroy his body while burning his undying body. The cost of this emperor limit burning his undying body, just how high was that? Getting 70% was indeed natural.

"Then watch me!" Gold Cang's eyes gleamed with lightning flashing within.

******

It may seem slow, but in truth after Purple Clock's attack against Luo Feng failed, only a few seconds had passed before Gold Cang went all out!

"Ya!"

Green light began to shine from Gold Cang's entire body!

Rumble!

Terrifying energy filled the room. It shook the walls and the engravings flashed. This scene made Luo Feng, Night, Ice Blade and the others all shocked.

"Not good, Gold Cang is going all out."

"He's burning his undying body."

"Flee!"

Everybody, including Luo Feng was shocked.

Gold Cang was a emperor limit warrior. With his body amplification technique, he could unleash up to a million sector lords' strength. If he self destructed, it would be even more terrifying than Luo Feng's million king bug army combined attack! Even if it was only burning a small part of his undying body...it was incredibly terrifying!

However once one reaches his level, the cost of burning any bit of

the undying body was huge. Unless one was forced into a corner, they would never do so.

"Flee!"

"Flee!"

"Flee!" Luo Feng and the others panicked, as no one dared to take on Gold Cang in this state.

"Howl..." Gold Cang let out a roar, easily reaching the closest Night emperor beside.

"So fast!" Night couldn't even dodge.

Rumble!

A lightning infused large palm smacked Night emperor's head, with a rumble...Night emperor was immediately reduced to ashes...

Chapter 838: Situation

The winged human Night emperor who was reduced to ashes had incredibly weak amount of energy left. The scene made Luo Feng, who was about to flee the room shocked. From his energy level... Gold Cang had actually instantly made Night emperor lose half his undying body!

50%!

Losing half his soul made it so that Night emperor could only unleash 10% of his strength from before, the soul was very important.

"Gold Cang, don't force me!" Night emperor's eyes were filled with madness as he reformed, staring hard at Gold Cang.

Gold Cang was incredibly intrepid now.

Even if Night emperor burned his undying body, he still couldn't escape. He could only hope for Gold Cang to spar him.

"If forced, I'll..." Night stared at Gold Cang.

"Self destruct? Haha, do you think that if you do so, I'll be afraid? My undying body won't be hurt even a little from it! Haha, I've already destroyed half of your undying body, and destroying the other half will kill you. So, why should I let you off? Just die!" Gold Cang didn't show any mercy.

"Remember...remember...I will return to take revenge!" Night emperor roared.

"Explode! Explode! Explode!"

Night emperor howled.

Self destructing with only 50% of his undying body left...that was the result of Gold Cang's undying energy destroying Night emperor's other half. Hence his explosion wouldn't be too huge.

At this time, Gold Cang could take the blow alone, but who would

be that stupid?

Gold Cang chose to retreat!

Rumble...A pinnacle emperor's self destruct, it was so powerful it made everyone else, such as Purple Clock, Ice Blade, Piercing Tiger and Luo Feng shocked.

Pinnacle emperor self destruct was akin to a million sector lord king bugs attacking together!

This was able to kill a high emperor! Heavily injure a pinnacle emperor! Or even cause the pinnacle emperor to fall because of it, but of course that required luck...

Even though...

Night emperor only had 50% of his undying body left, it was still half of a pinnacle emperor's explosion. Unlike Gold Cang's attack that destroyed him, this was an explosion that rippled in all directions. There was no way to control the direction of attack. Self destructing meant the death of a god, his energy would ripple in all directions!

"No!!!" Ice Blade, who was engaged with Piercing Tiger changed his expression, "Gold Cang, you caused this!!!"

Ice Blade fled in fear.

"Rumble..." The powerful force instantly acted on his body. The high emperor Ice Blade was instantly reduced to ashes, and his ashes were further destroyed.

"Night emperor, you are dragging me along with you!" Piercing Tiger rushed into the room in shock.

Rumble!

The force rushed over Piercing Tiger like a torrent of water. His armor gleamed before his entire body exploded, after which he reformed.

Rumble! The force rippled through Purple Clock's body. He

gritted his teeth and a membrane flashed throughout his body, withstanding the attack for awhile before his body became powder too, after which he reformed back.

Rumble! Luo Feng wrapped himself in his wings and withstood the attack!

...

Gold Cang, Purple clock, Ice blade, Piercing Tiger and Luo Feng all withstood the force of Night emperor's explosion. Some were undamaged, some hurt while one fell!

Not just the five of them.

Even the Sacrificial tower wasn't as stable as before against the force of a pinnacle emperor's explosion. The walls within the pathway and room glowed madly from the force before breaking apart and crumbling as the ripples spread about.

Every wall gleamed for awhile before falling apart, however with each layer of wall it broke through, the power slowly diminished too.

With a diameter of 60km, a circular crater was formed as everything was reduced to nothing!

The tower itself was made of F grade metals. This was a special weapon, and just like how many weapons could become big or small, this tower could do so as well. However, it was closer to a God base or Star fortress level of weapon, but it's internal defense wasn't the same throughout.

The inheritance room and second treasure room, these two important rooms had higher defenses.

The walls outside the core region were incredibly strong as well.

Although there were many walls within, they were weaker. Even with the help of the mysterious engravings...Night emperor's explosion still destroyed an area of 60km in diameter.

******

Silence.

Within the tower, there was silence.

Luo Feng and Piercing Tiger exchanged glances, communicating.

"Night emperor actually made me lose 6% of my undying body, what a waste." Piercing Tiger communicated, "However Yang, we are in trouble. Night emperor's death is a big loss to our strength. Even though they've lost Ice Blade too...he was only a high emperor. There is not much of an effect on the remaining two."

"What a pity for Night emperor." Luo Feng replied.

"What's there to pity, isn't he a human? You humans...value each and every emperor. Even if they fall, they will be revived after reversing space and time in the future." Piercing Tiger said. "It's a pity that I don't have that kind of luck. Even though I am a member of the Hong alliance too, for me to get that kind of chance...I have to earn more contribution points to raise my position."

Luo Feng was shocked.

A universe master had unbelievable power, and they could reverse time and space to a point before the target hadn't died... reviving a warrior. Humanity had several beings that could do so, like the founder of the Huge Axe Dojo, the Primal Chaos city leader, Long Yan master, Void gold master...

They would, in a certain point in time, revive a large amount of warriors together!

Those revived were either very strong or had great contributions or were disciples of important people etc...

However...

It did have its price.

The universe masters paid very little for reviving someone like

Night emperor. However, the small price was only to beings like them. They couldn't possible swallow the costs, these had to be returned eventually by the warriors who were revived. They either had to fight for humanity or get treasures to give to humanity.

"Poor Night emperor. Even if he is revived, he'll have to fight for humanity for a very long time." Luo Feng thought. "However, it's already lucky that he has such a chance. As for the other races... some races didn't even have a being like a universe master. Even if they join the Hong alliance...the requirement just to be considered for revival far exceeded that of the humans."

No one wanted to fall!

The stronger one got, the higher the price of revival would be.

The Primal Chaos city leader had said himself that reviving a knight would make him receive a backlash from the universe laws that could damage even him.

If he revived a being like Xi Luo Duo or the Tian Shi palace leader, he may even fall from the backlash! One had to know that the city leader's power far exceeded Xi Luo Duo and the others. But he could fall from reviving them...it was clear that the backlash was terrifying.

Night emperor would be revived sometime in the future!

The price he would have to pay could only be imagined.

...

"Gold Cang, that Night emperor was about to flee, why did you force him?" Purple Clock was enraged. "Even Ice Blade has fallen!" Ice Blade was from the Qi Cang race too. Even as a fellow clansmen, Purple Clock didn't respect him too much. But, they had explored together and were of the same race, hence they trusted each other.

"I got hurt from his explosion too." Purple Clock raged. "And humanity is one of the four pinnacle races. Some universe master

being will eventually revive him."

"Shut up." Gold Cang cursed, "That will take countless years to happen. Even if he is revived, he still won't be my match. I only know that I can get his wealth from killing him."

With a wave of his hand, he kept the world rings and items from Night emperor and Ice Blade.

"Don't let the other humans escape." Gold Cang roared.

Xiu!

Luo Feng flapped his wings in the distance and unleashed strike travel, swiftly accelerating and disappearing down the pathway.

"You can't escape!" Gold Cang chased behind.

"Hmph." Purple Clock chased behind too.

Piercing Tiger stood amidst the waste and watched the scene, smiling coldly, "Everybody is going mad for this treasure. They are burning their undying bodies or falling. That Gold Cang's strength is something I should avoid. Even if I attack him, I will die." He flew down another pathway swiftly.

******

Within the control room.

The elder Qiu Chi Ka, the god master Pu Ai, Men Bu, La Di Mo, the four indigenous warriors stared at the projection.

When they saw Night emperor's explosion damaging the other warriors and killing Ice Blade, they all revealed a look of happiness and shock. "Look, the talisman."

"That's the talisman."

Night and Ice Blade's death made the originally melded into their bodies talismans fall to the ground.

"Go, hurry and go. You invaders, leave the talismans." The elder hoped. But, no one would have expected Gold Cang to wave his

hand and keep all the items that fell from their deaths.

This made Qiu Chi Ka and the others change their expressions.

"They are heading out of the tower!"

"But the talismans are still with them." The god master Pu Ai said urgently. "Third brother, the moment they leave and teleport, we will never be able to open the inheritance room."

The elder gritted his teeth and roared, "Listen to my order."

Pu Ai, Men Bu and La Di Mo's eyes gleamed, listening to the order from their elder, they knew that it was time to move!

Chapter 839: Qiu Chi Ka Shows Himself

When Qiu Chi Ka and the other indigenous warriors began to move, Luo Feng, Gold Cang and Purple Clock were in a frantic state.

"Flee, flee, flee!" Luo Feng flapped his wings, warping like a demon through the pathways.

"This Gold Cang is too strong!"

"This is a emperor limit strength, which far exceeds a pinnacle emperor's strength. Even Night's self destruction did no damage to him." Luo Feng was panicking within. "Even my combined attack from my bug army cannot harm him. If I fight it out with him, he may burn some undying energy and kill my earth body. The moment the earth body falls, that would be troublesome. The pathways are too narrow, the Golden horned beast cannot fight here at all!"

The beast was much stronger than the human body, however the tower wasn't suitable for it.

"Human, don't flee, just give up." Gold Cang howled and chase behind.

Rumble!

Rumble!

From time to time, bolts of lightning burst out of his eyes. These lightning bolts naturally exceeded Luo Feng's speed, instantly forming countless lightning snakes that acted as a net, bound by countless strings. It greatly affected Luo Feng's speed. Right after breaking free, the second net had already reached.

Lightning bolts connected and formed a net over and over...

It made it extremely hard for Luo Feng!

"If it weren't for this pathway, I would have long gotten far away,

and his lightning wouldn't even be able to touch me." Luo Feng flapped his wings and fled.

"You can really run." Gold Cang shouted from behind.

He slowed down Luo Feng over and over, yet he could only shorten their distance a little at a time. This made him feel disappointed with himself.

...

The two of them continued as Purple Clock chased from behind too.

"Gold Cang sure is brutal, using Night emperor to kill Ice Blade." Purple Clock's eyes gleamed coldly. "We are all from the automaton camp, and we cannot kill each other. The moment we do so it would be broadcasted in the virtual world, and we will be hunted down from the camp, unable to escape."

"Hence..."

"He wouldn't dare attack personally, but he still wants to get the treasure for himself."

"Now that Ice Blade is gone, in truth he used someone else to kill him." Purple Clock cursed. "Hmph, no matter, he simply used someone else, he wouldn't dare attack his own camp ally. And I'm not Ice Blade. Even if Piercing Tiger self destructs, I won't fall."

"Gold Cang, you want the treasure all to yourself? Hmph..." Many ideas flashed within his mind.

Being from the same camp didn't mean they were on good terms. Because of the rules, they didn't kill each other. Going against the rules...not only would the automaton race send powerful warriors, even Gold Cang's own clansman would send their own.

******

Luo Feng, Gold Cang and Purple Clock flew along the pathways, with ideas of their own.

"Ahead is the core area exit." Luo Feng fled with all his strength.

Shua!

With a flash, he arrived before the exit. The six pathways remained activated, however what stunned Luo Feng was that a purple armored six armed undying floated before the exit. He gave off god energy ripples and blocked off the exits.

"Yan Ji indigenous race?" Luo Feng was shocked at his appearance, but he couldn't care less at this moment.

"Make way!" He roared and was about to rush forward.

"Hua la!"

The six armed undying's arms grew thicker and thicker. It blocked off the six pathways as Luo Feng rushed towards one. Each arm was incredibly powerful, after growing in size, it slapped and knocked back Luo Feng.

"Haha, Yan Ji indigenous resident? I must thank you." Gold Cang caught up and communicated.

Sou!

Purple Clock appeared too.

Luo Feng, Gold Cang and Purple Clock stood there. That Yan Ji warrior blocked up all six pathways, and he was at pinnacle emperor strength. Luo Feng may have the advantage in speed, but to forcefully break through...the strength difference was too much.

"Yang, who is this?" A beam of light flew over. It was Piercing Tiger who flew from another pathway. After landing he was shocked too, "Indigenous?"

The group all exchanged glances, after which they looked at the warrior.

"This indigenous punk, after escaping back then, he actually dares show himself?" Gold Cang roared. The warriors there all

knew that they could easily report to their camps about any spotting of these warriors, however there was no forced regulation about reporting or killing them...

These had never been a responsibility for the warriors.

And the warriors didn't want to draw attention to the treasure in the tower either.

"Attention other race enemies." The warrior floating there seemed a little chubby, and his smile was terrifying, "I really wish for you to die, but since you were all about to leave the tower, I had to show myself. Let me introduce myself, I am the survivor of the Yan Ji race Qiu Chi Ka. Back then I was a normal undying when my race faced extinction. However, countless years have passed and I've been incredibly lonely, but I also grew in strength."

"You've been here all this while?"

Gold Cang, Purple Clock, Piercing Tiger and Luo Feng were shocked.

"Right, I've been in here observing your every move." Qiu Chi Ka smiled. His smile however was peculiar and terrifying, "I had planned initially...for you to kill each other more. Those of you belonging to other races, you destroyed my race back then. Hence, its better for you all to die."

"But I really need the talismans."

"I didn't expect you to actually keep both the fallen warriors." Qiu Chi Ka pointed at Gold Cang.

Gold Cang frowned, this warrior actually knew that he had kept the talismans. Looks like he truly had been observing the entire tower.

"Why do you need the talismans?" He roared.

"You said... your plan..." Luo Feng frowned, "That treasure room..."

The others were shocked when they heard.

"Smart." Qiu Chi Ka complimented, "There's at least one smart fellow amongst you all, haha, I've been here all this while, and that room had always been open. If there were any treasure, it would have been long gone. Those three treasure chests...are empty chests. Since you are all unable to scan them, I used them to bait you all into killing each other."

"What!"

"Empty chests?"

"Night emperor and Ice Blade fell for empty chests?" Piercing Tiger roared, as the others remained shocked.

Everybody had risked it all for those chests, and the emperors had all lost part of their undying bodies for them.

"Human." Qiu Chi Ka looked at Luo Feng. "When you acquired the chests, you should have seen the words on it. It clearly states that only a person of my race can open it. Naturally, I opened them a long time ago and left the chests there as part of my plan."

"There were those words." Luo Feng and Purple Clock frowned.

"Purple Clock, you saw the words too?" Gold Cang asked. Purple clock replied, "Yes, indeed. And when we found that room, it was already open. Also, this warrior seems to know our every move, he's obviously been watching us. He definitely knew of the room before, he probably took the treasure long ago."

"Hm." Gold Cang acknowledged this point.

"If you don't believe, you can hand me one chest and I can open it for you." Qiu Chi Ka smiled as he said.

"Yang, take out one chest." Gold Cang looked at Luo Feng.

"Take it out." Purple Clock said.

Luo Feng frowned but still retrieved one chest. There were complex engravings all around the chest. Since one couldn't

forcefully open it, Luo Feng tossed it over.

When Qiu Chi Ka received it, he rubbed his hand along the sides and with an easy click, opened the chest.

The emperor's all stared hard.

The chest was completely empty.

"Empty chests." Gold Cang was enraged, roaring, "Bastard." He had burnt part of his undying body for this. Even though the material of the case was worth some money too, he didn't care for such petty wealth.

What he wanted...

Was the treasure from the fleeing race of Yan Ji back then!

"Haha..." Qiu Chi Ka laughed, "If you all weren't fleeing so fast, I wouldn't even have shown myself. The more you killed each other, the better it would have been."

"So why have you shown yourself now?" Gold Cang asked.

The others stared at Qiu Chi Ka.

Qiu Chi Ka's expression suddenly grew demonic as he stared at them. "You other race punks, if it weren't for the true treasure of the tower, I wouldn't even care about you."

"True treasure?" Luo Feng was shocked.

The others were stunned too.

"Haha...you don't think that a room that a pinnacle emperor's self destruct can destroy will hold the real treasure?" He mocked, "Why would you think...that I, having gotten the treasure before, would risk my life here to waste my time with you?"

"Right." They all agreed.

Would an inheritance treasure room be that weak?

"The treasure is separated." Qiu Chi Ka said coldly, "The room you all saw was indeed one of them, but it's an ordinary one. The

secret ones however...hide the true treasure."

"Any one of our race can open that normal room."

"The true treasure in the secret room requires not just our race, but also the talismans to activate. Only with it...will it confirm our identity, and one without it cannot open the room." Qiu Chi Ka said, "Back then when we fled, the knights were worried that the normal warriors would be controlled by others, hence he entrusted talismans to a few to hold...and those holding the talismans had to be emperor level! It's incredibly hard to control an emperor undying."

Luo Feng and the other warriors nodded as they listened.

They had to admit.

Whatever he said was logical, it fit.

"If you all leave, I will never be able to get the true treasure, and without the talismans I won't be able to open the doors. However without me, you all will never be able to open it too." Qiu Chi Ka looked at the group, "My request is simple, I just want half of the treasure!"

Chapter 840: Treasure

At the exit of the tower, Qiu Chi Ka spoke, revealing the secret of the hidden treasure.

"Real and fake treasure?" Luo Feng pondered.

They had to admit that whatever he had said sounded true.

"The treasure chests I got before were empty, plus he could easily tell us about what's been going on. There's no doubt that he was here long before us, that's confirmed."

"There are two possibilities."

"The first one is that, he truly wants to get the true treasure, and it requires the talisman...hence he's here to work with us."

"The second possibility is that everything is fabricated! He had long gotten the true treasure, however since his race was destroyed back then...he holds immense hatred against us. He then set up the plan for us to kill each other. But now that we are about to leave, he's holding us up, it could very likely be a ploy...for revenge." Luo Feng thought.

A survivor of a destroyed race.

If earth was destroyed or humanity was destroyed, Luo Feng knew...that he would probably be driven mad with vengeance too.

"Is it for the treasure? Or revenge?" He hesitated.

...

The other three emperors were doubtful as well.

"Gold Cang, do you think what he's said is true?" Purple Clock said.

"There's a 50% chance." Gold Cang replied.

Rubbish! Purple Clock thought.

"What do we do?" Purple Clock thought.

"I must get the treasure!" Gold Cang's eyes gleamed with ferocity. He had already burnt part of his undying body. Even though he had already gotten Ice Blade and Night emperor's wealth, that little bit couldn't satisfy an emperor pinnacle warrior like him. His aim was only one...the towers treasure.

Without that, he wouldn't be satisfied.

"Then I'll trust you and stick with you Gold Cang. Even if this warrior has any traps set up, it wont go through." Purple Clock said.

"Haha...plans are all useless against true strength." Gold Cang said confidently. "Relax, after getting the treasure, I will distribute it with you accordingly, you get 20%."

"Thanks Gold Cang." Purple Clock felt hatred within but suppressed it.

Before, they had agreed on the ratio of 7:2:1, now that Ice Blade had died, Gold Cang simply decided to take 80%.

...

Qiu Chi Ka simply laughed within, "If you all didn't flee so quickly, I wouldn't have had to take this special path to the exit and risk myself." Luo Feng and the others had flown in two batches earlier.

One was Luo Feng, Gold Cang and Purple Clock.

The other was Piercing Tiger by his lonesome.

While both the groups rushing towards the exit...Qiu Chi Ka was in the control room then, but there was a path that led him straight to the exit. He actually wanted to...simply stop Piercing Tiger and use all four of their warriors to overpower him.

It couldn't be helped.

Without a proper pathway to stop Piercing Tiger, he could only risk it by showing up by himself.

"Greed and ambition, both are things a warrior can never get rid of." He looked at the other warrior's face and relaxed.

"Have you decided?" He asked.

The emperors below all exchanged glances. Even though they were chasing after Luo Feng before...now that they knew the chests were fakes, they didn't want to waste anymore time fighting each other, as there was no benefit in that.

"Ok! I believe you." Gold Cang's voice roared like thunder.

"Qiu Chi Ka, don't do anything stupid." Purple Clock smiled coldly. "I will trust you for now."

"Let's go along then." Piercing Tiger looked at Luo Feng.

The two of them exchanged glances and nodded.

With Night emperor's death, they had to help each other now. Even though Gold Cang was intrepid...Luo Feng's defense was heavenly and Piercing Tiger was a pinnacle emperor too. If they truly fought, even if Gold Cang killed them both, he would have to sacrifice over 10% of his undying body.

That price was too costly...

"As long as we are careful and don't take too much, Gold Cang won't go too crazy. Losing 5 % of one's undying body is easy to recover. Anything over that however is troublesome, and over 10% is even worse." Piercing Tiger communicated.

"Hm, with us together, we can help each other." Luo Feng replied.

The four warriors agreed.

Qiu Chi Ka laughed, "Indeed everyone wants the treasure, however remember what I said before, I get half!"

"I said it too, I agree!" Gold Cang had a downcast expression, as he replied.

The others nodded.

Gold Cang laughed coldly within, "Half? Hmph" It was just lies. He naturally wouldn't do anything yet. But, once the room was open...he would use everything to get the treasure.

"This aboriginal probably has some trump card too." Luo Feng and the others were clear on this.

However for the treasure...

Even if the enemy was strong, they wouldn't give up.

"Follow me." Qiu Chi Ka flew ahead.

"Wait." Gold Cang roared.

Qiu Chi Ka stopped and turned curiously, Gold Cang stared at him coldly, ordering him, "To maintain our trust, you will fly between the four of us."

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Purple Clock, Piercing Tiger and Luo Feng stood around and surrounded Qiu Chi Ka.

"Haha, so strong and yet so cowardly." He mocked.

"It's called caution, a careless warrior will die young." Gold Cang said coldly.

"Then let's go, I'll point the way." Qiu Chi Ka replied, "Just follow this path on the left."

Immediately...

The group began to fly within the tower under Qiu Chi Ka's guidance Luo Feng and the others discovered several hidden pathways on the way. They only needed to push some disguised walls and another pathway would reveal itself.

******

Within the control room.

The god master Pu Ai, La Di mo and Men Bu held their breaths nervously as they watched the projection.

"Elder, elder..." Men Bu clenched his fists, his eyes were clearly filled with worry and anxiety.

"Third brother is doing everything for the race, that's why he's putting himself in danger." Pu Ai said. "The invaders are already acting according to his plan, half of the plan has succeeded! This time...no matter the cost, we have to get the inheritance treasure."

"Hm." The other two nodded.

"Keep watching."

Pu Ai continued, "We'll see if third brother can succeed. Afterall, the invaders are all extremely cautious and clever, and they are strong too. To succeed...we'll need both third brother and a lot of luck."

...

Along a dark internal pathway.

The four warriors surrounded Qiu Chi Ka and flew carefully. The further they got, the brighter the pathways were, after awhile... they arrived within a bright hall.

"Where do we go next?" Gold Cang roared.

"We've arrived." Qiu Chi Ka's eyes were gleaming.

"We've arrived?"

Luo Feng looked around curiously. This huge hall had a diameter of over 10km. The walls were smooth with complex engravings on them, and he didn't see anywhere to hide any treasure.

"Hmph, you invaders, even after standing before the treasure room, you wouldn't even be able to recognize it." Qiu Chi Ka mocked, "Even if you find the treasure room...you wouldn't be able to open it."

"Where is it?" Gold Cang raged.

They all looked at Qiu Chi Ka. He however walked very calmly towards a distant wall, the others naturally followed closely to stop him from doing anything devious.

On the smooth wall...

Qiu Chi Ka took a deep breath and muttered, "My countless dead clansmen. I let these invaders enter the treasure room for the sake of the race's prosperity again. My clansmen...forgive me." He extended his six palms. Simultaneously, the engravings on the wall lit up and rumbled.

"Hm?" Luo Feng turned.

The wall began to pull apart, revealing 10km wide pathway.

"The treasure room is within." Qiu Chi ka said.

"Very good, isn't it good that we all work together?" Gold Cang laughed. However they maintained their cautious position and flew in.

The pathway was only 100m long.

At the end was a door covered in gold light. The engravings on it were incredibly mysterious as it emanated powerful energies.

"This is G grade metal?"

"It's G grade metal!"

"Other than the treasure chests, this is the first time we've seen another G grade metal, and it's the entire door. Just this door alone...should be worth several hundreds of millions of indigo gems." Purple Clock smiled. Beside him Gold Cang smiled as well. The door alone was incredibly valuable.

Looks like...

Everything Qiu Chi Ka said was true, the treasure within must be shocking.

"It was worth it to burn my undying body." Gold Cang could barely suppress his excitement.

Luo Feng carefully observed everything.

No matter what, he had the Sha Wu wings and general armor. Hence, he had a certain guarantee to survive. He naturally wouldn't give up on the treasure that easily.

"Attention all, to activate the door, I have to have a talisman and I will have to personally do it." Qiu Chi Ka said coldly, "Give me the talisman and let me open the room."

Chapter 841: All is Revealed

Give Qiu Chi Ka the talisman?

Gold Cang and the others exchanged glances. If this talisman were to be handed to Qiu Chi Ka, it would be hard to get it back.

"Hmph." Qiu Chi Ka snorted as he saw what happened, mocking, "You are all warriors too. You want the treasure, yet you are afraid to pass me the talisman. Haha, everything must be perfect in your world. I have no ability to forcefully take it from you all anyway, we'll just have no way to open the room then."

Gold Cang roared, "Purple Clock, go and give it a shot. See if you can open the door."

Purple Clock felt unhappy within, however he still nodded, "Ok."

The rest of them stood by the side. Purple Clock walked towards the gold door and touched it with both hands, trying to push it, pouring his undying energy in. After which, he used the talisman to press against the door...trying many ways to open it.

"Hm?" He frowned as he tried.

He had failed over and over.

This made Gold Cang's expression grow ugly. He looked at Qiu Chi Ka, who stood smiling coldly at the scene, mocking, "Trying to get the treasure without me? What a dream. Keep trying, you must be dreaming if you think you can open it."

Qiu Chi Ka mocked and laughed openly, as everyone heard it.

"Shut up." Gold Cang roared.

"Hmph." Qiu Chi Ka shot a glance at him and went silent.

Gold Cang turned to look at Purple Clock and roared, "Forget it." Purple Clock was incredibly unhappy within, but he obediently walked back and said, "Looks like only an indigenous Yan Ji can open this inheritance room."

"Qiu Chi Ka, you are an emperor too. Don't be stupid, and try any tricks." Gold Cang roared.

Qiu Chi Ka simply shot him a glance and remained silent.

"Give it to me!"

Gold Cang tossed out a talisman to him.

Qiu Chi Ka extended his hand received the translucent talisman. His hands were shaking from the excitement. He sent in his spirit energy for it to recognize him as its owner and it melded with his skin. His eyes were wet as he howled within, "My clansmen, I've finally received the talisman!"

Weng...

After the he successfully melded with it, the entire tower seemed to connect to him.

"Master." A voice communicated mentally with Qiu Chi Ka.

"Tower." He said excitedly.

Yes, the tower was a movable survival base, just like a space fortress.

It had its own AI.

The AI could control the entire tower. Different levels of Yan Ji people had different levels of authority within. The normal residents and undyings with the talisman...had higher authorities. Qiu Chi Ka could only do low level actions within the control room in the past.

Now however, he was the master of the entire tower!

Only a Yan Ji clansman with the talisman could get the recognition of the tower, and only after melding with the talisman would he truly gain control! When the six leaders fell before...the tower became useless, and was unable to fly.

...

Within the control room.

Pu Ai, La Di Mo, Men Bu watched the scene, especially after seeing him melding with the talisman, they were incredibly excited. Men Bu even teared a little.

"Pu Ai, La Di Mo, Men Bu, I'm halfway there." A voice resounded within the control room.

"Third brother!" Pu Ai shouted excitedly.

"Elder!"

"Elder!" The other two shouted excitedly. "You can communicate with us?"

"I've already become the master of the tower, I can communicate with it mentally. Naturally it can resound within any part of the tower. Right now...I must carry out the most important step! My beloved clansmen, wish me luck! And pray that our fallen race can get its most important inheritance!" His voice was filled with excitement and anxiety.

...

Before the treasure room door.

"Hurry and open the door." Gold Cang frowned.

Luo Feng carefully observed Qiu Chi Ka's actions. However, it was hard to tell just from looking that he had become the master of the tower.

"Hahaha...how many years has it been. How long have I waited. I'm finally able to get the treasure of our race." He laughed and glanced at Gold Cang, "We are working together, don't get cocky."

"Hmph." Gold Cang snorted coldly, looking at Qiu Chi Ka, "I'll let you be arrogant for awhile."

"I am here to open the door!"

Qiu Chi Ka walked straight to the door.

The others quickly followed closely, they didn't dare let there be any distance between them.

Qiu Chi Ka clicked his lips and walked unhappily towards the door, and touched it gently. The engravings on the door immediately lit up and reacted. The others seem excited but after awhile, the door remained shut.

"What's going on?" Gold Cang roared.

"Give me another talisman." Qiu Chi Ka shouted at them, "I need two talismans to open the door."

"Why didn't you say so before?" Gold Cang frowned.

"I wasn't a leader back then, and only the six leaders knew the secrets of the tower. I only know that the true treasure room must be opened by someone of my race. I only knew this. As to requiring two talismans, only the leaders knew that. How could I know about this beforehand?" He raged. "Back then, this setup was probably to prevent any greedy leader from acting alone."

"If that's not possible, you can come open the door yourself." He raged.

"Hmph."

Gold Cang snorted and tossed out the other talisman.

Qiu Chi Ka took the talisma. He used both of them to touch the door simultaneously.

"Tower, lock in the talisman and open the treasure room door." He communicated mentally.

"Yes master."

Weng...

The engravings lit up and countless beams of light wrapped about the talismans. After which, the room rumbled as the door began to lift up. This scene made Gold Cang and Purple Clock watch in anticipation.

"The door is opening." Luo Feng watched on.

Sou!

Qiu Chi Ka rushed in.

"Trying to get everything?" Gold Cang raged, sou! Sou! Him and Purple Clock immediately rushed in, while Luo Feng and Piercing Tiger swiftly followed.

...

The entire room was made of G grade metal, and was filled with countless engravings. 20 m long, 20m wide and 10m tall. There were twelve locks on the ground, heavily locking the ancient chest for trillions of years.

"Treasure chest." Qiu Chi Ka rushed towards it first.

He had truly brought the invaders here for the treasure chests, and those chests held within the true treasures, Qiu Chi Ka had never gotten them before.

"Get out of the way." A lightning bolt hit his body, it was the lightning pike. It smashed hard into Qiu Chi Ka, knocking him into the wall.

Gold Cang grabbed the chest hard.

"Mine." Gold Cang grabbed it hard!

Hua la!

The twelve locks bound the chests even tighter, and the engravings on it easily withstood Gold Cang's strength.

"Hahaha...you think you can forcefully take it?" Qiu Chi Ka mocked as he lay against the wall. "These locks are specially constructed. Even a knight would find it extremely hard to break them, as for you? Even if you self destruct you won't be able to break them."

"Idiot." Purple Clock was initially nervous, but he laughed after

seeing the scene.

Luo Feng and Piercing Tiger relaxed aswell.

"We'll act accordingly." Luo Feng communicated, "That Qiu Chi Ka would never stupidly bring us here to give us his treasure, without getting anything himself. Also...Gold Cang would never willingly share half of the treasure with him. Those two will definitely fight, and the moment that happens, our chance will come."

"Hm." Piercing Tiger agreed.

"The locks may not be able to break, but the chests can still be opened." Qiu Chi Ka mocked, "Of course, you definitely can't open it."

"Open it!" Gold Cang roared.

"You think I'm stupid? The moment I open and pass it to you, what do you think will happen?" He jeered at Gold Cang.

Gold Cang was simply boiling with rage now as he stared hard at Qiu Chi Ka.

He stared back.

"Ha!" Qiu Chi Ka laughed, simultaneously sending an order, "Tower, close the treasure room door."

"Yes master."

"Rumble!"

A huge rumble occurred behind them. Luo Feng turned quickly, seeing the raised door suddenly fall and shutting the room completely.

"What's going on?" Gold Cang raged, simultaneously using his lightning pike to pierce at Qiu Chi Ka, pinning him to the wall, "Why did the doors suddenly shut? How will we get out?"

"Right, the doors are shut." Qiu Chi Ka exclaimed, "How will we

get out?"

"I'll give you all a suggestion."

He seemed to ponder hard before saying, "You can teleport via your god country and leave this room."

Everyone's expressions changed.

Luo Feng pondered too...

Nobody trusted each other here. How could they teleport via their god country? What's more, without the treasure, no one was willing to leave. This move...Qiu Chi Ka had finally revealed his true colors.

"What's he doing?" Luo Feng frowned.

Luo Feng who had the strongest ability to survive naturally watched the scene calmly.

Chapter 842: Death

Luo Feng gazed around. This entire room was made of G grade metals, along with the mysterious engravings, it was impossible to break out.

"Aboriginal, what are you planning!" Gold Cang waved his lightning pike, staring angrily at Qiu Chi Ka.

The other emperors looked on coldly at him.

Even though they were trapped within, the warriors weren't too worried because they could teleport via their god country out. Only thing was they they didn't trust each other and they still wanted to get the treasure. Hence they didn't plan to leave immediately.

At this moment...

Outside the room.

Two beams of light swiftly flew over and stopped outside the room. They were the aboriginals Men Bu and La Di Mo.

They looked at the two locked in talismans on the door, with excitement and pain at the same time.

Pa! Pa!" They reached and easily retrieved them.

They hesitated for awhile as they looked at the room. They knew that their elder was within.

"Elder!" They howled in pain within.

"Hurry and go!" A voice pierced their ears. "Hurry and go, we cannot be careless at all with the inheritance."

"Yes."

Men Bu and La Di Mo gritted their teeth and became beams of light leaving the room.

"Elder, you must survive, you must survive" Men Bu turned and howled as they left.

"Elder!" La Di Mo shouted too.

A voice resounded within the walkway. "If possible, I would. However the chances of that are very slim. As long as you can get to the inheritance room and get the treasure there, I will have no regrets."

"Elder!"

"Elder!" The two of them welled up in tears.

Within the control room, Pu Ai watched the scene with pain and excitement. This was Qiu Chi Ka's inheritance plan, the entire plan was to get the talismans. The plan was simple, he would show himself and draw the invaders to the treasure room. After which, he would get the talismans and open the room, leaving the talismans on the door. Then he would rush in and pretend to get the treasure. Naturally the invaders would be drawn in along and then he would shut the door. The talismans could then be retrieved.

With the doors shut, the invaders wouldn't be able to escape.

Men bu and La Di Mo could easily head towards the inheritance room and take its countless treasures away.

Two things about the plan required luck.

One was that Gold Cang and the others had to trust Qiu Chi Ka and follow him to the room.

Secondly, it was whether they would rush into the room along with him, and whether they'd notice the talismans stuck to the door outside. If they requested for it to be taken down...Qiu Chi Ka could secretly order the door to shut, saying that the doors required the talismans to be stuck on it or it would simply shut.

All in all, there were several risks.

He was the first to rush into the room, putting himself in danger. This was the most important part of the mission. If he didn't enter

or rushed out immediately, the others would naturally follow him and he wouldn't be able to lock them in. That would affect the plan.

"Third brother." Pu Ai shouted in pain, "You could have chosen not to enter the room."

"If I don't enter, they won't enter either. And if they don't enter... Men Bu and the others won't be able to get the talismans easily, the plan would be for naught." Qiu Chi Ka's voice resounded within the control room. "Everything is for the race!"

"Hm, everything for the race." Pu Ai nodded.

******

Of the three treasure rooms, the first one held the least treasures. The second room had more treasures within. As for the third one, it had countless techniques and inheritance treasures for the entire race, it was the true inheritance.

The inheritance room was the most important of the three Qiu Chi Ka couldn't allow any failure, hence the one he entered...was naturally the second room.

...

Within the room.

"What am I doing?" Pinned against the wall, he smiled at Gold Cang. "Invaders, why don't you guess what I'm doing?"

"Playing with me." Gold Cang's voice rumbled.

Luo Feng frowned at Qiu Chi Ka, he had felt something amiss all this while, almost like victory was in Qiu chi Ka's hands.

"Speak, how do we open the chest." Gold Cang pointed at the ancient chest bound by twelve locks.

"Hmph, haha." Qiu Chi Ka laughed weirdly at him.

"Do you wish to die?" Gold Cang was very angry now as he

roared.

"Smart!" Qiu Chi Ka simply looked at him and said softly, "I wish to die!"

The others beside him were all stunned. They looked on with disbelief at this aboriginal.

"I wish to die."

"Do you understand?"

"I've lived for far too long, and I've been in pain for too long. When my race faced extinction back then, I've been struggling for so long, I'm too tired. Now it's time to end it." His eyes seemed relaxed. "I may even take a couple of other race emperors with me, haha, how exciting is this."

"Not good."

"This aboriginal is mad." Purple Clock and Piercing Tiger were stunned.

This aboriginal was a pinnacle emperor too. If he self destructed, Gold Cang may be fine, but the two of them would be in trouble.

"We've finally got the inheritance." He closed his eyes and smiled. "I've done my part."

"Marsha!"

"My love...when you fell back then, I wanted to accompany you, but I couldn't. Now however, I can follow you into eternal sleep." He closed his eyes and smiled widely, after which powerful ripples began to emanate from his body.

...

"No!!!"

Pu Ai was watching the projection in the control room all this while. He howled painfully, "No!!!" third brother, don't do this!"

Xiu! Xiu!

Two beams of light flew into the control room. It was La Di Mo and Men Bu who had just acquired the inheritance, they watched the projection and were stunned.

"Elder!"

"No."

...

Within the treasure room.

"No!" Piercing Tiger opened his eyes and fiercely banged hard at the wall, however the walls were too sturdy.

"Madman, madman, madman!!!" Purple Clock gritted his teeth and cursed madly.

"What a madman." Gold Cang simply snorted and stood there.

Luo Feng wrapped himself in his wings and said, "I don't know if I can withstand this."

Qiu Chi Ka maintained his smile as terrifying energy started to exploded from within. He closed his eyes, rumble...every cell in his body instantly exploded with terrifying energy, trillions of years of undying energy began to erupt!

Rumble...an explosion akin to a million sector lords combining their attacks filled the entire room.

The room was only that big. So, there was nowhere to hide!

"I cannot die!" Piercing Tiger howled.

"Hmph." Purple Clock snorted as a purple clock image appeared on his body.

Luo Feng wrapped himself.

Gold Cang simply stood and stared coldly.

The powerful force instantly engulfed the four warriors. At this time, Piercing Tiger and Purple Clock fought hard.

Rumble! The final force which passed through the Sha Wu wings and General armor still managed to make his cloud contact armor crumble. It's sturdiness was akin to a low emperor human, and normal high emperors wouldn't even be able to breakthrough it.

Completely crumbling meant the difference was huge.

"Rumble..." The remaining force shook his body hard, instantly destroying 80% of his body. However it swiftly recovered.

Without the Sha Wu wings and general armor, Gold Cang, Purple Clock and Piercing Tiger were completely different.

Gold Cang stood there coldly, his body instantly crumbling from the force. However, he reformed right after with the same cold expression, staring at the other three.

...

The tragedy was just as bad in the control room.

The three aboriginals were in absolute grief. Qiu Chi Ka had been leading their race since the sweep before. He was a spiritual leader and he helped support them for so long. He had settled all difficulties and dangers. But, now that they had finally acquired the inheritance, he was gone.

"This is a message left behind by the master, he wanted me to pass it to you after he died." The AI of the tower said clearly.

The three warriors held their breaths.

Qiu Chi Ka's voice resounded.

"Pu Ai, Men Bu, La Di Mo, when you hear this, I'll already be gone. Please forgive me, I've chosen to escape! The trillions of years before, living only on faith, now that we've acquired the inheritance, I'm satisfied. I'll leave everything to you all. The treasure room is already shut, and they cannot get out and they cannot open the chest either. I believe they will ultimately choose to teleport via their god country. The moment they leave, you can

sneak in and get that treasure chest too!"

"This is the most perfect ending. If other invaders come, you can instantly enter the god country via the space pathway and destroy the pathway."

"Clean up the ends."

Pu Ai, my brother, La Di Mo, Men Bu, my children, the future of the race is up to you all. Forgive me for my escape." Silence.

The three couldn't help but cry.

The undying survivors had all supported each other through the years, and their relationships were incredibly close, even though Qiu Chi Ka had been their elder and leader.

"You didn't escape third brother, you didn't. You were simply too tired, you needed rest." Pu Ai muttered, beside him the other two were silent.

For the race, their elder Qiu Chi Ka...had fallen...

Chapter 843: Purple Clock's threat

"The race must rise again, we cannot let the elder's sacrifice be in vain." La Di Mo howled. Men Bu nodded beside him.

"Look at the treasure room!"

The god master Pu Ai said, "The treasure room and the inheritance room. The inheritance room holds techniques that our race has accumulated over countless years for our people, while the treasure room holds all sorts of valuables. As long as they teleport via god country out of the room, we can get the treasure."

"Hm." The other two nodded. Their eyes were gleaming as they watched the projection.

******

Within the treasure room.

The aboriginal Qiu Chi Ka, a pinnacle emperor had self destructed. It took a while for the room to gradually regain its peace.

"Bastard, bastard, bastard!!!" Piercing Tiger howled as he stood in the corner, his eyes were filled with madness.

"Hmph." Purple Clock was ashen. His gaze was fixed on Gold Cang who was in the center of the room.

Gold Cang retained his cold expression.

Luo Feng was like a cocoon pinned against the wall in his wings. He slowly opened his wings and gazed around. Piercing Tiger's energy had dropped to an extreme low. In comparison, Purple Clock didn't seem to have any change, and so did Gold Cang.

"Piercing Tiger suffered huge losses. His undying body has been damaged over 50%!" Luo Feng thought. "But Purple Clock isn't even injured? It's normal that Gold Cang wasn't hurt, but Purple Clock..."

The two enemies.

Gold Cang had reached the limit of an emperor.

Purple Clock was also an emperor pinnacle.

"Hehehe..." Gold Cang laughed coldly.

"You sure know how to act." He turned to face Purple Clock. His voice was booming, "Purple Clock, if it weren't for that aboriginal self destructing, I wouldn't be able to see your Qi Chang race's strength. Other than the attack you used earlier when you burnt 3% of your undying energy, whether it was Night emperor's explosion or this aboriginal's explosion...they didn't even harm you!"

That explosion...

Gold Cang was undamaged.

Luo Feng used the same terrifying defense and was left undamaged. Gold Cang had already predicted that this human had his own trump cards, hence he wasn't shocked that Luo Feng survived.

Piercing Tiger had lost half his undying body. If he was damaged any further, he would fall into a coma, this was within his expectations.

Only Purple Clock, he seemed to only be pinnacle emperor level. When Night emperor self destructed before, he wailed like he was injured. However, as he hid in the room, the explosion spread over a large area. Even Piercing Tiger had barely survived. Even if Purple Clock was injured...it would be hard to tell just from looking.

No one thought of anything special about Purple Clock!

This time was different!

Qiu Chi Ka's explosion was within this small treasure room,which was 20m wide and 10m tall! And it was shut! The

defenses of the room made it so that the walls were totally undamaged. This also made it so that his explosion was contained within. Hence, the force of this explosion would have been terrifying.

Piercing Tiger was heavily injured. If he was injured anymore, he would fall into a coma.

Purple Clock however was undamaged, that was weird.

"Cackle..." Purple Clock laughed. His scales contracting on his face, which looked incredibly ugly. His voice was piercing as he said, "Gold Cang, there are trillions of races, and countless treasures. There are also countless dangerous areas, would I not have any survival trump cards?"

"When we planned it out earlier, you didn't say anything." Gold Cang looked at him.

"This is for my survival, there's no need to say anything." He looked down, seemingly giving in.

"Hmph."

Gold Cang snorted coldly.

After which his gaze landed on the human youth and Piercing Tiger, mocking within. Piercing Tiger wasn't even worth mentioning now. As for the human with powerful defenses, his attack was average, and so he was no threat as well.

"Let's everybody try and open this chest." He pointed to the chest, "Who'll try first?"

Who would dare attempt to open the chest?

"Gold Cang, you go first." Purple Clock said.

"Hmph."

Gold Cang walked over to the ancient chest bound by twelve chains. He tried to open it with brute force and skill. After trying everything without any result, he kicked it hard, causing the space

about to crumble. "You all give it a shot."

"I'll try." Purple Clock walked up to try. When he reached it, he turned to Luo feng, "Human, don't you want to give it a shot?"

"No need." Luo Feng wasn't in a rush.

Purple Clock tried a few times, failure!

Luo Feng and Piercing Tiger went to try too, still failure!

...

Within the control room.

"These invaders still want to get our treasure? What dreamers!" Men Bu said angrily.

"The treasure is ours." La Di Mo mocked. "These invaders, they don't know when to give up. Look at the strongest Gold Cang, he's about to go crazy. Even so, it's useless, they still wont get the treasure. The only path they've got left is to teleport via god country!"

"We'll wait till they leave and we'll go grab the treasure." Pu Ai said.

The three aboriginals all watched on, waiting...waiting for when the invaders left via their god countries.

******

After a few minutes within the room, the warriors all realized... they had no way to open the chest.

"Maybe I can let the Mosha clansman become a Yan ji warrior and try." Luo Feng stood in the corner and thought. "However as to whether I can deceive the chest system, I don't have a full guarantee. Whether it works or not, I cannot do it in front of others."

"What a waste!" Gold Cang roared, his voice resounding within the room.

The other warriors about mumbled, waste? Ice Blade and Night emperor did get the wealth of the six guides...and all of their wealth ended up in Gold cang's hands. It should be worth at least several tens of billions of mixed elements. That was considered a waste?

"Greed is something all warriors have." Luo Feng couldn't help but sigh, "The difference is whether one can control it or not."

"You three!"

Gold Cang roared, "Teleport via your god country out."

Luo Feng was shocked. He was trying to make the three of them leave first? Wouldn't that reveal their god country location? Wouldn't Gold Cang be able to to follow them after? With his strength...the moment he entered the enemy's god country, whether it was Piercing Tiger or Purple Clock, the god country would probably crumble.

"We have to leave first?" Purple Clock raged, "Gold Cang, you are much more powerful than us. Even if you teleport via god country, none of us would dare follow you. Hence, from what I see...we should leave according to our strengths, the strongest should go first and the weakest last."

"Right." Piercing Tiger roared too.

"I agree." Luo Feng nodded.

They were very clear that they had to work together now.

Within the dark treasure room, Gold Cang who was covered in lightning roared, "Anybody who betrays me...will die!!!"

"Even if we don't betray you, we will die too!" Purple Clock's eyes gleamed with ferocity

"I've already suffered heavy damage and will take countless years to recover. Gold Cang, don't push it." Piercing Tiger's eyes were filled with madness. How pitiful was he, he didn't even get any

treasure and yet he was so heavily injured. As an emperor, he still had some pride. The long periods of time have made it so that many of them did not fear death, and choosing to self destruct was a common thing.

Luo Feng looked at Gold Cang.

It was obvious that an unspoken alliance between the three weaker warriors had formed.

"Ah?" Gold Cang's eyes gleamed with lightning. He looked curiously at the group, "What guts!"

"I've already activated my virtual world broadcast." Purple Clock gritted his teeth at Gold Cang. "Everything here on out would be recorded. If you dare make a move, even similar camp allies attacking another, no one can protect you!"

"Broadcast?" Gold Cang looked mockingly at Purple Clock, "This tower jams all signals and cant even be detected. You can only use the basic recording with your own vision. I've long ago warped the light around and noise travels straight into your brain. You have no way to record this."

"Ah..."

Purple Clock's expression changed.

"Haha...this tower, even the most expensive scanners are useless before it, and even god energy is useless. Although your virtual world device has some recording ability, but anything recorded and not broadcasted can easily be edited, it cannot serve as evidence at all. What's more, I control the light and sound, haha..." Gold Cang looked madly at Purple Clock, "For you to block that aboriginal's explosion and go undamaged, looks like you have some treasures on you."

"That human had blocked it too." Purple Clock looked over nervously.

Luo Feng's expression changed when he heard.

"Him?"

Gold Cang looked curiously at Luo Feng. "His strength cannot compare to yours, but his defenses are absurd. He must have some special techniques or something. Relax...you all, I will settle you one by one. Even though I cannot get the treasure in here, combining the wealth from the three of you, it's considered a small compensation."

The three of them were all shocked, Gold Cang had revealed his true colors.

"Don't get too cocky." Piercing Tiger said hoarsely.

"Shut up! You are so heavily injured, that your explosion won't even harm me in the least." Gold Cang mocked. "I'm not even interested in your little wealth. I value these two more." He turned to face Luo Feng and Purple Clock.

"Don't force me."

Purple Clock raged, flipping his hand and brandishing a black crystal. A terrifying energy rippled from it, "If forced, we will all fall together!"

Chapter 844: Then You Should All Die

Piercing Tiger stood with Luo Feng, while shocked at the black crystal ball which seemed normal, but the energies it emitted weren't ordinary at all.

"It's a flame god crystal, and an extremely advanced one." Luo Feng thought. "It is at least a tier higher than even the one I bought!" He had spent 800 million before to buy a high emperor flame god crystal. But, this one was obviously on a different level.

According to its characteristics.

Naturally there were thunder god crystals and water god crystals. However, in terms of explosive power, the flame god crystal was the cheapest to purchase, as it was the most common. The others had other special qualities and were useful in other situations, naturally warriors would still purchase them.

"Hahaha..." A booming laughter, Gold Cang's voice resonated within his chest.

Purple Clock wielded the flame god crystal.

"Threatening me?"

"You are threatening me?" Gold Cang's voice was like thunder. His huge body was over looking Purple Clock. "Using that flame god crystal to threaten me? Haha, this crystal...is your most famous trump card. An A812 flame god crystal, I heard that you brought this out to scare off many opponents in the past, allowing you to survive till now. And you dare take it out to threaten me?"

Purple Clock however spoke softly, "A812 flame god crystal, is an extremely high level item.. It is akin to three times a pinnacle emperor's explosion. Just this one...took up all of my wealth back then."

"A812?" Luo Feng thought.

The more power the crystal had, the higher the price.

A crystal with the power of a high emperor's explosion was worth 800 million. This A812 crystal however, would require at least twelve billion points. Purple Clock probably had to spend even more without any discounts. For such a huge sum, it could make many emperors bankrupt. Many would choose to spend it on strengthening themselves, or buying weapons and so on. Very few would actually purchase a crystal like this.

"You are right."

"I've used it to survive many times." Purple Clock's voice was thin as he continued, "I believe that this time will be the same."

"No use, it has little threat to me." Gold Cang said confidently.

"Three times pinnacle emperor strength...it definitely cannot kill you, but within this little space, it can definitely destroy 5-10% of your undying body." Purple clock looked at him. "You are already injured, anymore and you would take very long to recover."

Gold Cang nodded, "Well said!"

Gold Cang turned to Luo Feng, "Human, this Purple Clock seems like trouble, I think I'd rather kill you first."

"Hmph." Luo Feng remained silent.

...

The atmosphere in the room was tense. All three weaker warriors looked at Gold Cang's presence which had forced them to take out their trump cards. Should their trump cards prove terrifying enough, Gold Cang would have to withdraw.

If they didn't have anything, then he would make his move!

This was normal in a fight between warriors.

At this level, these beings were ancient with millions of years behind them. Even if they could suppress and kill the enemy, they would first completely overwhelm them. If they came out with

everything immediately, forcing the enemy to brandish a terrifying flame god crystal, then both would simply fall, wouldn't that be silly?

It was possible to have two casualties, they normally wouldn't risk such exchanges.

"What a pity, your threat is too low." Gold Cang revealed a bright smile, "Then...you all will die first!"

"Move!" Purple Clock roared.

"Kill!" Piercing Tiger instantly burnt his undying body.

"Give it everything!" Luo Feng replied.

The three weaker warriors immediately understood that Gold Cang's final decision was to kill them all! Even if they died, they wouldn't let him get off easy, even though they couldn't deal with him, almost like three ants going against an elephant.

"Rumble..." Vast lightning energy surrounded Gold Cang and spread throughout the room.

"Kill!"

He wielded his thunder pike and had already burnt part of his undying body, making the others tremble from his energy ripples.

"He's burning his undying body, he's trying to settle this fight quickly. Killing us with the least cost." Purple Clock communicated to the other two. "Don't hold back, use everything."

"Ah!!!"

Piercing Tiger let out an enraged howl. He was already heavily injured, it was almost like an ant trying to shake a tree, as he ignited his entire undying body to explode. The explosion filled the entire room. His power only about 20-30% that of Qiu Chi Ka's explosion.

Piercing Tiger had finally died!

"Idiot." Gold Cang shook a little, not even caring about his actions.

"Yang." Purple Clock howled, "We've got to give it our all!"

His eyes were filled with madness. However, no matter how much he shouted at Luo Feng, Luo Feng wasn't an undying, he had no undying body to burn, how could he go all out?

"Die!" Gold Cang's eyes were condescending and cold.

"Human, you sure are useless." Purple Clock lost the madness in his eyes, leaving only coldness. A purple membrane appeared throughout the surface of his body, as an ancient clock covered with mysterious engravings appeared. Luo Feng didn't even recognize the words.

The clock gave off a terrifying pressure.

Hua!

The clock suddenly changed and flew up, swiftly expanding before engulfing the entire room! The room was only that big. Hence, Luo Feng and Gold Cang had no space to dodge, as the entire room was covered with the clock.

The purple ancient clock seemed to hold an eternal age within. The powerful energies made Luo Feng tremble. "True treasure, this is a true treasure. Back then the treasure that Yan Zhu emperor had gotten and used from his father, even its power didn't seem as strong as this one. This was definitely a true treasure that knights used."

This clock...was an ancient treasure with vast power.

...

Within the room...

All three warriors were caught within. The entire clock had a diameter of 16m, covering more than half of the room surface.

"Purple Clock emperor!" Gold Cang looked shocked at him, "You,

you..."

"You all know I use fire clocks to attack and the purple clock membrane for protection, but no one knows that my true treasure is this mysterious ancient clock." He mocked within, ordering, "Gold Cang, you wanted to kill me, so don't blame me for killing you instead. Two pinnacle emperors and one emperor limit have already fallen to this clock before. You and the human will die today!"

"Human, you sure are useless, you should die too! With you dead, that mysterious defense treasure will be mine."

Two separate voices were heard, each in Luo Feng and Gold Cang's minds.

After which...

Purple clock took a step back and walked out through the ancient clock. He had long melded with it, and was able to fuse it into his body and pass through it. When he stepped back, he placed the black flame god crystal worth over ten billion mixed elements within the clock.

"Not good." Gold Cang's expression changed.

"Trouble." Luo Feng saw the crystal and it was already erupting.

"Explode!" Purple Clock laughed.

Simply relying on himself and the clock alone wasn't enough to kill Gold Cang. Even though his treasure was powerful, there was a limit to which it would extend his powers. Even though Luo Feng had the Sha Wu wings...he couldn't possibly kill an emperor limit.

Hence Purple Clock had to use the flame god crystal.

This crystal had the power of three pinnacle emperors' explosion. In theory it could barely damage Gold Cang. However, the situation at hand was different. The entire explosion was contained within the ancient clock, and fine tuned further by its

special qualities into a focused attack. It was completely directed and with Purple Clock's control.

That attack would hit Gold Cang!

This would raise the strength of the attack by ten times! That way, even an emperor limit would fall. Unless this emperor limit had the king armor or other such heavenly armors, or some incredibly valuable treasures like this ancient clock.

Before when purple clock experienced Night emperor and Qiu Chi Ka's explosion and came out undamaged, he had the purple clock membrane protection!

Ever since he acquired the ancient clock...he had killed other super powers and used large amounts of wealth to strengthen himself, such as buying the incredibly expensive flame god crystal. However, he remained low profile, as those that had witnessed his moves were killed.

"Killing that human and Gold Cang will give me a huge windfall again. Gold Cang even got the other warriors' wealth before, and his own wealth should be huge too. I'll use that to buy two more flame god crystals." Purple clock pondered within. "And that human...even though he's much weaker, his defense is shocking. He may have some ancient treasure like my ancient clock."

Purple Clock anticipated within...

"Die, go and die, everything is mine!"

Chapter 845: Big Winner

The three aboriginals in the control room watched everything through the scanners, observing everything that happened within the treasure room.

"Kill each other."

"The more you kill the better."

"Go for it."

"Just die."

Pu Ai, La Di Mo and Men Bu were all very excited, and they watched the projection happily. As survivors of the tragedy, they treated all other races as enemies. Especially those that participated in the outer region wars, they hated them the most.

Because their race was almost wiped out due to the four pinnacle races forging the battlefields.

"Just to forge the battlefields, they had to destroy our race." Their hatred ran deep.

However to the four pinnacle races...

It was like a few powerful lions establishing an area to fight, the rabbits that occupied that area first naturally had to be gotten rid off. To the lions...eating the rabbits was like stepping on ants. However to the rabbits and ants, the lions became huge enemies.

Between races...there was no mercy.

"Die, all of you die." The aboriginals watched with hatred in their eyes.

******

The purple clock seemed extremely ancient, filled with a blur of engravings that gave off powerful energy. With a rumble, the explosion erupted within it and even though the entire force was

channeled into one direction, it still formed a huge ripple outwards.

Rumble!

A formless ripple spread out through the clock! Rumble! It rushed straight back at the skinny Purple Clock's body. Though it was diffused by over 90%, the force still made his body crumble before reforming. He was however smiling excitedly, and his eyes were filled with anticipation. "Gold Cang, Human, you will all die and the treasures will be mine! All will be mine!"

...

"Ahahahaha!" An enraged howl came from Gold Cang's throat, his eyes were filled with rage.

"Purple Clock!!!" He stared hard.

Boom!

The ancient clock howled as the terrifying force condensed within it shot out in one direction...straight at Gold Cang! At such close distance, Gold Cang had no way to dodge, he instantly received the terrifying attack.

The force which was supposed to explode in all directions concentrated on him instead, as it's strength was amplified by ten times!

It originally only had the strength of three times a pinnacle emperor's explosion. But, now it was ten times more!

"Rumble..." Energy swelled within Gold Cang's body, he had already burnt 3% of his undying body earlier to solve the fight fast. But before he could do anything, he got trapped in the ancient clock. If he burnt more undying energy, at emperor limit, he could withstand the blast for awhile.

However it was useless.

He only withstood it for that instant. His initial strength from

burning his undying energy could stand up to the blast for that one instant.

But in terms of quantity, that 3% of his undying energy was instantly used up.

While taking on the attack, he burnt more undying energy trying to withstand the blast, and at that instant, he knew, "It's over! I'm dead!"

"My disciples."

"My teachers."

"I, Gold Cang bid you all farewell. I hope in the distant future that I will be revived and will be able to see you all again!" His eyes were filled with hurt as he howled with rage amidst madness. "Purple Clock, you want to kill me? You will die too!!!"

"Explode!" He chose to self destruct at the final moment.

Normal attacks like the flame god crystal explosion killing an emperor had destructive effects, these attacks destroyed energy itself. Just like when Gold Cang destroyed 50% of Night emperor's body, it didn't create too much ripples around.

However if one chose not to withstand the destruction, but rather self destruct.

Just like how Night emperor's explosion was huge...it was akin to Gold Cang becoming a flame god crystal explosion himself!

"Rumble..." The crystal energy boiled.

"Rumble..." Gold Cang's explosion was even more terrifying.

It was like two flame god crystals exploding simultaneously, the power was terrifying.

...

Outside the ancient clock.

"No!" Purple Clock's expression changed. He had been outside the

explosion area all this while, with the ancient clock protecting him by controlling the direction of the blast. He naturally felt the powerful blast heading over in his direction! The moment he could not control the direction of the blast anymore.

The energy would burst in all directions.

His clock membrane could diffuse 90% of the force. But, the final force was still enough to completely destroy a pinnacle emperor! This was after all the explosion of an emperor limit and was akin to another flame god crystal!

"Bind!"

"Bind it!!!"

"All in one direction, all in one direction!!!" Facing death, he gave his all to control the ancient clock, trying to control Gold Cang's blast too along with the initial crystal blast, pushing it all downwards!

Binding and pushing it all in one direction would make that side suffer greatly.

The other areas would receive much less damage.

This way, the force actually hitting the clock itself was much weaker. But, it was obviously very hard to control so much power, even with the ancient clock.

"Bind!" He burnt his undying energy, while his eyes filled with madness.

Hua hua...

Burning his undying energy almost like a turbulent flood was pouring out, he madly used the strength he gained from it. His gained enormous strength in his final bid to control the blast from Gold Cang along with the flame god crystal!

The two forces united!

They were focused in one direction!

Downwards!

Rumble...the force slammed against the ground of the treasure room, this was within the ancient clock's area.

The walls and surfaces of the room were incredibly strong, as it could even withstand the blast of a pinnacle emperor. One had to know that was already the strength of a knight's normal attack. An emperor limit explosion however...concentrated by the ancient clock had ten times the strength.

The ground instantly received over 100 times the force!

Rumble...

The metal surface of the room began to tear apart, the center spot where the chest lay naturally received the attack as well! Even as the ground tore apart, the twelve chains connecting the chest to the ground had incredibly strong defenses, as the twelve chains remained undamaged by the force.

"Si La..." The force pierced through the ground.

The other regions below the room however were much weaker. When Night emperor exploded with only 50% of his undying body, it already reduced the surrounding 60km area to nothing, but this attack was much stronger.

Rumble...

One could visibly see the force being pushed downwards!

The twelve chains and the chest on the ground were knocked far away, the fore of the attack destroyed a world ring that unleashed a large amount of items.

It created a 6,000km deep cave downwards before it dispersed, as everything within the area was destroyed!

...

Gold Cang had suffered a tragedy, Luo Feng didn't do too well either.

When the flame god crystal was focused on Gold Cang, some of the force hit Luo Feng, this threat wasn't too huge and he could withstand it. However when Gold Cang exploded...that was trouble, even though Purple Clock forced it all down, the straggling ripples about were still plenty powerful.

Luo Feng was hit by about 50% of an emperor limit's explosion!

"Dodge!"

When Gold Cang exploded, Luo Feng instantly knew it was dangerous. He hid his human body right away in the internal world.

Unlike using a world ring to retrieve items, Luo Feng's three bodies could instantly switch or enter the internal world. The internal world was used to nurture them with the core within, even though he hid within, he hid the original core in a world ring within the Sha Wu wings.

The Sha Wu wings had long been melded into his body.

His muscles were completely melded with it and the world ring was the same, naturally he could put the world ring in.

As such!

This was the safest way!

Rumble, the silver wings hid the world ring and was knocked downwards. At the same time, large amounts of other items outside were forced downwards with it. Actually, that world ring was something Luo Feng specially ordered, it's defenses were incredibly strong.

Jus the force of the attack alone wouldn't break it. But he didn't dare gamble, hence he placed it within the wings.

...

When the wings hugged the world ring, the chains, the chest and the metal fragments, Gold Cang's world ring was instantly

destroyed and it unleashed a large amount of items. The wealth of the other emperors from the past and his own...they were all knocked downwards.

"All mine!"

"They are all mine." When the ground was completely destroyed, Purple Clock who had burnt his undying energy to control the blast shouted, he had already used 26% of his undying body, it was a huge loss.

"It's worth it!"

"Completely worth it!"

"All the treasures from the emperors and an emperor limit's wealth, that human's defensive treasure and the chained chest, everything is mine. Losing my undying body...it's worth it!" Even though he was shocked by the ground crumbling, he rushed down straight after the treasure immediately.

Chapter 846: Race, Rise!

The impact of the force created a deep ditch that went straight down. However, Its diameter was only that small.

"Peng! Peng! Peng!" The large amount of treasures couldn't possible fall down straight into it. Hence, it was like broken glass clanging against the sides, all sorts of items fell and bounced from side to side...

What a mess.

However, Purple Clock's eyes gleamed with excitement.

Even if a normal person seeing a large amount of cash fluttering around in the streets, covering the entire street...even though it may be messy, he would still be excited.

"It's all mine."

"Hahaha..."

"I'll buy two more flame god crystals later on."

"And I'll buy a slot to study the Flame clock god mountain, and large amounts of recovery treasures, also..." He rushed downwards and swiftly collected the falling items, excitedly planning his next steps.

All sorts of treasures were thrown around.

Like the Purple Clock, it was something even knights would value.

The Sha Wu wings, it would even make knights go crazy for.

Or something even higher, that universe masters would use.

And all sorts of things like the general armor, or other things.

In all...

It couldn't be counted! Treasures were needed for exploring dangerous regions, and needed for battles, one had to buy some in

bulk!

"Hahaha... this is thrilling, thrilling."

"Too thrilling." Purple Clock rushed down and collected whatever he found.

...

Sou!

The Sha Wu wings continued to fall, and beside it was the chest and the large amount of treasures.

"I actually get to collect so much too, haha." A metal fragment floating beside the wings fell with it. It was a G grade metal transformed by the mosha clansman. Of course, it only copied its energy sense, as it was still soft and energy based. The mosha body was unable to completely turn itself into a G grade metal.

Sou!

The wings disappeared and was kept in the internal world. The world ring was then kept with the mosha metal fragment, as it was impossible to scan within the tower. With energy ripples continuously spreading around from the blast, Purple Clock had no way to discover this from above.

"This chest is mine too."

Sou!

The chest bounded by twelve chains connected to that metal fragment, it suddenly vanished.

"Gold Cang's thunder pike? Hehe, it's actually undamaged, it's mine now."

"What is this? Space ring? World ring? Hm, looks like its from Gold Cang's broken world ring, there are other rings inside, I'll take them all!"

"Hehe...This device storing the Purple god tree marrow sure is

durable. It hasn't broken even after hitting the walls so many times, I'll take it too."

"Wa, this is worth one billion mixed elements, I'll take it."

"Take take take!"

"I'll take them all!"

The Mosha body metal fragment easily swept through the large amount of falling items, almost like cash from the sky. Luo Feng didn't care, collecting as much as he could. Purple Clock was collecting treasure from above too. The two of them, one from above while the other was below, were collecting treasures.

"Hm? Where's that chest" Purple Clock frowned as he rushed down. "Did it hit the walls and fall somewhere along the side?"

This was a 6,000km long ditch, naturally it connected to several pathways along the way in the tower. Hence, some may have bounced around and flew into the sides.

"I have to find that chest. All of the treasure together probably wouldn't even add up to that chest's worth."

"And that human."

"I wonder what treasure he has." Purple Clock thought. When Gold Cang exploded, large amounts of treasure flew in a mess against the silver wings. With the huge amount of items that were scattered around, Purple Clock had no way to distinguish which belonged to the human Luo Feng.

"I'll first look for the chest."

"That's the most valuable. As long as I can get it back, I'll find a way to open it." He began to search around, occasionally discovering other treasures along the way and keeping them. He only kept them in his space ring, as he has had many experiences in his life.

He had experienced many things, he knew of special life forms,

things that didn't seem like life forms from appearance, but once they were kept in a world ring, that would be trouble. Hence he kept all the valuable items in a space ring.

"No matter how small, it's still something."

"This is afterall a G grade metal, I'll take it." He collected little and big fragments of metal. The metal was very valuable too. Any single one was a normal undying's entire wealth, and if added together, they were worth over a hundred million mixed elements.

"Where is that chest?"

"Where is it?"

He looked about nervously, unable to find it.

"What's going on, just where did it go?" He was getting more anxious. That was the treasure he most valued from the tower, yet he couldn't find it.

"Xiu!"

Purple Clock once again collected a metal fragment.

Rumble, the space ring automatically rejected the metal fragment.

"What's going on?" He was shocked, turning fast to look at the metal fragment.

"Hahaha..."

A silhouette appeared. It was the silver winged Luo Feng, the metal fragment landed in his hand as his world ring melded into his skin, the mosha body had returned into the internal world.

"You, you, you..." Purple Clock stared wide eyed at the silhouette.

Silver armor and wings, floating and flapping there, Luo feng smiled at him and said softly, "Thanks Purple Clock."

******

The three aboriginals in the control room had been watching

everything from the start, only when the huge explosion earlier destroyed the room and large amounts of the tower's construct, they lost vision for awhile but quickly regained sight.

They clearly saw Purple Clock rushing down and collecting treasures. They also discovered...the treasures below were disappearing mysteriously, and finally when Luo Feng showed himself, they were all shocked.

"It's that human."

"He survived."

"Even that powerful invader has died, and yet the human survived. No wonder the elder said...some warriors of the four pinnacle races have many treasures and techniques. We cannot take our revenge yet. It sure is terrifying...that powerful invader, even with his strength, he still died. And that human seems to only have high emperor level strength but he still survived."

Pu Ai, La Di Mo and Men Bu couldn't help but feel shock.

The greatest winner of this treasure hunt...seemed to be that human.

"He's the real winner."

"Hm, the treasure in that room is in his hands."

"There are countless techniques in the inheritance room, but the most useful treasures for our race are all within that treasure room." The three of them were regretful. Especially the god master Pu Ai, when Qiu Chi Ka died, he naturally became the strongest leader of their race. He felt the pressure of leading the race and was responsible for their survival.

He needed to live up to the elder before.

That was why the pressure of the race's survival normally landed on the strongest warrior.

"I didn't expect that they'd manage to destroy the treasure room."

Pu Ai sighed. "I wanted to wait till they teleported via god country out and get the treasure. But, now that the room is gone, the chest has become theirs too. Even the tower...having been pierced through 6,000km, the engravings about have been gravely damaged, it's only about 20% functional. The tower is now useless."

"Let's go back." He looked at the other two. "The chest has been taken by the invaders, the valuable engravings left by the knights have been greatly damaged and are now extremely weak, the tower is useless."

"Hm." Men bu and La Di mo nodded.

"At least we got the inheritance." Pu Ai sighed softly, "At least with that, our race has a future."

Earth recognized early on the importance of inheritance and culture.

And to the trillions of races in the universe...

Every race had countless years of techniques and training methods accumulated throughout the years. These were the most important things to a race. When all the top warriors of a race are killed, the surviving weak undyings would be the only ones remembering the techniques they had, these were insufficient to strengthening an entire race.

Without the countless techniques...over the long passages of time, they could face destruction again. As for gaining strength, there was almost no way to do so.

With the race's techniques...now they had hope.

"Tower, self destruct." Pu Ai ordered, "You will leave with us."

"Yes master."

...

Within the vast god country, the three aboriginals appeared in

mid air.

"God master."

"Where's the elder?"

"Why hasn't the elder returned?" The other emperors asked.

La Di Mo, Men Bu and Pu Ai had grief in their eyes. Pu Ai pointed at the space pathway: "Crumble!" The entire pathway instantly crumbled.

"The elder...he has fallen for the race!" Pu Ai said softly.

The other emperors were stunned.

"But his death has given our race our inheritance!" Pu Ai howled. "The countless techniques from before the great disaster, techniques suitable for our race people, we've retrieved them all. With this, our race will grow and will rise again!"

"Rise! Rise! Rise!"

The emperors all felt grief from the loss of their elder. At the same time, they also felt a strong burning faith, and hope for their future.

Their race...would rise again!

Chapter 847: Gold Armored Beast

Pu Ai destroyed the pathway and didn't care anymore about what happened within the destroyed tower. They were now focused on nurturing the later generations of Yan Ji warriors.

Within the tower.

The skinny Purple Clock looked malevolent. A purple membrane was glowing on the surface of his body, and the pressure emanated throughout as he stared at the silhouette.

Luo Feng naturally flapped his wings and smiled at him.

In terms of build, Luo Feng was considered normal amongst the trillions of races. This Purple Clock emperor was 1.6m tall and skinny, it made Luo Feng seem bigger.

"I underestimated you." Purple Clock said hoarsely.

"I didn't expect you to be so scheming too." Luo Feng said softly.

"The treasure was mine, but I didn't expect you to get it in the end. After Gold Cang's death you probably got a bunch of the treasure." Purple Clock gripped his scaled claws tightly. Obviously he was raging within, as he had thought he would get all the treasure. But now he had only gotten a fraction of it. Of course he would be angry!

"The treasure should be yours?"

Luo Feng mocked, "There's Piercing Tiger, Night emperor, Ice Blade and Gold Cang's treasure within too! This tower's treasure... should be the Yan Ji people's! Which of it is yours?"

"I won the final battle, it should naturally be mine." He snorted coldly

"Battle after battle with the warriors falling one after another, leaving only the two of us." Luo Feng laughed. "During this battle... any survivor is a victor, and I'm the true victor."

"Scheming." Purple Clock snorted.

He had burnt his undying body, and spent a flame god crystal to kill Gold Cang. Yet, most of the treasure ended up with Luo Feng.

"You are not too bad."

"First, you hide your strength even though you could deal with me. Yet you'd rather burn 3% of your undying body to hide your strength. Making that Gold Cang...fight it out against the others, such as Night emperor, Ice Blade, Piercing Tiger and even up to the last moment, you still made me go all out! It's obvious, that you made us use up Gold Cang's strength before finally using yours." Luo Feng said, "I'm nowhere as scheming as you. The only thing is that I managed to hold out!"

"Cackle..."

Purple Clock let our an ear piercing laughter. "Well said, I've outdone you, but your defense and techniques are still stronger than mine."

"However!"

"The treasure will still be mine!" His voice resounded within the ditch as he rushed straight at Luo Feng.

The moment he moved, Luo Feng flapped his wings and unleashed strike travel.

Xiu!

His speed accelerated as he rushed in an arc and fled through the pathways.

"You can't escape!" Purple Clock had a clock silhouette about his body as he chased.

Shua! Shua!

The two of them got further and further. Even the emperor limit Gold Cang couldn't manage all the twists and turns in the tower that well, and had relied on other methods to slow down Luo Feng.

As for the weaker Purple Clock, he had no way to stop Luo Feng... Luo Feng instantly got so far that he was out of sight.

He was out of sight and couldn't be scanned.

"Bastard." Purple Clock raged, unhappy, "I must kill you, I must."

Luo Feng had gotten most of the treasure and he knew about Purple clock's great secret...that ancient clock.

These two points had made Purple Clock want to kill him.

"I must use everything to kill him."

"A strong trump card is ones hidden ability. The moment the others know about my ancient clock, they will be prepared. And the super beings...may make a move against me to take my treasure."

"I have to kill him as soon as possible."

"Chase."

He flew as hard as he could. Even though he couldn't see Luo Feng, he could only use his max speed to fly out of the tower.

******

Luo Feng flew out of the core area and through the living quarters, finally flying out of the entrance and out of the tower.

"I'm out." He looked about at the vast ground about, smiling.

"I was chased so much in there."

"I have no way to unleash my strength within the tower, it was tiring. The pathway was at most 1km wide. The golden horned beast would be squashed within." Luo Feng smiled and immediately swapped bodies. It took less than a second...for a huge beast to appear in mid air.

It was over 100km long and completely golden with thick limbs and gold wings. Even it's eyes were dark gold in color.

"Howl..." Hot air burst from its nostrils.

"I haven't truly fought since acquiring the King armor. Purple Clock will be the first one." The beast lay on the ground, it easily pushed it aside and lay there. To the beast, the thick layers of mud and gravel was like air resistance to a human on earth.

...

The beast stared at the entrance, and it was almost like a giant waiting for an ant to appear.

"This human is weak and cannot teleport. As long as he gets discovered outside the tower, he cannot escape, I can teleport to him!"

"Human, you cannot escape!" Purple Clock became a beam of light and flew out the entrance of the tower.

Sou!

The moment he was out, he madly unleashed his undying energy about, wanting to scan in all directions. He also relied on his scanners and released his law domain...in all, he was using everything to locate the human as quickly as possible.

"Ah!" He was shocked to discover the huge beast before him, he looked up at it.

The beast that was lying down was still over 80km tall. Their size difference was like a normal human looking up at a beast that was ten times taller than the Himalayas.

"What a huge beast, where did it come from? Demon clan? Space Beast?" Purple Clock looked on curiously.

"Howl!"

The beast had been waiting patiently. The moment Purple Clock appeared, he didn't even hesitate in waving his right claw. The claw was much thicker through the beast god transformation. It was one entire time bigger than a normal Golden horned beast's claw, that huge claw was terrifying.

Hua!

One slash!

The space around crumbled as the gravel and mud flew about. The beast and Purple Clock were thrown into a space slit.

Rumble...

One was patiently waiting, and the other was stunned and wanted to test the strength of this huge beast. All in all, the huge claw landed straight on Purple Clock.

"Rumble..." Within the space slit, countless space flowed madly around Purple Clock as he steadied himself.

"Howl..." The beast rushed over.

"What a terrifying beast!"

"He's actually pinnacle emperor!" Purple Clock was shocked.

Hua!

The beast was huge and had the King armor on. With just a flap of its wings, its speed was several times that of his human body. Purple Clock controlled three fire clocks to defend himself only to have them slashed apart.

"Its speed is even more terrifying than that human!" They had exchanged two blows, and Purple Clock was already knocked back.

"At my pinnacle form, this beast won't have any advantage."

"However, I lost great amounts of my undying energy in the tower. Hence, my strength isn't even half of its peak." He was angry and anxious.

He really wanted to look for Luo Feng and not fight this beast.

"What's going on, where did that human go? How did this beast suddenly appear? Right...this beast is very similar to the legendary silver winged emperor, with it's huge body, crown on its head, thick limbs, and the wings. The only difference is it's color, it's

completely gold. Changing color is easy, but this should be silver wing emperor. Silver wing is from the human camp...that Yang was a human too, this beast could be invited here by him."

"Bastard!"

"It's the worst case scenario, the moment he exited the tower he called for help! This gold beast must be the first one, and others may arrive soon." Purple Clock had no choice but to decide to leave.

Shua!

He teleported and vanished.

Only after he vanished did the beast vanish too, and the earth body appeared.

"Hm..." Luo Feng nodded. "Without a doubt, the beast has emperor pinnacle strength. Even though it's lacking in the law comprehension, its law fusion amplifies it ten times. Along with the pinnacle technique, it makes it have pinnacle emperor strength."

"But the weakness is still obvious."

"A true pinnacle emperor is either proficient in teleportation or time stop, they all have powerful law abilities." Luo Feng thought, "Looks like I still need to get stronger, I'm still lacking."

The beast was very strong, but it didn't have teleportation or time stop. The two were absolute techniques for those either trained in space or the time laws.

Luo Feng lacked a trump move.

But he had the Sha Wu wings and King armor for survival.

Sou! He became a silver beam of light and swiftly left the space slit, returning to Yan Ji main continent and taking a ship, flying at sub light speed...

...

In the distant air above an icy ground.

"Human!"

"Human!" The scaled and malevolent Purple Clock clenched his fists, as large amounts of energy causing explosions about that caused tornadoes of snow and ice over 10,000 km around.

"Taking the treasure that belonged to me, and the treasure of the tower!"

"And he knows my secret."

"I...must definitely kill you, I must." His eyes gleamed madly as he pondered on a plan to deal with Luo Feng.

Chapter 848: Locked Treasure Chest

A black disc flew above the main continent. Luo Feng lifted two cups of wine within the control room.

"Night, Piercing Tiger."

"Even though I wanted to save you two, I had no power." Luo Feng said softly. "The evil of the universe caused two warriors to fall, and the strong survived. Let's hope that I'll see you again in the future."

"True Yan and the Primal Chaos city leader told me before, there are dangers all around. One always has to be cautious. Back then, the master of the Yun Mo planet Hu Yan Bo had left one final saying to Babata to tell me, for me to always have respect for the universe and never get arrogant." Luo Feng sighed. "This was formed from experience."

"I had thought...a pinnacle emperor would be absolutely safe on Yan Ji continent."

"I had thought...an emperor limit would be safe within the entire outer region wars."

"I had thought...having teleportation would make it almost impossible to die."

"But the fact of the matter is that within a tower here in the main continent, Night, Piercing Tiger, Ice Blade and Gold Cang...all fell. Even an emperor limit fell." Luo Feng sighed, "And Gold Cang lost to one that was weaker than him, one cannot get careless at all."

The results of the battle made him reflect a lot.

The special environment of the tower made it so that no one could teleport or scan, and this naturally resulted in such a huge loss. If they fought in the air above Yan Ji continent, Gold Cang who was proficient in time laws, he naturally wouldn't be able to stop those proficient in teleportation. Those that couldn't win

would have long fled.

"Can't be helped..."

"This is the universe, and just a small tower of the Yan ji continent. Like countless other dangerous secret regions, there are too many unknown dangers." Luo Feng thought.

"No matter when, I must always be on alert, and never get arrogant. If I can get such a huge lucky encounter, other geniuses may have gotten them too, or even better."

This battle ended with four emperors dying!

What kind of tragedy was this!

It made Luo Feng realize the importance of caution. When he got the Sha Wu Wings and King and general armor before, he had gotten confident and was proud. Just like how the city leader had regarded his encounters...his encounters were simply average.

The King and general armor only adds to his exterior strength. As his own strength rises, the usage would diminish.

"Hm?"

"A call request?" Luo Feng frowned.

******

Virtual universe, within a bar of Hong alliance city, Luo Feng sat in the corner with another human.

"Tian Chen, why the rush to find me?" He looked at this human before him. This was a friend he had made for many years. Tian Chen had grown up in the same time as Night emperor, they were both core members of the Huge Axe Dojo. The two of them had always been rivals, yet it was a deep and complicated relationship.

"Yang, Night is dead." Tian Chen's eyebrows were very long, it made him look very serious all the time. He exclaimed, "Before he died, he left me a message, saying that Gold Cang killed him. He died on Yan Ji main continent and there are only three human

emperors there including him. You are there too, and you are his good friend right. Do you know anything?"

"Right, he was killed by Gold Cang." Luo Feng exclaimed. "He was forced by Gold Cang to self destruct."

"Who is Gold Cang?" Tian Chen asked.

Even though Gold Cang was renowned on the main continent, he was afterall from another race, a warrior from the automaton camp. Tian Chen naturally didn't know who he was. Even within the Hong Alliance's over three million emperors, he only knew a small group of them.

"Gold Cang is dead too." Luo Feng said.

"Wa..." Tian Chen was shocked, nodding, "Hm, life and death is part of the universe. Dying is inevitable. Come, let's drink."

"Ok." Luo Feng drank with him.

Luo Feng didn't wish to speak too much about the matter. Him and Purple Clock were fated to settle one day, he didn't wish to drag Tian Chen into it. Whether it was him or Purple Clock, they both had huge amount of treasures on them with powerful survival tactics. And even though Purple Clock didn't get the chest of the tower...he still managed to get close to half of all the other treasure.

The large amount of treasures represented huge wealth.

Purple Clock was completely able to buy flame god crystals and other treasures to strengthen himself.

"The next time we battle will be even more dangerous."

"He is afterall an emperor that has killed an emperor limit." Luo Feng didn't dare get careless. He didn't know that including Gold Cang, Purple Clock had killed two emperor limits in total.

"I have to think of a way to settle him."

Purple Clock thought of Luo Feng as an enemy and was working

on a way to kill him. Naturally, Luo Feng was doing the same.

******

Within his world ring, the mosha body and golden horned beast appeared.

"Tower chest." Luo Feng saw the item right in the middle, the chained chest.

"All of the other items added together will still be far from this chest." Luo Feng thought. "just the protection on it alone cost tens of billions of mixed elements. The treasure within must be shocking as well. Hm, let's try and see if the mosha transformation can fake a Yan Ji person and open the chest."

"If it's not possible, then I'll have to take a trip to Primal Chaos city to see my teacher and ask for his help."

This chained chest, Luo Feng thought that even his teacher True Yan would have difficulty opening.

To the city leader however, it would be extremely easy.

Even though he did not want to bother his teacher, for the treasure within, he was willing to take the trip. His teacher would easily open it.

"Let's give it a shot."

"Change!"

Black clothed Luo Feng became energy and reformed into a six armed Yan Ji clansman. There were remains of corpses all about the tower before, and many of them were sector lord pinnacle bones, their strongest part of their bodies were the bones. Like the Yun Mo planet master's disciple, even after tens of thousands of years, his gold bones were still perfect.

Sector lord pinnacle, their bodies were strong, they were the strongest part of the body.

The bones of a sector lord were closely compared to the body of

an undying. Hence, in terms of decay, the bones could last a lot longer. Luo Feng had planned to deceive the chest into opening, hence he brought one of the bones back. Using its genetic makeup, he cloned the make up of a Yan Ji clansman.

"Natural ability...cloning!"

The Mosha clansman changed its energy and took on one of Qiu Chi Ka.

Afterall, he had only seen one living Yan Ji clansman, Qiu Chi Ka. As for the fallen clansmen about...he didn't have a guarantee as to whether a dead warrior's energy would work. Hence he picked the living one he saw.

"Talisman." Mosha Luo Feng flipped his hand to produce a talisman. It had his spirit imprint within. The three bodies all had the same imprint, naturally it recognized him as its master and melded with his body.

"Everything is ready."

"Genetics, energy, talisman, I have everything. I wonder if it'll work." Luo Feng walked to the chest.

The twelve chains were still linked to the metal fragments and binding the chest shut. The chest had mysterious engravings all around. Luo Feng took a deep breath and extended his right hand to rub it.

Di!

The chest's scanners activated.

"It must work, it must." Luo Feng anticipated within. Even though he could easily get the city leader to open it, within, he would rather not if he didn't need to. He wanted to rely on himself. Only if there was no other way, would he look for help to open it.

"I wonder how advanced this chest's scanning system is. Let's hope it works."

...

The scanning system of the chest actually wasn't as advanced as Luo Feng had thought. It only scanned two things. One was the talisman and the other was the life energy! As to the genetic makeup...different races naturally had different make ups, but there were ways to deceive it.

The life energy however was always different, different forms of life had different energies, different races had completely different energies as well.

Humans had different energies from each other.

However, among the entire race, they were still considered similar.

Humans, when compared to the bug race however had completely different energies, and this was almost impossible to imitate. Other than the very few special races that had special abilities, these natural abilities were things given to them by the universe. It was something that couldn't be trained.

Di.

Life energy...confirmed!

Talisman...confirmed!

Pa! The lock on the chest began to loosen.

"Hahaha..." Luo Feng who was waiting anxiously revealed a smile and flipped it open.

Within the chest lay three world rings.

With a scan of world energy, he found that the three rings didn't have a master.

"I'll look at them one by one." Luo Feng began to check the rings, sending world energy into the first one. This had a vast world within, there were metal mountains within and countless valuable liquid rivers. There were also many E grade ships, along with

countless items almost like locusts.

All the goods were in huge numbers.

"Damn."

"This, this, this..." He was shocked.

He lifted the second ring and the third.

"Damn."

"This...I've struck it rich."

"A race's treasures, even when the Yan Ji race was still strong back then, this should still be a huge portion of it." Luo Feng was shocked from the amount of treasure. He had no way to know that back then, the knights knew that they wouldn't survive, hence they had placed all their wealth into the hundred true sacrificial towers.

This was 1% of the entire race's wealth!

******

Chapter 849: Engraved Weapon

The treasure left behind by the people of Yan Ji was shocking.

"My god."

"I've really struck it..." Luo Feng blinked, and his body was trembling. "I'm rich, really rich! It's no wonder Gold Cang and the others went all out for this. Even Night and Piercing Tiger were filled with hope. Looks like they've seen more than me and knew of how shocking the treasure is."

"Shocking."

"It's madness." Luo Feng muttered.

The three rings all had different levels of treasures, of which there was a message in each of them.

With a flip, three metal fragments appeared in his hand. On them was a blur of Yan Ji continent words, they explained the treasures within.

"Survivors, the rings have different leveled treasures for the sector lord, domain lord, universe level, star and star traveller level. Even though they are very cheap, they are huge in numbers, and are able to fill the entire world ring. In total, they add up to a huge amount of wealth, you all have to use them wisely. Considering the trillions of years needed to nurture our race, control the portions given out. Nurturing the later generations is the most important, because these weak but growing clansmen are our future. These world rings...represent our future."

"Clansmen, within this ring are treasures for undyings. Even though the numbers cannot compare to the ring before, it still adds up to a huge sum. Survival will be extremely hard after the tragedy, the undyings will have to open their own living spaces, they require enough treasures to explore the universe."

"Clansmen, this final ring holds a complete engraved weapon.

This is our clan's highest achievement. Over countless years, the knights worked hard to construct this, and they only managed to construct not even a hundred of them. And these weapons along with the other treasures from us knights have been separated into hundred towers. Some of the towers have the engraved weapons while others have knight's weapons. Even though...these weapons have little usage for knights, they are still priced as high as other items used by knights, because they have great abilities. As for how to use them and what they can do, the weapons themselves have explanations on them. Even though there's only one engraved weapon here, its price far exceeds the other two rings!"

Luo Feng looked at the three fragments and was stunned.

Three world rings.

One was for below undying...sector lord, domain lord etc...the weaker clansmen.

One was for undyings.

One was for the top of the race...This was the engraved weapon!

"Absurd."

"This engraved weapon is their highest achievement? Constructed over countless years, not even a hundred of them have been made? Its price far exceeds the other two rings?" Luo Feng retrieved the only weapon within the third world ring with a thought.

Hua.

The weapon was small and delicate, similar to an armband, and its material was mainly black with some Hazy Star belt feeling.

"How do I use this, it has an explanation?" Luo Feng pondered but couldn't understand it, sending some world energy into the armband to investigate the weapon. His world energy was imbued with his own spirit imprint as it activated the band.

The weapon instantly recognized its owner.

"So convenient." Luo Feng easily got it to recognize him as its owner, as a message began to relay within his consciousness.

The message explained the details about the weapon.

It was called the Space Lock band, and there were less than a hundred in the universe.

The most mysterious thing about the Yan Ji race was its Yan Ji engravings. It was something the ancestors chanced upon and comprehended a long time ago. It was a path suitable for the people of Yan Ji. The tower uses the most basic form of the engravings.

The tower has countless engravings, the final ones have space abilities.

However as these were solid engravings, they required a carrier and had a huge limitation. It couldn't be used effectively in battle. Hence, the ancestors created the stronger void engravings. Every engraved weapon has complex void engravings within, and the moment its energy is triggered it would cause the engravings to scatter around space.

Spread over an area, controlling anything within.

The optimum energy source is an undying crystal It is best not to use one's own undying energy, as the weapon energy consumption is incredibly shocking. And once the source is depleted, if one uses his own undying energy, it would be burning his own undying body. That wouldn't be worth it at all.

The universe has all sorts of undying crystals. The stronger the energy, the longer it can be used.

The Space Lock band spreads its void engravings over a domain and the space ripples within are locked.

It disables teleportation!

Hence, this is a space warrior's nightmare. Of course, it would also affect the user, making both parties unable to teleport! Hence...this band is most suited for one proficient in time laws. To the time law warriors, who are able to unleash time stop and disabling their enemies from teleporting...their advantage would be huge.

This band has void engravings within.

Hence as long as one brings it around, with the user as the source, it can unleash its space lockdown anywhere, and will be much more efficient than the towers. The towers' spaces have limits, its very hard to bring it around with the user, and in battle, simply destroying the engravings in the towers would stop the effect. The void engravings however cannot be destroyed.

The space lock area can be separated into three levels.

First level, area with a diameter of 10,000 km will be affected.

Second level, diameter of 100,000 km will be affected.

Third level, diameter of one million km will be affected.

The larger the area, the more the energy usage will be. Only use it against a true enemy and during a life or death crisis. Use it sparingly. This was the message, and it wished for the warriors of the race to rely on the engraved weapons to protect their people and rise up again!

"Damn!"

"Damn!"

"Damn!" Luo Feng felt his blood boil, as he was extremely exited, cursing!

"I, I've, I've really made it. This is huge." Luo Feng reflected on the information again. He had truly gotten a huge reward from this encounter. When he first saw the engravings within the tower, he was already eyeing them.

During the battles, he would get the advantage.

However once the battles grew more intense and the towers began to crumble, and with the limits of space within, Luo Feng could only ponder.

"Engraved weapon? Yan Ji engravings?"

"This is the path the ancestors of the Yan Ji people happened to chance upon?" Luo Feng exclaimed, "Impressive, there are solid and void engravings."

The three world rings, especially the third one, truly made Luo Feng happy and surprised.

******

"Let's give it a shot." He couldn't bear to wait as he extended his left arm.

Hua!

The band stuck straight to his arm and melded with his skin, simultaneously the black surface cracked open, revealing an energy input spot.

"It requires a high undying energy source?" Luo Feng smiled. "I still have two flame god crystals, and every one of it is worth two hundred million points. Also, just one alone is akin to a low emperor self destruct."

Flame god crystal, thunder god crytals etc...

They were condensed undying energy, which were able to be used as energy sources or bombs! In truth, back when the automatons designed them, they were made to give large amounts of pure energy. Later on, they were discovered to be good in battle too, especially the flame god crystal, it became a bomb for many warriors.

"Pa." Luo Feng flipped his hand and put the crystal into the input, taking up only a third of the space.

Chi chi...the input immediately sealed up and the energy poured in.

KA! The surface sealed up.

The entire band was now solid.

"Haha..." With a thought, his silver armor covered the band and protected the band well. Actually, the construction material of this band was incredibly expensive, and the chained chest was even more solid, where even knights would find it hard to destroy it.

"Space Lock!"

The band had long recognized him as its owner, he could easily trigger it.

"Smallest area, diameter of 10,000 km. Space lock." Luo Feng easily triggered it.

With the two hundred million points flame god crystal within, it had sufficient energy to trigger. Weng...with Luo Feng's arm as the core, a formless energy instantly spread in all directions, it was a ripple similar to that of space energy.

Diameter of 10,000 km.

The skies, mountains, grass and mud below...had translucent engravings appear throughout. These void engravings of the Yan Ji appeared occasionally, even with a punch, it hit nothing, because there was no way to destroy these void engravings.

One had to destroy the arm band to destroy the engravings.

"Haha..." Luo feng smiled with glee, surveying his surroundings and looking up and down.

It was real.

And with the Mosha body's sense of space, it could clearly feel the universe space within the 10 km area locked down, without a single ripple of space, one couldn't teleport at all.

Chapter 850: A Bucket of Cold Water

"Space lock, it's truly space lock. Good, good good." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed with excitement.

"Space lock!"

"This is like having great comprehension of space itself." Luo feng was excited as he was clear on just how valuable this engraved weapon was.

The space laws could be split into teleportation, twist and lock.

Every one of them had their own sub divisions. As long as one reached a high level in any one of them, they would be able to get the recognition of the space law. However, to reach the limit of any one of them was extremely hard. Any warrior who is able to do any of these would...normally all be at pinnacle emperor level.

Few high emperors could do it.

As this relied on law comprehension, some high emperors may be weaker in certain aspects, but strong in their law comprehension, hence they could use it.

"With space lockdown!"

"Combined with my Sha Wu wings...I, Luo Feng, truly have the right to stand ahead of countless of undyings." Luo Feng was happy within.

...

He was too excited, dreaming about different scenarios.

"Ah, right, shut off the device. This consumes energy constantly. Hm, it'll hit ten seconds in a bit, shut off!" Luo feng deactivated it. The engravings that appeared throughout the 10,000 km area all disappeared.

"I wonder how much energy it took up." Luo Feng checked to see.

The armband screen displayed...energy remaining 98.9%.

"My god." Luo Feng stared wide eyed, "Only 98.9% left? This, I only used it for ten seconds and in its smallest area, and this is a flame god crystal worth two hundred million points, its usage is so fast?"

In just ten short seconds, it used 1.1% of the energy within the crystal. Each one of these were worth 200 million. That meant that in ten seconds it used 2.2 million points, while sixty seconds would use 13.2 million points.

"A minute of it uses 13.2 million points?"

"One minute alone would use up an official's wealth?" Luo Feng took a deep breath. He finally got an understanding about the fairness of the universe. Such a heavenly weapon, did not require any prior training. Just equip it with an energy source and it could use space lockdown. If the energy usage was low on top of that, it would be unbelievable.

One minute, would consume 13.2 million points.

"It's no wonder the ancestors of the Yan Ji people said that its usage is shocking and should only be used in a crisis. Use it sparingly. Right...unless it is absolute necessary, I cannot use it. This is a black hole that sucks up unlimited resources!" Luo Feng shook his head.

****

After acquiring the engraved weapon, he was extremely excited. However, the extreme energy consumption was like a bucket of cold water over everything, it woke him up.

"I cannot use it unless it's absolutely necessary!"

"I definitely cannot use the engraved weapon, unless it's the last resort. Otherwise it would simply be a huge loss." Luo Feng muttered. Even so, he was still very happy. This space lock band far exceeded the amount of wealth from the previous two rings, it

was true. This was an absolute trump card against the space law warriors.

"I have to verify the contents of the two rings."

"Just how much are the treasures in the other two rings worth."

...

The two world rings along with some treasure from Gold Cang and the others, Luo Feng had to calculate them on a whole. However, as the numbers and variety were too huge, he and Babata worked hard but were still unable to find an accurate price.

...

Via the virtual universe network, via some friends in the Hong alliance, via the shops in the Hong alliance city, and via his status as the disciple of the primal chaos city leader and other pathways.

It took a total of seven days for him to finally get an estimate for all the goods.

"The first ring, even though its most valuable items are only suitable for sector lords, the amount is huge. The countless items can form a continent...In total, it's worth about 221 billion mixed elements."

"The second ring holds items for undyings. Even though the number of items are much lesser, however in all, it's worth about 285 billion mixed elements."

"The third ring only has that one engraved weapon. These are extremely rare in humanity itself, they are almost non existent. There's no accurate price for it. This weapon...it cannot be priced with money, and it can only be exchanged with other valuable items. It's price far exceeds the two other rings before."

"The goods I got from Gold Cang and the others are worth about fifty three billion."

"In total."

"There is a complete engraved weapon and the items are worth 560 billion mixed elements."

Within his study in Yu Xiang mountain.

The palm size Babata sat and looked at the screen with Luo Feng, they were both stunned by the final tally of numbers. Both of them exchanged glances.

"Luo Feng, you've really struck it big." Babata blinked.

"Haha..." Luo Feng smiled.

Indeed.

The amount he got from the tower felt like it gave him a whole new life. Ever since becoming the disciple of the primal chaos city leader, he had interacted with his other seniors. Most interaction was with Gold Axe knight and some other knights like Evil Gun knight. It opened his perspectives. He had also checked before and knew how shocking these absolute warriors' wealth was.

Normal undyings usually had about 10,000 mixed elements.

Officials usually had about ten million.

Emperors usually had about ten billion. This was the standard for high and pinnacle emperors, and emperor limits would normally have between tens of billions to hundreds of billions.

Warriors like True Yan, who are invincible amongst emperors and akin to a normal knight, had wealth of hundreds of billions or even more.

Of course...

These were only estimates. In truth they would spend most of their wealth on ships, plant life forms, weapons, treasures etc... they normally kept very little. And for True Yan to so easily exchange the Beast God seven forms for Luo Feng, to have so much liquid cash around...that was shocking.

Even with his earnings this time from the tower, Luo Feng

wouldn't be able to produce so much cash.

And as one got stronger, especially advancing towards the knight's level, the treasures they needed were extremely rare and few, many couldn't be purchased with money. They could only barter! Like this engraved weapon, it couldn't be bought anywhere.

The wealth of the warriors were mostly fixed assets.

Luo Feng's assets were huge, the Sha Wu wings, Beast God armament, engraved weapon, inheritance crystal...these were all fixed assets and they weren't worth selling, because he could get cash for them. But, cash may not necessarily get some treasures. Luo Feng may need a certain treasure in the future.

But that treasure may not be bought.

He could then publicly announce, "I will use this engraved weapon with the space lock down ability to exchange for a certain treasure." This would have a much higher chance of succeeding. Warriors wanting to get the weapon for their students and so on would then be willing to barter with him.

"I'll keep the most valuable treasures."

"Those that are useless to me or common in the universe, it's best to sell them as soon as possible." Luo Feng thought.

The best items were those that fit him.

Other emperor treasures may not necessarily fit him.

...

Once everything has been decided, Luo Feng began to secretly deal with the large amount of goods, like the sea of items in the first ring. The Hong alliance city did business mostly with emperors. Hence, there was no way to sell these normal goods to them. And with such numbers...the shops couldn't deal with so much either, he could only sell it to the Virtual Universe Company.

Luckily the buying department of the company showed him

respect as the disciple of the city leader, they didn't dare push the price down too low.

"Sold!"

"The useless and common items have all been changed to cash." Luo Feng was very busy but happy.

******

Just as he was selling treasures through his various connections, there was a day he suddenly received a mail from a good friend in Hong alliance city.

The details were simple... "Yang, I heard you received treasure from a sacrificial tower in Yan Ji main continent?"

"What." Luo Feng was shocked from the mail.

The human Yang was his alias. After all, the news of Luo Feng being the disciple of the city leader had long spread about. The warriors in the universe had all been searching for this Luo Feng, he naturally didn't dare reveal his identity. The identity of Yang was low profile, just like a normal emperor.

However now that this identity was involved in the treasure of a sacrificial tower, it would make this low profile character gain the attention of many greedy people who were eyeing the treasures.

If someone like Gold Cang had gotten the treasure instead, the other emperors would not dare go mess with him.

But Yang?

That newbie?

True treasures could only be held by absolute warriors. It would be strange if no one planned to steal from him!

"Mo Na emperor, where are you?" Luo Feng immediately contacted him.

...

After awhile, within a restaurant in Hong alliance city, Luo Feng chatted with a fox tailed handsome Mo Na emperor.

"Mo Na, where did you get that information?" Luo Feng was anxious. "Which bastard spread it, isn't this sabotage?"

"I was shocked when I heard it too. If it was false, this bastard must be completely evil." Mo Na shook his head and smiled, "However the news that had spread seems too real, and it even sent out accurate coordinates in the universe. They are...and there is indeed a tower there. The news checks out, Yang, you did get a treasure from the tower there! And many warriors have actually gone to check out the coordinates and tower there. It has spread throughout Yan Ji continent...even some emperors at Star tower and other places have heard of it."

Luo Feng's expression was ugly.

Coordinates?

"Purple Clock emperor!!!" He raged within.

Chapter 851: Rumors

One had to know that when Mo Na emperor sent over the mail, Luo Feng had already suspected it was connected to Purple Clock emperor. Now that he knew about the news of the tower being public, he could almost confirm it was him. This conclusion was also based on Purple Clock's insane character.

"Purple Clock, I haven't begun to search for you and you've already started looking for trouble." Luo Feng cursed within, "Looks like you really want to kill me!"

"You've got guts."

"You've really got guts, you aren't afraid that I'd share the news of your ancient clock."

Actually when they left the tower, Purple Clock had thought hard and understood one thing. If the human had no way to deal with him, he wouldn't let it rest. It was very likely the human would spread the news of his ancient clock, and since the human would fan the flames of his treasures, it was better to force him out early, killing him was the right thing to do.

If the human wanted to kill him and get the ancient clock, he naturally would spread the news of it. Even so...it meant that the threat of that human was even bigger. This was to the point that he had the ambition to take his treasure, he should be destroyed even earlier.

Hence, Purple clock had to make the first move!

"Vicious."

"Vicious. I wanted to wait till I got a bit stronger before dealing with you. Since you've already issued the challenge...then let's do it!" Luo Feng was filled with killing intent. "A kind person gets bullied, they all think that my persona Yang is easy to bully. I'll have to search for a chance...to completely massacre him."

Battling over and over to deal with the greedy warriors was a very stupid thing.

The best day to deal with this was to make it a true bloodbath by showing his strength and scaring off the others. It would make them all know just how powerful and dangerous Yang was. Naturally they wouldn't dare pick a fight with him without a grudge. They wouldn't unnecessarily come try their luck.

Afterall, there were a whole bunch of emperor limits with large amounts of wealth in the universe.

As long as they were strong enough...no one would bother them.

...

Mo Na looked at Luo Feng said softly, "Yang, are you ok?"

"No problem, I was just thinking of the trouble this is going to cause." Luo Feng smiled coldly. "Looks like it's one of those with a grudge against me."

"Don't be afraid to call me for help, we human warriors aren't that easy to mess with." Mo Na spoke. "If you get friends from the human alliance...we'll just fight it out."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"Mo Na emperor, thanks for informing me. Otherwise I would still have been oblivious." Luo Feng said.

"Ah, it's not your fault. This news was spread amongst the other races and later to the human camp. I came immediately the moment I heard." Mo Na said.

Luo Feng nodded, "This is troublesome, I'll leave first to ponder on how to deal with it."

"Go on." Mo Na told him. "Be careful, the outer region war has a great mix of other races, you have to be vicious with the greedy ones and make them fear you. If you are soft on them, more of them will come."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

Looks like...

It was time to massacre!

****

Yan Ji main continent.

"The news is real. There have been some emperors that have broken into the tower and searched it." Two automatons sat facing each other. The taller one emphasized, "They discovered a G grade treasure room and a destroyed room, but the treasures were already taken!"

"G grade metal room?" The smaller automaton was shocked, "Looks like there truly was a treasure."

"Many other race warriors in the main continent have already checked up on Yang through many routes. However, no one has found him." The taller one said hoarsely. "The moment anyone discovers him, it would be a big fight, and many other races would jump in."

"Pa Ci." The shorter one smiled, "Will you join them?"

"Haha, this human is weak. He's probably a punk that just became an emperor. What right does he have to hold such treasure, I will definitely go." The taller automaton said.

"The both of us should cooperate, we'll also split the treasure in half."

"Ok!"

...

The two automatons formed their alliance. In Yan Ji main continent, the emperors were usually very free, since emperor fights hardly ever reached a fatal stage. Now that the news of the treasure of the tower had spread, a fire had erupted within the entire continent. Even the warriors in Star tower and other places

rushed over.

A storm was brewing in Yan Ji continent.

Even the officials around had been ordered to scan and constantly search for the human Yang, the weird thing was...

They couldn't find him!

"Cowardly human."

"Despicable human."

"He must have been scared off, leaving the outer region wars." Many warriors on the main continent cursed.

The most worried and anxious one was still Purple Clock emperor.

Within a dark ice mountain.

He sat crossed legged on a frozen rock, His eyes gleaming coldly, while muttering, "The entire continent has been searched over and over, where did he go? We can't find him? Hmph, I've already forced his hand and yet he still hasn't even revealed the secret of my ancient clock."

"Looks like this human Yang has huge ambitions."

"He's obviously guessed that I let out the news. Theoretically, he should have done the same about me. Yet he hasn't spoken...looks like he's waiting for the chance to kill me and take my treasure, he must have some guarantee."

"Human..."

Purple Clock was actually quite fearful of Luo Feng.

Because back in the tower, Luo Feng had survived with his terrifying speed and defense. And he was able to hide his life energy almost completely until he was sucked into the world ring. All these things showed that Luo Feng had some terrifying moves.

Would Purple Clock underestimate such an opponent?

"I have close to 100 billion indigo gems this time." He thought. "I better prepare well. This human has completely hidden himself, and the moment he shows himself it would be crazy."

******

Whether it was Luo Feng or Purple Clock.

They were both very clear, on the fact that after they left the tower, they would be sworn enemies. When Purple Clock revealed the news about the tower...the two of them were set to fight to the death!

...

Within the twenty sixth camp, Luo Feng lay within his pool. The mountain peak had white snow all over, the pool however was warm. Mist filled up the area and Luo Feng lay there casually.

Right, while the entire Yan Ji continent was searching for him, he was within the camp. Actually, the moment he got that large amount of treasure, he swiftly headed towards the camp, because he had deals to sell stuff with the Virtual Universe Company and others. He naturally had to come back to the base.

"Looking for me?"

"How will they find me when I'm in the base?" Luo Feng lay relaxed within the pool.

Suddenly, three silhouettes flew over.

"The Virtual Universe Company people have come." A silver armor appeared on his body and his wings unfolded. He flew out of the water and onto the peak.

"How do you do? I'm from the Virtual Universe Company. The leader of the group was a handsome three eyed man with a golden robe.

He was here on orders of the boss. The boss didn't even reveal the status of the client, only telling him to not ask random questions.

This made the emperor level three eyed man know that the client was linked to the highest of levels. His boss was a knight and was one of the upper echelons, yet even he acted like that..

"I know." Luo Feng nodded, tossing out a world ring.

The three eyed man received it and scanned with his undying energy, simultaneously the ring recognized him as the owner as he tossed a scanner in. Both human and machine scanning simultaneously, he even said, "As this involves a huge amount of treasure, this may take awhile."

"No rush." Luo Feng stood there.

About three minutes later.

The scanner had finished and the emperor had finished as well.

"The goods are complete." The three eyed man smiled at Luo Feng. "The money has already been transferred, we shall not disturb you further." He was clear on how shocking the amount of wealth was involved in this deal. It exceeded over 200 billion mixed elements, this silver winged and armored warrior definitely wasn't ordinary.

...

The deal with the company was the fastest. The other routes were much more troublesome. Some were sold to people, while some were sold to shops, and some to other race warriors. As the deals were huge, many other race warriors had to come to the twenty sixth camp personally to check the goods.

The entire process took close to one month before it was completed.

"Ha..." Luo Feng stretched and lay in the pool, smiling, "It's finally over. My wealth is now about 560 billion mixed elements!"

"Such a huge sum."

"It may be a small amount to the knights, but to the emperors,

it's extremely wealthy."

"I have to think of how to use this."

"Do I use it on Deities of the world etc, or to strengthen myself?"

"Or do I use it on the 1,000 vine star eating plant and other plant life forms?"

"Or do I buy automaton weapons? After I buy them, even if I don't use them, I can sell them later. Or should I order strengthening treasures for myself and the plant life forms, however I cannot sell them back for money."

He lay in the pool and considered his options.

560 billion mixed elements, leaving it in the bank was a stupid thing to do. It was best to strengthen himself in various ways.

Chapter 852: Name Fei Mo

Spending 560 billion was easy, but spending it wisely was not so easy. Luo Feng had many dreams while laying in the pool. As there were simply too many treasures in the universe, even though he knew many of them, there were still countless others he didn't know about.

"I have several trump cards now."

"The Golden horned beast, the bug clan, the flame god crystals, space lock band." He pondered, "I should strengthen the strongest asset."

"Bug army!" Luo feng's eyes gleamed, standing quickly, "If I can make Queen Alina become an undying, as an undying queen...she can lead an undying army and that's considered invincible amongst anyone below knight level. If that succeeds, spending all of the 560 billion would still be worth it."

The more he thought about it, the more he got excited.

The queen could separately control 10,000 bug soldiers, who were all able to use law infused attacks. She may be able to use a million soldiers too, but they wouldn't be law infused attacks and only directed attacks instead.

Back then, when the queen had controlled 10,000 undyings, its power was already heavenly.

If she controlled a million?

She would be Invincible!

The more he thought about it, the more his eyes gleamed. He couldn't help it anymore, "I'll go ask Alina."

...

In his internal world, bug clan island.

Shua!

Black clothed Luo Feng appeared within the world and floated above the bug clan island.

Xiu! The absolute beauty Alina flew straight up and bowed before him, "Master."

"Alina." Luo Feng asked immediately, "How much you would need to breakthrough to undying?"

"Master, you..." She looked shocked.

"Just speak." Luo Feng said, he felt wealthy.

Alina smiled, her voice clear and crisp, "Master seems to have a shocking amount of wealth. However master, a bug queen breaking through to undying is an extremely hard thing to do, just the materials alone would cost close to 100 billion mixed elements."

"I'll buy it." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

"Let me finish." Alina said. "This is only the external requirements, there are still internal ones! The queen would have to have extremely high levels of law comprehension, be it space or time laws! Just having gold, or wood and the other basic laws isn't enough to become undying, she needs great comprehension in either space or time too."

Luo Feng frowned.

"Master."

Alina explained, "The true intellectual beings of the universe all require great law comprehension to become undying! Just the materials alone is not enough. Like humans, no matter what, they at least have to have one of the smaller laws to become undying. If they don't even have that, having treasures is useless. And a bug clan queen is the same, as one of the pinnacle races, it's extremely hard to break through. Both the materials required and the law comprehension required are extremely high."

"The cloud contact vine you use is different. The plants have low

intellect, hence they have no requirements for law comprehension, and can just evolve. And the universe would naturally give them a law suited for them after evolution."

"However such things..."

"Can only happen for the low intellectual creatures such as plant life forms, bug soldiers and so on.. The other life forms all require law comprehension." She said. "I've only comprehended the fire law, and I'm still far from comprehending the space laws. No amount of treasures can make me breakthrough."

Luo Feng was somewhat disappointed, but he understood.

Right, those bug soldiers that could be produced in bulk were purely almost mindless creatures. The cloud contact vine and star eating plant only had their basic emotions too, when they became undying, only then could they truly communicate via consciousness!

"The other intellectual begins, humans, automatons, demons, bug clan queens, gold horn race, Yan Ji aboriginals and so on, the hardest part about becoming undying for all of them is the law comprehension." Luo Feng sighed. He had initially simplified it too much. He thought that the queen could simply evolve with resources, since the soldiers definitely did so. But the queen was a true intellectual being, and the requirements for her law comprehension were very high, but hers were far from ready.

"My law comprehension is still insufficient, you don't have to prepare resources for me." She smiled, "However, when I'm almost there, I will rely on you."

"Hm, no problem." Luo Feng replied easily, he still felt disappointed within.

He had gone in full of hope only to have his dreams shattered.

******

"Right, the undying bug queen is invincible below knight level.

How could it be so easy to breakthrough." Luo Feng immediately sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe.

...

Virtual universe, Luo Feng's villa in Yu xiang primal region.

Luo Feng sat at his desk and looked at the screen, searching information on all sorts of treasures.

"Black hole weapon, able to form a small black hole at point of target, only knights and above can survive?"

"Soul laser, triggering a light beam from within a universe secret region. The moment it is triggered, a normal knight would be injured too, anything under would definitely die?"

"Wind slicer weapon, it's a special wind formed in a secret region, and even a knight hit by it would have his undying body slashed apart. This weapon is formed from the wind slicer itself, anything under knight won't be able to survive..."

"Ka Suo weapon, a special metal named after the founder, this metal has strong destructive abilities against undyings. A dagger made from this metal can instantly kill an emperor limit, destroying his undying body completely."

There were many weapons.

These were all weapons that could be ordered, and many that humans themselves created.

Luo Feng searched with the key words, anything under knight will not survive, easily flipping through 203 weapons, he stared wide eyed.

"My god."

"All of them can kill anything under knight?"

"Why do undyings seem so fragile? Also, some weapons have primal powers, they can even heavily damage knights?" Luo Feng was stunned. There were twenty one automaton weapons within,

and three human weapons. The rest were special weapons formed from special materials.

"However, it's no wonder I haven't seen anyone use any of these in the outer region wars."

"Who could use such weapons?"

"The moment one uses something like that, countless emperors would target him to take his treasure." Luo feng looked at the list and thought, the cheapest one here was six trillion! The normal ones were ten trillion...these prices were enough to make even a knight feel the pinch.

Anyone with one of these weapons was holding a true piece of treasure.

How much was the sacrificial tower treasure worth?

A weapon costing over ten trillion mixed elements, if revealed, would make countless undyings go crazy for it!

"I can only look."

"I cannot buy them."

He suddenly felt very poor, not even having enough for a part of one weapon. He actually knew that for weapons like the black hole device, it seemed very complex just from the surface, and the requirements for building it must be extremely high. The soul destroying laser, the wind slicer...to retrieve materials such as the slicing wind etc and storing them well for frequent usage, they were places that even knights could fall within, the prices would naturally be absurd.

...

Since the queen couldn't evolve to undying, and he couldn't afford these weapons, he could only think of other methods.

Hence...

He began to study and research the many items within the

treasure trove that he couldn't see with his status. He also relied on his 560 billion wealth...to enter the shops in the Hong alliance city and view the VIP areas. These were areas frequented by knights.

"I only found three materials for Deities of the world level three in the treasure trove, but the shops in the Hong alliance city actually have eighteen of them, it's almost all here. However, they are really expensive."

"It's extremely hard to reach far in Deities of the world."

******

With his status and research, he spent over a month's time before finally deciding on what to buy. He knew that this windfall may take forever to happen again.

Spending about 110 billion mixed elements to allow the Golden horned beast to train its deities of the world to sixteen times amplification. (He only spent 10.2 billion to finish the second level initially).

Spending 130 billion to buy four flame god crystals (Each one cost close to thirty billion), and large amounts of water god crystals for the space lock armband (Close to ten billion mixed elements, the water god crystals were most suitable for the arm band).

Spending 300 billion to buy one kg of Fei Mo Liquid poison.

Spending eight billion to make the cloud contact vine evolve from pinnacle official to low emperor.

And some other little expenses were taken care of. However, he had almost spent all of the 560 billion from this windfall.

Chapter 853: Begin

Battlefield seven, twenty sixth camp, above the snow capped peaks, a silver armored and winged Luo Feng stood. He was discussing with the staff from the Virtual Universe Company.

This scene was seen by two distant emperors.

"Look, the human Yang."

"It's him."

"All the other race warriors from the other camps in Yan Ji continent have all gone crazy searching for him. No one would expect him to be hiding here in the camp. Ha...the other race warriors would never be able to find him. Even if they knew he was here, they couldn't do anything."

"Do you...think that Yang actually got the treasure from the sacrificial tower?"

"I've been to the tower personally to check and there were battle scars about, it should be true."

"This Yang sure is lucky. Look, he's discussing with the staff from the Virtual Universe Company, he must have bought countless treasures."

"What's the point of being jealous, he got the treasure, what can you do about it?"

"Right, I cannot do anything, who would dare make a move on an ally? However I dare say...if it weren't for the army system, there would probably be other humans making a move on him."

The two other race emperors gazed at the mountain peak hundreds of km away. With their vision, they could see every hair on Luo Feng's face even at such distance.

They watched as they discussed.

...

The news of Yang being in the twenty sixth camp spread quickly, causing the many other race warriors on Yan Ji continent to curse.

"Coward!"

"Weakling!"

"Cowardly punk."

"This human is actually hiding in the camp, bastard!"

"Let's go, leave Yan Ji continent! This human is so scared he's hiding in the camp, what can we do? Even knights cannot do anything, we are just wasting our time. Let's hurry back to star tower! There may be other treasures there!"

The many warriors began to grow disappointed. They had guessed before that the human Yang may leave after getting the treasure, however they never got accurate information, and didn't trust one another.

Afterall, the chances of getting treasure in the outer region wars were extremely slim.

"Human!" Purple Clock raged within a cave. "Prudent and yet cowardly."

"However, you hiding in the camp will make the others see you as even weaker, and it confirms that you have the treasures!"

"However, I do know..."

"Your cowardice is all an act." Purple Clock had been extremely alert about Luo Feng. He had battled with him before, and throughout the treasure hunt in the tower, Luo Feng had remained low profile. Yet he never backed down in face of danger, knowing when not to hold back, "Knowing the right time to act, and vicious at the the right moment."

"Human Yang, what are you waiting for?" He muttered, "Waiting for the right chance to deal with me? If you want to make a move, hurry and do it."

He had a feeling, that the human Yang was simply waiting for the opportune moment...

The two would eventually fight!

******

Within a specially crafted world ring.

Vast grassland.

Black clothed Luo Feng sat crossed legged, his expression serious as he looked at the black briefcase.

"Fei Mo poison!" He muttered. Within this case was the terrifying and expensive Fei Mo poison. He only had ten billion left from the 560 billion. He had almost spent everything and of which, the most expensive thing he bought with 300 billion mixed elements was this one kg of poison.

"Careful."

"Any leakage and my Mosha body will be destroyed." Luo Feng took a deep breath. He didn't even dare deal with it in his internal world, he was worried that any leak would cause the world to crumble, that would be an unjust death.

The mosha body was within the world ring.

His body could be produced again even if it fell, and this was a new world ring. Even if it crumbled, it meant nothing.

"Open." Luo Feng gently opened it.

Pa!

The black briefcase opened and revealed ten crystals, every one of them brimming with terrifying purple liquid, flowing about.

"Fei Mo poison, ten vials, and every one with one hundred drops of Fei Mo poison." His eyes gleamed.

Fe Mo poison: Just one drop was worth 300 million mixed elements. A powerful chemist from humanity Fei Mo had created

this, hence the name. It was a powerful corrosive agent, specially used to corrode undying bodies. Normally ten drops was enough to kill an emperor limit. As for one hundred drops or one vial, was able to kill an invincible emperor like True Yan.

Its power was terrifying.

But its weakness was obvious.

Firstly, it was a one time use item and diminished easily.

Secondly, it only works after making contact with the undying body, most warriors all wear armors and the poison has no effect on armors. Hence, one has to tear through the armor and let it touch the enemy's skin. Or attacking a place that wasn't protected like the face...

Also, it was a liquid that had to be carried by an agent, like rubbing it on a weapon and attacking after letting it dry. When the weapon slashes through the enemy...only a small portion of it may actually enter the body, dealing too little damage.

Lastly, if a hundred drops entered True Yan the first time around, with his strength, he would discover the poison destroying his body. He would instantly give up fighting and would start to focus on his undying energy to push the rest of the poison out. By then, only one or two drops would have probably succeeded while the others would be wasted. Hence, each attack usually did best with a little of the poison, acting before the enemy can drive it out.

Although it had its weaknesses, it was not as pricey as other heavenly weapons.

Like the Ka Suo dagger, it could be used over and over, piercing into an emperor limit would instantly kill him. Whether it was longevity or effectiveness, it far exceeded the Fei Mo poison. However its price was absurd too.

...

Luo Feng brandished a blood shadow blade. This was a newly

ordered blade, using expensive G grade metals, which were on par with the treasure room of the sacrificial tower. The Fei Mo poison was very weak on metals, and it had no way to corrode this new metal blade.

Of course, this blade cost close to one hundred million points.

"I've simulated it in the virtual universe over 1,000 times, nothing should go wrong." Luo Feng carefully coated the blade with the poison. The blade was fairly small in size, and it could at most have fifty drops of the poison on its surface.

After awhile...

Luo Feng gripped his new blade and looked at it glow with purple light, smiling, "From today on, this blade shall be called Poison shadow blade. A blood shadow blade and a poison shadow blade... I'll use the blood shadow blade most of the time and only use the poison shadow blade in critical moments."

"I have to be patient."

"The Golden horned beast has to train Deities of the world and the cloud contact vine has to evolve, I have to wait..." His eyes gleamed, "Purple Clock emperor, it'll be soon!"

****

One year later, in his internal world.

"Howl!" The beast raised its head and let out an excited howl. It had finally depleted the large amount of resources that cost 110 billion, amplifying Deities of the world to sixteen times.

"Everything is going according to plan!" Luo Feng stood on the grass. His eyes were filled with anticipation. "Cloud contact vine."

Xiu!

A beam of light flew over, it was the 256 vines cloud contact vine. Luo Feng had used eight billion points to evolve it from 216 vines to 256, and its power rose from pinnacle official to low emperor! If he

wanted to raise it more to 360 vines (High emperor), that would require over a hundred billion points, with a success rate of less than 50%.

If nurtured from young to have 360 vines, only about ten billion points would have been required.

It was obvious that upgrading a weak plant later on would cost tens to hundreds of times more than simply nurturing a strong one.

"Hu!"

The vine flew over like an octopus instantly wrapping about Luo Feng and melding with his skin. "Master." It communicated excitedly.

"Ha..." Luo Feng smiled.

This plant had been with him for so long, risking life and death with him, what was a few points? He would rather spend more points on this one than nurture a new one. The only thing was that he wasn't wealthy enough right now. Plus, with threats mounting, he hadn't reached the level of being able to spend over a hundred billion mixed elements to gamble on something with less than 50% success rate.

"Space lock band." Luo Feng placed a water god crystal into its energy chamber.

"Silver armor." A silver armor appeared, protecting the cloud contact armor and the arm band.

"Sha Wu wings." Silver wings opened on his back, it covered the original sector lord energy and powerful energy emanated about.

The silver winged and armored Luo Feng smiled, his eyes gleaming.

"Babata." He ordered, "Send a mail immediately to all the emperor friends I know on Yan Ji main continent, get their help to

search for the automaton camp Qi Chang race Purple Clock emperor."

"Yes!"

Babata immediately sent bulk mails to get help.

"I wonder if they can find him." Babata said. "He was probably afraid of dealing with you when he spread that news earlier, he might have hidden himself."

"If I can't find him, I'll put a bounty of him." Luo Feng said softly.

Just like how the automaton Ci Wei Ka had placed a bounty on Luo Feng back then, spending up to ten million as a reward, it would make the warriors of the human camp search for Purple Clock madly.

Chapter 854: Luo Feng's Show

As the emperor friends of his searched for Purple Clock on Yan Ji continent, Luo Feng began his trip back from the camp to the continent.

Several days later.

"Universe travel complete."

A space ripple occurred at the travel point closest to the main continent and a black disc ship appeared.

Within the ship.

Luo Feng sat at the control room and frowned, "We have so many emperors in the human camp, yet no one has found him."

"Luo Feng, when Purple Clock released your information before, he definitely guessed that you'd come looking for him. Hence, it's normal that he's hidden himself. Finding him won't be easy." A child head floated in the control room.

"There's no point waking up early if there's no benefit."

Luo Feng laughed, "I only got my emperor friends to help keep a lookout. They would at most look around, and there are only so few of them. How vast is the main continent? Back then, when I first came here, I didn't even meet another emperor for an extremely long time. For these emperors to find Purple Clock...it's hard enough. Without any rewards, they wouldn't even order their official underlings to help look. And even if they did so, the officials would only do the bare minimum, who would actually waste their energy."

"Luo Feng, you want to give a bounty?" Babata's eyes gleamed with excitement.

"Right, bounty!"

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, "I've long seen through this. Regardless

if it's us or the other races, warriors all own treasures and no one would risk their lives needlessly. For the strong to have treasures is normal, and no one else would risk the danger of fighting for that treasure. The weak having treasure is completely different, many of them would come to snatch it away! I was very low profile in the past, and no one knew I had treasure. Hence, no one ever found trouble with me. However, after the sacrificial tower...with Purple Clock publicly announcing, I have no way to stay low profile anymore. Since that's so, then I have to display enough strength to scare off the others!"

"The moment I make my move, it has to completely shock and scare off all of the other warriors!" Luo feng muttered, "Only that would be worth it!"

"That's my aim for this time!"

"To let them know the consequences of offending me!"

******

That day, he sent out bounties to the countless warriors in the human camp on Yan Ji main continent. They were all shocked, because...it wasn't a private offering, but rather a public bounty sent through the army system to all allies on Yan Ji main continent!

And Luo Feng had already transferred the reward to the army system account.

Fifty million mixed elements!

This bounty simply required one to just discover the location of Purple Clock. Once the coordinates are confirmed, that person would receive fifty million!

"Madness!"

"This human Yang sure is mad. He's been hiding in the camp for so long, but the moment he appears, he puts a huge bounty of Purple Clock. Fifty million, we officials usually at most only have

ten million in total. It takes countless years to even get that amount, and now all we have to do is discover this other emperor's location and we'd get such a huge sum."

"Madness."

"Fifty million!!!"

"This Yang sure is wealthy!"

"Haha...this is getting interesting. All the other race warriors are watching him, and he still dares to put such a bounty on Purple clock. Looks like he must be prepared, and the battle will be interesting."

"Who is Purple Clock?"

"Yang is placing a bounty on Purple Clock. Looks like this Purple Clock must have been the one that revealed information about him."

...

The entire Yan Ji continent was in an uproar. There were afterall very few emperors, and most of them were officials and normal undyings. To them, the fifty million mixed elements was a huge sum, which was enough to make all of them go crazy. They wouldn't dare go fight with the other race emperors, but they still dared to occasionally eavesdrop and search about.

The hunt for Purple Clock emperor had started!

Countless undyings from the human camp were madly searching about. Just like when the other race warriors were searching for Yang before, now it was the other way around. However, the human camp's search was much crazier.

This was afterall a public bounty!

However...

One day, two days, half a month, one month...

There was no news of Purple Clock.

"What's up with him?" Luo Feng had almost reached Yan Ji main continent in his ship. He frowned and muttered in the control room, "Not right, he let out news to force my hand, and he should be wanting me to reveal myself. Now that I've released a public bounty, he should have reacted. And the news of my bounty is huge, it should have reached him. He should know that I'm looking for him..."

"But he's vanished?"

"Did he leave the main continent?" Luo Feng shook his head. No, for Purple Clock to force him to reveal himself, it shouldn't be that simple.

"Luo Feng, I have a feeling that he's hiding to observe what happens, he will show himself sooner or later." Babata said. "According to the battles from the tower, he's extremely scheming. Unless there's no hope, he would never give up. Even against the Emperor limit Gold Cang, he still dared to attack! Against you...he would definitely not be scared away."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

******

Automaton camp's virtual world, within an iron skyscraper, on a particular level's hall.

Purple Clock sat casually eating food. Suddenly the door opened and two warriors entered. One of them was completely covered in fur with a single red eye, almost like an upright beast, and he gave off a wild energy. The other was a tall and skinny warrior, over 8m tall in a silver robe and black mask. His mask had peculiar engravings.

"Purple Clock, you sure are relaxed, enjoying delicacies in the virtual world. Don't you know that countless undyings form the human camp are madly searching for you on the main continent?"

The tall and skinny man had a piercing voice as he said.

"The bounty on your head is fifty million. This is akin to our automaton camp's one hundred million indigo gems. This is no small sum." The beast spoke, as his voice echoed with growls of a beast.

"Blood Beast emperor! Heavy Arrow emperor!"

He looked up and revealed a smile, "Don't I have you two? Two emperor limits here, who would I fear on the main continent?"

"Hahaha..."The beast immediately let out a roaring laughter. "Purple Clock, you are right. With us two, within the entire Yan Ji continent, none of the emperors are a threat at all!"

"Haha..." The tall masked man laughed lightly, his laughter was filled with confidence.

Purple Clock continued, "As for the fifty million bounty on me, it can only mean one thing...this human Yang is extremely wealthy. As long as we kill him, haha, I believe the rewards will definitely surprise you two."

"Hm." Both emperors nodded.

Blood Beast emperor, Heavy Arrow emperor.

The both of them were specially invited by Purple Clock. They were both emperor limits in Star tower. There were hardly any emperor limits on Yan ji continent. Only the most dangerous region of the area, Star tower, had such warriors.

They were both no weaker than Gold Cang.

This time, Purple Clock...had specially paid both five billion indigo gems along with 1/3 of the spoils to get them to assist him.

They could get 1/3 of the human Yang's wealth!

Blood Beast and Heavy Arrow would even get five billion upfront. Even if they knew that Yang wasn't one to mess with, they both still agreed.

"Shouldn't be messed with? It's because of that that you invited two emperor limits."

"Purple Clock is indeed generous. Looks like that human's wealth must be shocking too, he truly got the treasure from the sacrificial tower. Even 1/3 for us each would be a huge sum. This will be huge."

"Hm, a high emperor, even with his trump cards and warrior friends. Who would we have to fear?"

Both emperors had conversed secretly when they were invited, finally they both accepted.

...

Purple Clock, Blood Beast and Heavy Arrow sat around the dining table and chatted while enjoying delicacies.

"Purple Clock, that human has placed such a huge bounty on you, when will you show yourself?" Heavy Arrow said softly.

"I have to first let him think that I'm weak." He smiled. "Let him think I'm afraid...haha. I'll first hide outside the continent, they have no way to find me. However, it's not long before I'll show myself."

"I'll suddenly appear and purposely let myself be discovered by the human camp."

"Luring him into the trap."

His eyes gleamed with ferocity, "Then I'll get you two to help. Two emperor limits working together should be enough to crush him with overwhelming strength! The moment we make a move, we will completely leave him with no chance."

"Haha, thrilling. I respect your style." Blood Beast laughed loudly, his voice booming about, "Right, we can completely overwhelm him. I hate the long tiring fights, those are too troublesome. It's better to completely squash the enemy."

"Hm." Heavy Arrow nodded.

"You two should prepare outside the continent." Purple clock laughed. "The moment he enters my trap, I will immediately inform you two and you should teleport immediately."

"Relax." Blood Beast said.

"We'll both head to the space outside Yan Ji continent to await your call." Heavy Arrow said.

Purple Clock smiled and toasted, "I won't make you two wait long. Come, let us toast to acquiring the sacrificial tower treasure."

"Come, to the treasure." Blood Beast lifted his glass.

"To the dead human." Heavy Arrow emperor lifted his glass.

The glasses clinked.

Chapter 855: Purple Clock Shows Himself

Luo Feng was awaiting Purple Clock's news when True Yan sent a mail to him, stating he was at Yu Xiang mountain waiting for him.

...

Within Luo Feng's villa in primal region Yu Xiang mountain. The staff had already brewed a hot pot of tea, True Yan sniffed it before taking a sip.

"Teacher." Luo Feng walked in, "You wanted to see me?"

"Hm."

True Yan put down his cup and smiled proudly, "Disciple, this tea from your home earth is not bad. It's comparable to the drinks from many other places, and the more I taste it the more I like it. I've added this tea to my collection, also it's price is very reasonable."

"Since you like it, I will let my family prepare the latest brews and send it to you and the primal chaos city leader." Luo Feng said.

Tea leaves were a business of the Ping Hai company.

The company had some foundation in earth, naturally it would cultivate different types in different parts of the universe, studying new tea leaves and creating more flavors. In terms of quantity... naturally his family had the most.

"Haha, good." True Yan laughed. "I'm here today because I heard your Yang identity has recently sold a great amount of expensive goods? And after checking, I learnt about the seventh battlefield's Yan Ji continent, and that the news of you acquiring the sacrificial tower treasure has spread, is this true?"

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded.

His teacher naturally knew of his Yang identity.

True Yan was shocked, his eyes gleamed, "Any trouble?"

"Some." Luo Feng smiled, "But I can handle it, don't worry."

"That's good, I know your personality. Since you can say so, I'm not worried at all." True Yan nodded and asked curiously, "How much is the treasure worth? To create such a fuss."

"Hundreds of billions of mixed elements." Luo Feng didn't hide at all.

True Yan stared shocked, "Hundreds of billions? You are not joking right? For a place like Yan Ji to have treasure worth tens of billions is already not bad, how did it get so high?"

Luo Feng smiled.

"Haha, lucky fellow, I truly got a good disciple." True Yan laughed loudly, and his eyes pleased. "Disciple, I'm very satisfied with your performance on Yan Ji continent. However, you cannot be proud, just because I'm satisfied doesn't mean your other teacher the city leader will be satisfied. His perspectives are much higher than mine."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

His city leader teacher stood at the pinnacle of trillions of races, and to satisfy him wasn't such an easy task.

To the city leader, hundreds of billions of mixed elements wasn't even worth mentioning. As the number one person of the Virtual Universe Company, with his authority, he could easily check everything about Luo Feng in the outer region wars. Yet, he had never complimented Luo Feng on acquiring the treasure, maybe to him, it wasn't even worth saying.

The only time he had truly complimented Luo Feng was when he created his pinnacle technique Moon policy.

"Work hard!"

"Since the primal chaos city leader has taken you in, you cannot relax at all. This position as the disciple was full of honor, and also

full of pressure. All warriors...would naturally expect your performance to far exceed other warriors. Only then would you be worthy of that title. Performing exceptionally is to be expected. If you don't reach that standard, you will be mocked." True Yan said.

"Yes teacher." Luo Feng nodded.

...

Just like how Purple Clock was shocked by Luo Feng's performance back in the tower. However, if he had only known that he was facing the disciple of the primal chaos city leader... then, no matter how many trump cards Luo Feng took out, he wouldn't have been shocked. He would have considered it as absolutely normal.

One had to know...just what kind of being the city leader was.

...

Luo Feng chatted with True Yan for awhile. True Yan was proud of him and predicted that Luo Feng would become his most exceptional student. However, he was still worried within that he wouldn't be recognized by the primal chaos city leader, naturally he paid close attention to his growth.

He often came to reiterate this point.

"Hearing you say this, this Purple Clock sounds extremely scheming and evil, and he definitely has already set up a trap." True Yan nodded. "To release such information, he definitely has a plan, he wouldn't hide from fear."

"I thought so too." Luo Feng nodded, "But he still hasn't shown himself."

"Wait patiently." True Yan said. "You must have patience. Even though your enemy sounds strong, I believe you can handle it."

There were many in the universe that could actually reach the level of Emperor limit, however very few actually become

invincible amongst emperors and close to knight level.

Techniques, law comprehension, amplification techniques, treasures, mental state...none could be lacking.

True Yan had experienced countless types of warriors and had vast experience. He easily saw through Purple Clock just from hearing about him. Be it his craftiness or scheming personality, he saw through it all. But, he was clear that his disciple Luo Feng would be able to deal with it properly. Luo Feng may seem normal and average, but he was wise and understood his own strengths and weaknesses.

Knowing when to stay low profile and when to unleash his full strength.

Even in the face of death, he is able to make a calm decision.

That was Luo Feng!

Compared to Purple Clock...that was true wisdom, a seemingly low profile but terrifying enemy.

"Your weakness lies in your own strength being weak." True Yan said, "Don't get careless."

"I've already made preparations." Luo Feng nodded. "Of course, the universe has too many mysterious things about. I do not dare proclaim absolute guarantee, but I at least have 90% confidence."

Du! Du!

"Luo Feng, there's a call request along with a mail, both from the same number." Babata said.

Luo Feng gently tapped in mid air and a screen appeared. He first received the call and opened the mail, on it was a black armored tall and sturdy bull giant said, "I've discovered the whereabouts of the Qi Chan warrior Purple Clock emperor, his coordinates are..."

The mail had the same details.

"He's been found!" Luo Feng immediately stood up.

"Very good, the moment it's confirmed, I will send the reward over." Luo Feng replied.

"Please rush over to the location. Once time passes, he might slip away." The bull giant said.

Pa.

The call was cut and True Yan smiled beside, "Purple Clock has shown himself?"

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded.

"This will be a life or death battle, even if you have the advantage, don't get careless." True Yan reminded him, "Go on, I'll be here awaiting your good news."

"Yes."

Luo Feng smiled, after which he vanished from the virtual universe.

******

Yan Ji continent, within an ice cave.

Purple Clock sat crossed legged alone on an ice rock. His large and mini scanners were only scanning, and their jamming abilities were deliberately shut off. Hence the lucky official level undying from the human camp was able to discover him.

"Discovered me?"

"An official level punk." He said softly, "I'll rely on you to get Yang into my trap, consider yourself lucky."

Weng...

Purple Clock sensed the space ripples about.

He was proficient in the space laws, and was able to teleport too. Hence, he was incredibly sensitive in being able to feel the space ripples.

"Spacial ripples, teleportation!" His eyes gleamed, "The human

has fallen into my trap!"

...

About 1,000km away from him, the silver winged and armored human appeared simultaneously with a black silhouette.

"Cha Wu emperor, thanks." Luo Feng said.

"Look for me if you need such help again." The silhouette laughed before vanishing.

"I have to keep relying on pinnacle emperors since I cannot teleport. It's a pity, my law comprehension is far from it." Luo Feng shook his head and ordered, "Babata, have you found Purple Clock?"

"Purple Clock is 3,201 km away in that ice cave. He's sitting crossed legged on a rock and even though his scanning device is activated, its not jamming any signals. He's obviously waiting for you." Babata communicated.

"I know he's got a plan."

"We both know it." Luo Feng laughed. "We are both not stupid... since both are prepared, knowing both sides won't back down, this fight is unavoidable. He's obviously very confident, but I am confident too. When he falls, he will regret this!"

"Babata, since the report was accurate, send the reward to that lucky official." Luo Feng said.

"Yes."

At different levels, the amount offered was different too.

"Babata, we have to give Purple Clock...a greeting." Luo Feng smiled, "Alina, attack twice according to the plan earlier."

"Yes master."

The mother nest appeared beside him.

...

Thousands of km away in the cave, Purple Clock frowned, "There were two consecutive ripples earlier. They were both teleportation, appearing and leaving...that should be a warrior bringing Yang over, then he left alone. Since Yang is here...why hasn't there been any movement? Does he not dare to attack me?"

Chapter 856: Battle

Numerous bug soldiers circled around the mother nest, and every soldier was 10m to 100m apart, forming a huge ball. One million Tiger armored kings formed a huge ball and the other ball consisted of 500,000 Tiger armored kings, 200,000 Shadow spear kings and 200,000 Hunting Mantis kings.

Weng...

Close to two million kings stored their energy.

Luo Feng's mini scanner was able to completely cover 20km. As for the entire area of the ball, in terms of space, it blocked out all sensing from outside.

"Attack."

The silver armored youth standing beside the mother nest smiled and ordered.

"Yes master." Alina replied.

"First wave attack!"

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The million Tiger armored bugs released all their stored energies. The skies and land instantly changed color as countless laser beams shot out and gathered in a glaring and terrifying spot, which turned into a beam. This energy beam hit the ice mountain and it was reduced to nothing, the mountain range slowly disappeared...

Rumble!!!

A terrifying energy wave spread out.

"Second wave, attack!"

Alina released control of the first wave and immediately controlled the second wave. Once again they gathered their energy

and unleashed it all on a targeted spot, destroying everything in its path.

"Back!"

"All back into the world ring." Luo Feng first kept the mother nest in his ring and collected the soldiers after.

...

Purple Clock who had been sitting crossed legged within muttered. "That human Yang may be acting cautious, carefully scanning from outside?" Suddenly a terrifying energy blast descended, it reached here at light speed. With only a few thousands km of distance, at 300,000 km per second, how long would it take to reach?

By the time Purple Clock sensed it, the attack had already reached.

"Not good!" Against the terrifying attack, he instantly teleported and vanished, escaping!

Rumble!

A thick laser beam decimated the area, never once exploding.

The point of explosion for the attacks were completely controlled by the queen. As the million beams gather, ten at a time, they began to condense, until 100 of them were gathered.ater another 10, and another...until the numbers grew absurd before and reaching its limit!

The distance, angle, projection would all affect the condensing of beams.

Only when it had fully gathered to its limit would it explode!

As long as the queen willed it, she could make the attack explode 100s of thousands of km away, or a millions of km away. This time, Luo Feng knew that this attack had no way to harm Purple Clock with his Ancient clock, and he could teleport too, since it wasn't

within the sacrificial tower...

Even though he had the space lock arm bad, this was his trump card.

He would only use it at a critical time.

This bug attack didn't have enough power and the enemy had teleportation ability. Hence ,he made the queen only explode it 300km away. His goal was simply to stir up the enemy...forcing him to reveal his trump cards early.

Two waves, one after another, with only a difference of 0.1 seconds.

After which Luo Feng immediately kept the queen and then the soldiers. As for the full explosion, that happened a full second later.

******

Even so, when Purple Clock sensed the terrifying energy rushing over, he was so scared he immediately teleported!

Xiu!

He teleported to a distant place on the continent.

"Hu, what a terrifying attack." He took a deep breath, his eyes raging, "This human must have bought a terrifying weapon after acquiring the treasure. That combined attack before...is akin to a pinnacle emperor's explosion."

"Luckily I invited emperor limits, these attacks are useless." He floated in the air for ten seconds before teleporting back.

...

The explosion caused the entire ice mountain range to be reduced to nothing, leaving a vast crater over one million km deep. After a while, a silhouette appeared within...Purple Clock emperor appeared.

"Hm?" He gazed down at the huge crater and at the distant silver armored and winged youth. He couldn't help but feel shocked, "This human unleashed such an attack the moment he arrived. He's too arrogant and confident, or is he simply stupid? From the battle in the tower, he didn't seem stupid at all."

"I cannot get careless, the moment I'm not careful, I could lose my life. I better immediately call the two emperor limits over, and let them take the risks instead. Hmph, I'll just wait for my chance to kill him." Many thoughts flashed through his mind.

Luo Feng's goal had been reached.

His bug army attack had completely scared Purple Clock. Such power, if it was a flame god crystal, it would be worth tens of billions of points. If it was some automaton weapon, just the energy usage alone would be shocking. To attack like that...one must be incredibly confident. He didn't know that Luo Feng had a bug army, and every one of them was at a sector lord level and they could replenish their own energy, unlike automaton weapons that required a huge amount of storing before it could be used.

"Blood Beast emperor, Heavy Arrow emperor." Purple Clock contacted the two of them via the virtual world.

"That human is here?"

"He's already here. However, from what I see, he has some special weapons. Hence we cannot be careless, act according to the third plan."

"Third plan?" Blood Beast was shocked.

"Hm, we cannot hesitate, we have to go all out from the beginning. There are two parts to this plan. First, the both of you will teleport to two different locations...then..." Through the virtual world, Purple Clock swiftly went through the plan. He had wanted to exchange a few blows with Luo Feng alone initially. But now he was scared into calling both emperor limits immediately.

...

Yan ji continent side regions, Blood Beast and Heavy Arrow were already waiting within a palace.

The two of them exchanged glances.

"Don't hold anything back." Blood Beast roared. "We have to kill that human immediately."

"Relax." Heavy Arrow smiled. "With our combined attacks, I don't believe he can dodge."

Even though they said so, they were both emperor limits afterall. With their status, they definitely had heavenly survival treasures etc. Even though they talked about going all out, they wouldn't waste their trump cards unnecessarily.

Xiu! Xiu!

They both teleported and vanished.

...

In mid air.

Silver winged Luo Feng stared at the distant Purple Clock.

"Purple Clock, I still thought you were too afraid to show yourself." He gazed at him. "Didn't you spread the news about me and yet when I appeared, you hid yourself. I had to place a bounty just to find you. This is something you should have found out much earlier and yet you only appeared now. Looks like you are confident in dealing with me."

"Hmph, I did spread the news, but you hid for pretty long too." Purple Clock smiled. "Looks like you bought some special weapon, automaton weapon, or other races?"

"Won't you know in a bit?" Luo Feng mocked.

"Ah, looks like you have some trump cards." Purple Clock smiled. His race's appearance however made his smile look even more

malevolent.

He was waiting.

Luo Feng was waiting too.

They were both waiting for each other...

"I'll let you be proud first, Blood Beast and Heavy Arrow will be here immediately. No matter what you have, they will take the blow first. I want to see...just what you got from the treasure of the tower. No matter what, the body's strength is still the foundation." Purple Clock was cold and filled with killing intent.

"Purple Clock, bring out whatever you have. Otherwise, it won't be worth my time." Luo Feng muttered within.

Xiu! Xiu!

Two silhouettes appeared in the distance.

"Ha!" Purple Clock's eyes gleamed with glee, "They are here."

"Hm?" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed coldly and gazed at the distance. The two silhouettes gave off terrifying energies. Among which, the tall Blood Beast emperor glowed with a blood colored light, and Heavy Arrow made Luo Feng shudder within. Their energies were no weaker than the amplified Gold Cang.

"Emperor limits." Luo Feng thought. "Blood Beast and Heavy Arrow emperor!"

Before the battle, Luo Feng had naturally studied quite a bit.

Within the entire twenty sixth camp area, including Yan Ji and Star tower, he knew about all the strong and renowned warriors, especially the emperor limits, of which there were these two.

"It's actually these two This is going to be troublesome." Luo Feng thought.

"Human!"

Blood Beast's single eye was terrifying.

"Human." Heavy Arrow always wore a mask, making it impossible to see his expression.

The two had unleashed all their strength and stared at Luo Feng together.

Xiu! Xiu!

Both of them teleported and rushed at Luo Feng.

"Die." Purple Clock watched from thousands of km away, happily anticipating. If he didn't have to act at all, letting just the two emperor limits kill Luo Feng, how perfect that would be.

"This is the right moment." Luo Feng instantly unleashed strike travel with his wings and immediately rushed at Purple Clock.

Shua! Shua!

Blood Beast and Heavy Arrow appeared simultaneously and discovered that Luo Feng's instantaneous acceleration far exceeded theirs, leaving them both stunned.

"Space lock armband!"

"Activate!"

A formless void engraving spread over 10,000 km around him. This was almost like a formless water membrane, the space ripples within were completely locked down.

"Space lock! All three enemies were shocked.

"You all..." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed with madness, "Cannot escape now!"

Chapter 857: Madman!!!

Within an area with a diameter of 10,000 km, the translucent void engravings floated around. Anything within this space had its space ripples stopped. At this point, Blood Beast and Heavy Arrow were both nervous and angry. They communicated mentally, "Purple Clock, didn't you say this human was weak, not knowing how to teleport or perform space lock?"

"These engravings..." Purple Clock looked on in shock. "Right, these are the engravings from the tower. It must be some special weapon from the treasure chest that allowed this human to do this. This is unbelievable."

"This human Yang definitely doesn't know space lockdown. Don't you see the surrounding floating engravings?" Purple Clock replied. "These are common engravings from the statues about Yan Ji, he must have gotten a special weapon to do this!"

"Relying on a weapon to use space lockdown?" Both emperors were shocked, after which they laughed excitedly and greedily.

Such a treasure was priceless.

It was definitely a true treasure.

"We've struck gold!"

"Give it your all, kill that human. Just that treasure alone would be plenty for us."

...

It may seem slow but their conversation actually only took an instant, as they were rushing towards Luo Feng. While it seemed like they were doing a combined attack, Purple Clock was much slower than the other two.

"Bring it!" Luo Feng flapped his wings and became a beam of light, drawing closer to Purple Clock.

The three warriors surrounded Luo Feng.

They were filled with killing intent.

"Yang, you are dead." Purple Clock smiled with excitement.

"Very good, just like that." Luo Feng felt the distance between the enemies draw closer. Suddenly he smiled widely, "Now!"

He flipped his hand!

Two glowing red black crystals appeared. These crystals seem round, in truth they each had 10,081 sides and had space engravings locked within. Both of them gave off terrifying energies.

"What did he take out?" Blood Beast emperor's single eye gleamed, carefully looking. The three of them were from the automaton camp, and these crystals were created by the automatons, they were common but expensive. The emperor limits couldn't bear to buy such weapons, but they were extremely familiar with most sorts of weapons.

Just one look scared the wits out of them.

"My god, it's the strongest flame god crystal, it's the strongest flame god crystal!"

Blood Beast was filled with rage and shock, immediately slowing down to flee...

"It's the strongest flame god crystal!" Heavy Arrow had finally seen it clearly too. He too was stunned, not even hesitating to turn and try to flee.

"What!" The excited Purple Clock was shocked by the scene. He couldn't care less as well, as he immediately turned to flee.

"Madman, a pure madman, that's the strongest flame god crystal." Blood Beast howled. "Even an emperor limit may fall from that, and he took out two of them together. The moment it explodes, even if I don't die, I'd be in a terrible state! Each crystal is

worth 100's of billions of indigo gems, and two is twice that. How did he get two of them? And how can he dare to take out two? Is he not afraid of dying from it?"

"Flee, that's a madman. Purple Clock, the human you are dealing with is a madman." Heavy Arrow roared.

"Flee!" Purple Clock gritted his teeth.

Luo Feng had indeed brandished the strongest flame god crystal. It took a lot of work to condense and stabilize so much energy. This strongest crystal cost Luo Feng, with his primal chaos city leader disciple position, close to thirty billion mixed elements each!

Like Heavy Arrow, Blood Beast or Purple Clock, those not from the automaton camp had to spend at least 100s of billions of indigo gems to purchase one of these. (One mixed element is about two indigo gems).

Back when Purple Clock took out a flame god crystal worth ten billion mixed elements, it was already akin to three times a pinnacle emperor's explosion.

And the ones Luo Feng just took out...were akin to ten times a pinnacle emperor's explosion! It had a certain guarantee of making an emperor limit fall! And taking out two at a time...even if Purple Clock used his ancient clock to diffuse 90% of the force, he was only a pinnacle emperor, how could he dare defend against it?

"Flee!" "Flee!" "Flee!"

The three howled within, all cursing that they couldn't teleport. Only then did they realize why the human had used space lock, it was obviously to stop them from fleeing.

"You won't make it."

Luo Feng casually tossed the two crystals in different directions, they had already ignited.

...

The three of them slowed to a stop. They had just begun to flee when the terrifying strongest flame god crystals began to explode. It was almost like a million stars exploding instantly. Two supernovas were instantly formed as the terrifying energy condensed within was unleashed.

The space about were instantly reduced to stream particles as the space slits had countless fragments that were melted into particles.

"Madman, madman, madman!!!" Blood Beast howled, "Is he not afraid of death? Does he have enough confidence to survive the two crystals head on?"

"No!" Blood beast howled.

Rumble!

A huge beast projection appeared behind him. It was of a furry peculiar beast with blood colored eyes and stars. He had obviously given his all to protect himself, he didn't wish to die just like that.

Simultaneously, the glaring stars of destruction was so bright, that no one could open their eyes. It completely engulfed Blood Beast.

...

"Just who did this Purple Clock mess with? Is he completely going for suicide?" Heavy Arrow was filled with rage. He had many trump cards, but could use none on Luo Feng before the two crystals exploded.

"I must survive, I must survive." Heavy Arrow roared. "Otherwise, I can only wait for the distant future where I will be revived. However, once I'm revived, it's akin to selling my soul to the automaton race. No!"

Silence.

The light instantly engulfed Heavy Arrow.

...

"How can he be so crazy? His defense is very strong, does he have a space fortress or god base? Is he hiding within something like that? However, even a knight cannot afford a god base. So, he can't have one either. He has defensive treasures, but how can he possibly survive this?"

"I must withstand it!"

"Then I'll kill him after and take his treasure. I still haven't used all my trump cards." Purple Clock was sullen. Letting the two emperor limits attack first was only the first part of his plan. He was the type to let the strong be his cannon fodder. Just like back in the tower, he first let Gold Cang lead him...when things were going bad, he instigated for the others to kill each other till he remained.

This time was the same.

He first let the two emperor limits go and had them dig out Luo Feng's trump cards. However...the moment his trump cards were out, it was too terrifying.

Two strongest flame god crystals!!!

"I have to withstand it!" An ancient clock appeared around his body, within a silver light glowed.

Simultaneously...

The glaring white light swallowed him up!

****

Purple Clock and the others never expected Luo Feng to be that crazy. This was just the first move and it was absurd. Even though its power was great, it had a great flaw, which was that it attacked everyone without prejudice! The strongest force was within this tens of thousands of km, Luo Feng naturally was hit by it too.

That white light engulfed him too.

...

There was silence.

The glaring white light engulfed 10s of millions of km around. Everything within the area, the ground, rocks, underground palace, everything was reduced to particles. After a prolonged silence, explosions occurred all over as a formless pressure rushed in all directions, knocking away the distant mountain rangers, tearing apart the ground and canyons millions of km away.

"Human, human, you will die, you are definitely dead." Within his ancient clock, Purple Clock howled.

In that instance, he was reduced to ashes.

Even though the clock would diffuse 90% of the force, this was afterall the strongest flame god crystal. It had a power capable of killing even an emperor limit! Even after diffusing 90%...with two strongest crystals exploding, as all four of them were caught in the strongest blast region, he was naturally destroyed, and part of his undying body was destroyed too!

He lost over 50% of his undying body!

Even so, he managed to survive.

"I'm not dead, I'm not dead." He howled within. He began to reform his undying body in the ancient clock. "If I'm not dead, that means you will die!"

Xiu!

A silver arc tore through the white glowing sky, rushing below the ancient clock. It was a silver armored and winged Luo Feng. He held in his hand a blade...a purple light glowing on its edges, it was obviously the Poison shadow blade.

"Pu chi!" He slashed at the bottom of the ancient clock at the reforming particles of Purple Clock.

"Purple Clock, let me send you off!" Luo Feng howled at the reforming undying body.

The Fei Mo poison on the blade madly attacked at his undying body. It seeped in and even though it was harder to actually destroy an emperor limit's body, against a pinnacle emperor, especially one that had over 50% destroyed already, it caused the body to instantly crumble.

Chapter 858: Fall

Purple Clock was reduced to ashes from the explosion. Just as he was reforming, Luo Feng found him and he was stunned, "How can this be? The time between my reforming is only that short...how did he rush over in such a short time. Unless...the flame god crystal explosion didn't destroy his body! That's impossible!"

In truth, Luo Feng's body was fine from the explosion!

Back then...in the sacrificial tower, when the elder Qiu Chi Ka had exploded in the room, Luo Feng could withstand it head on.

This flame god crystal explosion was tens of times stronger than that one!

Back then, the room was completely shut. This explosion however happened in such a vast space. Theoretically speaking, the enclosed explosion back then would definitely create a bigger force.

Qiu Chi Ka had exploded alone, this time however there were two crystals.

After the two were combined.

It add up to ten times the explosion force of Qiu Chi Ka's in the enclosed room...

Back then, Luo Feng's cloud contact armor was at pinnacle official level, and it's sturdiness was akin to a low emperor.

Now, it was a low emperor, but was akin to a high emperor human!

Through the Sha Wu wings and General armor diffusing the force to only a thousandth (Akin to a low emperor explosion), and with the high emperor cloud contact armor, it only barely managed to break through the cloud contact armor slightly. Hence, it was unable to completely destroy it.

"Compared to the tower back then, the explosion this time was ten times stronger, but my cloud contact armor has also grown. You were all reduced to ashes, but I'm totally fine." Luo Feng rushed straight through the explosion. Accurately speaking, it was because of the wings and the general armor that the cloud contact vine could withstand it. As long as it could do that, Luo Feng would be fine.

...

He easily withstood the force, plus Purple Clock was only a few thousands km away. With just a flap of his wings, he naturally reached beside him. Just as Purple Clock was reforming, Luo Feng acted according to his plan and slashed him with the poison shadow blade!

This blade was vicious!

"How could he get here so fast?" Purple Clock was filled with suspicion. However as he realized Luo Feng's blade slash over, he mocked, "Even the flame god crystal couldn't kill me, your blade cannot even tear through my undying body, it's simply too...ah!"

"Pu chi!"

A blade slashed through!

The poison shadow blade tore into his broken undying body, and right away the Fei Mo poison began to destroy his body into pieces.

"No!" Purple Clock was completely shocked by the poison. He instantly chose to break off that part of his undying body, but...it was too late! An emperor limit required about ten drops of poison to die, but a pinnacle emperor only needed one drop.

And usually with quick reflexes, one slash would only have about 0.3-0.8 drops of poison entering the body.

Purple clock only had less than 50% of his body left, the 0.72 drops of poison instantly ran through his body onto every fragment, invading every cell...he had no way to defend against it.

"It's over!" He instantly understood. "I'm about to die."

He was filled with rage and regret, however before he died, he swiftly connected to the virtual world.

...

Virtual world.

"Mass send! Send mail to everyone!!!" His consciousness formed a body that stood in the living room and raged.

According to his plan, one part of it was if he couldn't deal with Yang, he would drag in a large number of other emperors. He had prepared this mail long ago, even the location and coordinates were in the cave he was in.

Hua hua hua...

The mail was sent out like snow flakes, instantly reaching large numbers of emperors in the automaton camp.

"That Yang has appeared? Where?"

"Sacrificial tower treasure!!!"

"Hahaha..."

"He's appeared."

The large number of emperors received the mail and immediately reacted. Even though they were very excited, these emperors weren't stupid. They couldn't teleport immediately, because there were very few that could actually teleport, and also, what if it was a trap? Hence, they began to form their alliances. With groups of emperors together, they would be much stronger and less fearful of a trap.

"Haha...hahaha..." Purple Clock felt his consciousness crumble.

He simply looked up and laughed madly.

He didn't lead an ordinary life, having acquired the ancient clock and even killing two emperor limits and many other pinnacle

emperors. He was definitely considered an absolute being amongst the Qi Chang race. In his heart he still had hopes of becoming a knight, of becoming a greater being.

However...

Because he messed with the human Yang, even though he had prepared adequately, none of his plans could be used in time. The flame god crystal explosion and the Fei Mo poison instantly took his life.

"Even if I die, don't think you'll get off easy!!! He howled fiercely.

Pa!

His consciousness became a bubble and broke, vanishing forever. He would never reappear.

Even though he was from the automaton camp, the high and mighty universe masters of the automaton race may revive a large number of warriors in the future. However for the Qi Chang race, they would at most revive the emperor limits. Even if his luck was good and he was chosen, because he had fused with the ancient clock, it had a great effect on the revival. The backlash from the revival...would be akin to the revival of a knight. Hence, once the universe masters discover the ancient clock on him, they would most probably give up on reviving him.

Having true treasures and falling made it harder for revival!

And if one wanted to forcefully destroy the treasure and revive, the price would be ten to hundreds of times that of the treasure itself! Simply carrying the treasure alone made revival extra hard.

...

Purple Clock, who had the ancient clock, was set never to be revived. Unless the universe master was willing to take the backlash.

Purple Clock, hence...fell!

******

In the distant regions of Yan Ji continent, there were many emperors from the automaton camp that were chatting within the virtual world.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

The warriors with teleportation began to gather the others all together.

"An Meng emperor, the news suddenly broke out, and it's from Purple Clock emperor. It was obviously sent in a group mail to all the warriors, would this be some ploy?" A group of oddly appearing emperors all gathered in mid air. The only similarity they shared was they were all from the automaton camp.

"It might be some trap!"

"But it could be true too."

The group all communicated, suddenly one short and stony god shouted, "I tried contacting Purple Clock, the virtual world informed me that he's fallen."

"Already fallen?"

"Dead?"

All the suspicious emperors had tried too. The virtual world system did reply to them all, letting them know that he had fallen. This made them instantly trust the message that was sent at least 90%....the system's record of his death meant he was connected when he fell, hence it naturally knew of his situation.

Everything had to be scanned before confirmed.

Like the Yun Mo planet master Hu Yan Bo, he had never opened his connection to the virtual universe to scan himself. When he fell over 10,000 years ago, no one ever knew.

"Hurry and go!"

"Purple Clock has fallen, the battle must have been intense." The group all shouted excitedly. "However large amounts of our automaton warriors will definitely go. With our numbers, we need not fear him."

"We can teleport directly to hundreds of thousands of kilometers away from the location. Even if there's trouble we'll be prepared."

"Let's go."

Xiu!

The group instantly vanished and rushed to the fight.

Even though they all had different levels of strength, with even some low emperors, they weren't afraid. Because, there was no killing within the same camp. As long as large amounts of them worked together, they would be naturally safe. What's more, killing an emperor wasn't exactly an easy thing to do. They all regarded Purple Clock's death...as something that the enemy had to pay a huge price for.

...

Yan Ji continent, in the distant star tower.

Groups and groups of automaton emperors began to teleport to the fight! Of course, the emperors in Yan Ji continent naturally reached first. As for the distant star tower...they first had to find a safe spot before teleporting via god country and finally teleporting to the target spot, this alone took quite some time!

******

At the battleground, the broken space began to madly recover, one could visibly see the space reforming.

"Ah!" Blood Beast emperor howled, as his body was completely reformed.

"I actually lost 42% of my undying body, how long would it take me to recover?" His single eye was filled with rage. The loss of his

body meant the loss of his soul, and such a huge loss required a long time to recover. He could actually use treasures in the universe to assist in the recovery, but they were all incredibly expensive. Hence, how could he afford to do so.

On the other end.

"I lost 59% of my undying body!!!" Heavy Arrow had it worse. "I don't even have 10% of my original strength! Even a pinnacle emperor can suppress me."

Even though the strongest flame god crystal had the ability to kill an emperor limit, who wouldn't have their own defenses! Special armor or techniques to decrease attacks, 20%, 30%, along with plant life forms, metal life forms etc, emperor limits would normally have all of these.

Even so, they still suffered heavy losses.

...

At the other end.

The silver winged and armored Luo Feng wielded the Poison shadow blade. Looking at the items left behind from the fallen Purple Clock, he swept the world rings, armor, ancient clock and everything into his own world ring.

"Thanks Purple Clock." Luo Feng said softly.

"Hm?"

He turned, tens of thousands of km away, the space shook violently, as tens of emperors suddenly appeared. In another direction, the space shook too as groups and groups of emperors began to arrive.

Chapter 859: Shaking

When the first batch of ten emperors appeared tens of thousands of km away, Blood Beast, Heavy Arrow and Luo Feng were on the move.

"I've lost 42% of my undying body, and that human actually withstood the entire blast. It's unbelievable, if he uses another flame god crystal, I may fall. It isn't worth losing my life over the sacrificial tower treasure!" Blood Beast swiftly flew at his max speed, trying to rush out of the space lock area.

"Flee." The damaged Heavy Arrow chose the same path.

These two were scared off by the explosion.

The first explosion destroyed everything around them. With two strongest flame god crystals, that was akin to 200 billion indigo gems instantly reduced to nothing. It's power however was shocking. To survive this first wave alone was hard enough, they didn't have the confidence to take another. They both flew simultaneously in different directions.

"There's just this one human! He can only chase one of us and the space lockdown area is only so small. There is no way he can get both of us." Both emperor's thoughts were similar.

With a diameter of 10,000 km, this was truly very small area to such warriors.

As long as they rushed straight out, if Luo Feng hesitated for even a second, they would be able to escape. However at Luo Feng's level, how could he lose focus at the critical moment?

"Heavy Arrow suffered more damage, I'll deal with him first!"

Sou!

He flapped his wings and shot after Heavy Arrow.

"Haha..." Blood Beast and Luo Feng flew in different directions.

He naturally escaped the space lock region

"I won't stay here any longer." He glanced at the stunned ten emperors that just appeared. Smiling coldly, "Those punks, they can only hope the human doesn't go crazy again. If he does, their little bit of strength would be destroyed by the flame god crystals!"

"It's time to leave." He didn't dare stay any longer.

Shua!

He vanished and teleported far away.

...

The automaton camp An Meng emperor and the other group of tens of emperors had just arrived. But, the scene in front of them certainly shocked them. An area over ten million km of vast land, rivers, mountains, snow, everything was gone, leaving nothing but a wasteland.

The ripples from the terrifying explosion before were still resonating around the area.

Just the ripples alone were enough to make the emperors shudder.

What shocked them even more was...the incredibly renowned and 'invincible' Heavy Arrow and Blood Beast emperor. These two emperor limits were fleeing madly in two different directions. Blood Beast managed to escape and teleport, Heavy Arrow however was being chased by a silver winged and armored human.

"Just what happened here."

"Madness."

"This, this..."

The emperors were all stunned and pondering as the scene before them was simply too unexpected.

"What sort of attack would reduce such a huge area to nothing?

How terrifying of an attack was this? Even an emperor limit wouldn't be able to do so much damage."

"Madness."

"It's no wonder Purple Clock fell. What happened here?"

"Blood Beast and Heavy Arrow are both emperor limits, how can they be losing. Blood Beast has escaped, but Heavy Arrow is being chased?"

They were stunned. In mid air another batch of emperors appeared, and another. The many groups began to rush over as the numbers quickly exceeded a hundred. However, when they arrived, they were all stunned.

According to the explosion ripples and the area of wasteland, they could easily deduce just how terrifying the attack was. It was able to completely destroy all of them.

And the scene of Heavy Arrow fleeing scared them.

"What's going on An Meng, why is Heavy Arrow being chased?" Another group of emperors that arrived later asked.

"Not just him, Blood Beast was scared off earlier."

"Blood Beast escaped? Isn't he good friends with Heavy Arrow?"

"Who knows? Purple Clock has fallen, I feel that this may be troublesome."

"Attention all, this doesn't seem too good, I'll take my leave first!" Sou! A pinnacle emperor immediately teleported away.

What a joke.

Any of them being able to survive till emperor level would all be incredibly wise. If even Blood Beast escaped and Heavy Arrow was being chased, while Purple Clock fell a while ago, including the tens of millions of km of wasteland, it all proved one thing. It proved that this area was extremely dangerous!

A point where even emperor limits could fall. Since their strength difference was obvious, the naturally wiser ones would choose to leave.

"Look!"

"Heavy Arrow is in danger!" The stunned emperors all looked on at the distant battle.

...

Luo Feng had picked Heavy Arrow to attack, because he had suffered greater damage. Normally, any undying with 50% damage on his undying body would only have 10% of their strength left. One had to know that the initial small losses on the undying body didn't affect their strength much, but as the damage grew, the effect became more absurd.

Losing within 10% of the undying body had almost no effect at all on their strength.

Losing 30% would leave only 50% of their strength.

Losing 50% would leave only 10%.

Losing 70% would leave less than 1% of their strength.

After losing 90%, they would fall into a coma and they would lose their consciousness. Only after long periods of time in their comatose state they might slowly recover or even slowly fade away until they died. Anyway, in that state, they had no defense at all!

It was clear that the loss of the undying body had a huge effect on their strength.

"After losing 59% of my undying body, my strength is only a little stronger than a high emperor." Heavy Arrow was worried as he saw Luo Feng catching up.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

His silver wings left three warps in space and he immediately caught up. The two of them had a huge difference in speed.

"Die Heavy Arrow." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed coldly.

"Human, don't get ahead of yourself." Heavy Arrow immediately pulled out a completely black and silver bow with an arrow lodged in the middle. It was rare to see a bow and arrow user in the universe, because it couldn't compare to a spirit weapon. However, the genuinely knowledgeable users were terrifying.

Relying on the bow itself, it could amplify their strength greatly.

Xiu! The bow launched the arrow.

A black arrow with yellow traces tore through tens of km. The land and skies were silent as a long slit was left in the space. The power of the arrow was obviously condensed, even the slit was incredibly fine. However, as the arrow hit Luo Feng's wings, it barely even moved a feather. Since, it could even withstand the flame god crystal explosion, naturally this was nothing.

"You only had that one chance." Luo Feng flapped his wings and got close, not giving his enemy another chance.

"Die."

He brandished the poison shadow blade. With both the wings and blade, he unleashed moon policy.

Using his own pinnacle technique with his high emperor strength, with the Sha Wu Wings internals space energy, it had terrifying tearing abilities. The power of his attack was amplified further as the wings produced a silver light, slashing through Heavy Arrow's armor and the poison blade slashed at his undying body.

"What." He didn't even have time to dodge as he got slashed, feeling the Fei Mo poison begin to invade his body.

"Tear!" He wanted to cut off that part of his undying body.

"Cloud contact vine!" Luo Feng wouldn't give him the chance. Ten vines shot out from his shoulder and fiercely wrapped about

Heavy Arrow.

Heavy arrow had originally lost 59% of his undying body. That slash earlier made him lose over 80% of his power. Even the cloud contact vine could forcefully hold him at this point, and the most peculiar thing was the three vines that wrapped around him had three thorns that pierced deep into his body and held him in place.

Pu Chi! Pu Chi! Pu Chi!

The slash earlier along with the three stabs, all contained Fei Mo poison on it. Luo Feng had managed to create nine thorns with the poison, and every one of them with thirty drops of the Fei Mo poison. However, because he was already in a tragic state before, having lost 59% of his undying body, it made his overall body fall to only 12%...

"Chi! Chi! Chi!" The three thorns immediately pulled themselves out. They were afraid of staying within for too long as it would immediately poison Heavy Arrow to death.

Heavy Arrow's eyes went vacant as his consciousness faded, not even moving within the cloud contact vine.

Even though 10% was the definite comatose level, according to the different levels of willpower, some would go into a coma at 15%, or 16%. At this point, Heavy Arrow had fallen into a coma.

"Keep." Luo Feng immediately kept the comatose Heavy arrow into a separate world ring.

...

Everything happened extremely quickly. The other emperors around the area could all see that Heavy Arrow had already suffered huge losses, and from the battle after, his strength wasn't even at pinnacle emperor. The human's strength wasn't even enough to scare off the huge number of emperors. Hence many were still hesitating, with only very few having fled first. Most chose to simply stay and watch.

The space ripples kept shaking as more batches of emperors arrived.

"Just one human?"

"That's him, the human Yang!"

"Kill!"

"Get the treasure!"

The sixth batch had just arrived with twenty one emperors. They saw that the one human Yang was surrounded by over 100 emperors. But, they had no way to know that the earlier emperors were stunned by the scene before. By coming later, they didn't get to see Blood Beast fleeing, or Heavy Arrow being forced into a coma. They just assumed the human was surrounded. Hence, the greedy emperors decided to rush in first and this batch of twenty one completely went for it...

Rumble...

The greedy group of emperors became resplendent beams of light shooting straight at Luo Feng.

"This group of idiots."

"It's not their fault. If we didn't witness the scene of Blood Beast fleeing or Heavy Arrow entering his coma, we would have rushed in too if there was only one human there. Anyway, we are all from the same camp, we don't have to worry about fighting each other for the treasure. Just a matter of whoever gets it first." The other onlooking emperors chatted.

Chapter 860: Flashing Blade

His space lock had remained activated throughout. Luo Feng wielded his blood shadow blade and flapped his wings, floating up and gazing at the eighteen silhouettes rushing over. There were two pinnacle emperors, six high emperors and ten low emperors that rushed into his space lockdown area.

"Pitiful other race warriors, I'll use you to leave a message." Luo Feng muttered.

"Kill!"

"Kill that human."

"Take the sacrificial tower treasure!" The eighteen emperors were all filled with killing intent, unleashing their energies as they rushed over.

Luo Feng flapped his wings and became a blur. Shua! Shua! Shua! He left warps in the air as he slashed straight at one high emperor. That undying was covered in flames all over, even his eyes were burning and he wielded a huge metal chain. When Luo Feng rushed over, he whipped the chain forward to wrap about Luo Feng.

Xiu!

Luo Feng became a demonic blur. He used the poison shadow blade to defend against the chain and rushed close to the undying, unleashing moon policy. A glaring silver slash tore through the space, lasting long after. The slash tore through the armor of the undying and slashed his body.

In an instant...it left 0.4 drops of Fei Mo poison on him...

This immolating undying stared wide eyed in shock, after which he instantly crumbled and fell.

"What!"

"He's dead?"

"How can a high emperor be killed instantly?" The large group of emperors watching from far were all shocked. Even though many had seen Heavy Arrow fall into his comatose state, however the initial moment they saw him, he was already heavily damaged and was almost about to fall. Secondly, they guessed it was related to the cloud contact vine.

This time however, they witnessed...

The silver slash that slashed past the undying, instantly reducing the high emperor to nothing. This was a high emperor, and the cloud contact vine didn't even appear.

Under normal circumstances, only an emperor limit could kill a low emperor that easily. As for a high emperor...to easily kill one was an extremely hard thing to do, unless one was an emperor proficient in soul attacks. Soul attacks were incredibly complex things, the power was terrifying, but at the same time, it was incredibly hard to use. Normally out of tens of emperors there would only occasionally be one who was proficient in it.

...

Luo Feng's blade completely caused the onlooking emperors and other seventeen rushing over to be shocked. The battle however didn't give these seventeen time to think.

"The Fei Mo poison sure depletes fast." Luo Feng kept the goods of that fallen undying and flashed his wings, rushing at another low emperor. The blade only briefly touched the chain and I lost about 0.5 drops. Also, I used another 0.2 drops on his armor, only 0.4 drops truly attacked his body.

The weakness of the poison was obvious.

Because it was melded with the blade, at an emperor level fight, weapons would clash and the space about would be destroyed, and the force was several times that of stars clashing. Such a clash

would use some of the poison on the blade. Hence, it's optimum usage method...was when Luo Feng used it to kill Purple Clock.

First destroy the undying body, making them unable to defend.

Then slash the undefendable body. Without the armor or weapon to defend, how easy would it be?

However, destroying the undying body alone was tough.

"I'm simply getting my money's worth. 300 billion mixed elements gets me one kg. Its power is not bad already, I can deal with the flaws." Luo Feng easily flashed past the low emperor's attack and his silver slash flew past the head of that emperor, after which, he too crumbled.

He had fallen!

"Killing a low emperor sure is easy, he's already weaker and I only used 0.1 drops to break the armor. The other 0.3 drops completely attacked his body."

"Kill!"

Luo Feng rushed at another high emperor.

...

His slashes were incredibly precise. As a self created pinnacle technique, in terms of usage and precision, even the primal chaos city leader praised it. It was terrifying and beautiful. It was a slash that tore through the skies, with undyings falling. Each slash resulted in emperors falling...

No one could withstand it, as every slash represented the death of another emperor.

"Surround and attack him."

"Surround him." The undyings wanted to surround Luo Feng, but his speed was simply demonic. The eighteen that had rushed over had already fallen. No one was able to keep up with him. The silver wings flapped and he warped about, easily dodging the emperors

and aiming for his next target.

Whoever he killed was completely up to him.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

Flashes of his blade were terrifying and beautiful, and painful screams could be heard as the high and low emperors didn't have any hopes of ever being revived by the universe masters.

"Flee!"

"Quickly flee!"

"We can't take his blade, he is too terrifying." The other emperors began to flee. However, even so, their speed was far from Luo Feng's. With a flap of his silver wings, he caught up to another group and circled them. There were three flashes of his blade.

Another three emperors fell. Finally, the last five emperors fled into the distant group of other emperors.

******

Luo Feng wielded his blood shadow blade in the air. Gazing at the up to 200 emperors that had come, there was silence in the air as everyone was shocked by the scene before.

Eighteen emperors rushed forward, among which, only five remained. There were two pinnacle emperors,one high and two low within.

The other thirteen had all fallen!

Thirteen emperors!

In the history of the Yan Ji continent, the percentage of emperors falling was extremely low. For thirteen to fall at once, such an event hadn't occurred in a very long time. The last time it happened was probably hundreds of millions of years ago, back when Ghost Mound emperor let loose. His name grew from that incident as he became a pinnacle being amongst trillions of races.

"He actually killed so many emperors at once, some of which were high emperors and some close to pinnacle emperors. Yet they all died so easily."

"His bladework is perfect, and there are laws infused within too. His slashes aren't like space laws or gold laws at all, or any other laws." They all didn't know that Luo Feng was trained in the Beast god path, which was the fusion of gold and space.

This was extremely rare in the universe, and these emperors had never seen it before.

"What are you afraid of!"

"What are you afraid of." A short pinnacle emperor howled. "Can't you all see that he's only dealing with the low and high emperors, not ever touching the pinnacle emperors? That means his strength is insufficient, otherwise why wouldn't he attack them?"

"Fen Nong emperor, didn't you see Blood Beast emperor fleeing and Heavy Arrow falling into a coma?"

"Hmph, that's enough to scare you? That human has probably used up all his trump cards already. Everybody saw it, and after all that he shouldn't have the strength of an emperor limit. To do so much...means he must have paid a huge price, and he probably can only do such a thing once. Would there be a second time? And we already have over 200 emperors here. Will over 200 emperors be scared off by merely one human?"

"You can go ahead first, stop instigating the others to their deaths."

The warriors watching all had different opinions.

Suddenly a boom resounded within the space about.

"Attention all automaton camp undyings."

This sound made all the undyings look over. It was from the

human Yang of whom they had surrounded. The silver winged human wielding the blood shadow blade smiled, "Don't worry, the emperor limits are all extremely powerful beings. There's no way for me to easily kill them, I just have to pay a big enough price, like this thing I have here..."

He flipped his hand and a beautiful black crystal with red lights on it appeared. The entire crystal had 10,081 sides with law engravings all around it, the undyings all felt the terrifying energy within.

"Strongest flame god crystal!"

"Hundred billion indigo gems for one!"

"It can even kill emperor limits! Pinnacle emperors will definitely die!"

The over 200 emperors there all looked on with shock. This was the strongest crystal that anyone could create. As its strength was absurd, the moment it exploded, even if the over 200 undyings used all their strength together to defend against it, 90% of them would still fall! Afterall, none of them were emperor limit.

...

Against the restless 200 emperors, Luo Feng smiled, simultaneously connecting to the virtual universe and contacting Xi Wu emperor and shutting off his space lock.

He simply wanted to scare them off this time. He wanted them to know he is not one to be messed around with!

As for massacring all of them?

He only had four such strongest flame god crystals. He had used two before and only had two more left. And to instantly kill all the automaton emperors on Yan Ji continent, it would definitely enrage a lot of absolute beings in the automaton camp. The emperor limits may get together and other powerful background warriors may want to come deal with him.

That would be troublesome.

"Scaring them is enough. I don't have enough strength to deal with the trouble." He thought. "And my strength now is obviously lacking, I'm still weak going head to head with the stronger undyings."

...

Over 200 emperors surrounding Luo Feng. When the black silhouette Xi Wu emperor teleported beside Luo Feng, he was shocked.

"So may emperors?" He was completely stunned, "Yang, what's going on?"

"Don't worry." Luo Feng wielded the strongest flame god crystal.

When Xi Wu emperor saw that crystal, he too was shocked, after which he looked at the over 200 undyings and guessed what happened. They were all stunned by the crystal, within, he couldn't help but feel respect for Luo Feng. "This Yang sure has got some guts, and he's crazy enough. To be able to deal with over 200 undyings, he must have some ability."

"Let's go." Luo Feng said.

"Ok." Xi Wu immediately teleported with Luo Feng.

Hua.

They vanished and teleported far away.

The distant over 200 emperors watched as Luo Feng left with his friend, and no one even tried to stop him. They were completely scared from the appearance of that crystal.

Chapter 861: Blade River Emperor

Over 200 emperors there were all stunned, watching as Luo Feng simply left. None of them felt that it was a disgrace. Over their long lives, they had all experienced life or death situations many times, and they all had a certain set of rules. Maybe it was natural for them to want to steal the sacrificial tower treasure from a weaker warrior, that he wasn't fit to hold it

But that human earlier, was he weak?

Heavy Arrow was in a coma, Blood Beast had fled, Purple Clock and thirteen other emperors were all killed by his blade. This type of result, which of the 200 emperors here could do that?

"Powerful!"

"Too strong."

"In that instant, thirteen emperors fell, terrifying."

"Despicable Purple Clock! He even called us over before he died. He truly had evil plans, he knew that even Blood Beast and Heavy Arrow couldn't deal with this human, yet he called us over. He definitely deserved to die!"

"Purple Clock deserved to die."

The groups of emperors there all chatted. Luo Feng's performance earlier had truly subdued all of them, it made them respect him. Without a doubt, he was a true strong warrior, and for such an absolute warrior to hold the treasure was natural.

If even such a warrior wasn't fit to hold the treasure, who amongst these over 200 emperors was?

"That human Yang, even though he seemed low profile, his strength definitely doesn't pale in comparison to an emperor limit. From now on...there's one more absolute warrior we should fear in this twenty seventh battlefield...the human Yang!"

"Does this human not have a title?"

"We only know him as Yang, we've never heard of his title."

"Never heard."

"We've never heard either."

"His bladework was exquisite, each slash formed rivers that lasted for a long time. One slash alone resulted in one emperor falling, and the thirteen slashes across the sky killed thirteen emperors. From what I see, we should call him Blade River emperor."

"Blade River emperor?"

"Not a bad name, the moment I hear that name, I recall what happened earlier."

...

As the group of watching emperors discussed, they all agreed on a title for the human. Some warriors were given their titles from some super powers during their official days or emperor days, however others were named through terrifying incidents, or battle results that made everybody agree on a name together.

Without a doubt, the latter kinds had more persuasive abilities.

******

The battle for the sacrificial tower treasure thus came to an end, and the result of the battle ended with the title...Blade River emperor! He had killed fourteen emperors and put an emperor limit in a coma. He even chased Blood Beast emperor away. Such a result made his title spread even faster!

The automaton camp had their virtual world, within which the over 200 emperors had talked about him with their friends and described his strength.

From a hundred to ten thousands, and ten thousand to a million.

The bug camp, human camp, the demon camp, everybody soon received news about it and because the news was so terrifying, whoever heard it spread it even more.

"What? fourteen emperors fell?"

"Heavy Arrow is in a coma? That's an emperor limit, how did he lose so badly?"

"Human Blade River emperor?'

"Blade River emperor is too powerful."

"Is he that strong?"

...

And the one that managed to get away, Blood Beast emperor naturally heard of the discussions in camp. This camp was the automaton base closest to Yan Ji continent, and the news naturally spread like wildfire here. He naturally became a stepping stone for Blade River emperor's name to rise.

The news of Blood Beast fleeing in fear spread fast.

"Scum." He grit his teeth. "That human simply relied on the strongest flame god crystal! If he didn't have that, how could he deal with me!"

"Scum, despicable scum!" He howled within.

He had also received calls from several friends along with mails, asking him about what happened. This made it hard for him to live.

"My undying body is severely damaged, losing 42%. If I continue here in the outer region wars, my enemies will definitely deal with me while I'm weak. Hm, it's time I returned to the race and recuperate." Blood Beast took the base's travel points and headed back to automaton territory.

Through a secluded area in the territory, he teleported via god country.

Within his vast god country.

Weng!

A shrine floated within the highest peaks of the god country, and suddenly a blinding blood colored light lit up and engulfed the entire god country.

The grass, flatlands, mountains, islands and other regions had countless single eyed men and women that looked up at the light, after which they all knelt down excitedly. Trillions of such people shouted in worship in their own tongue, "God! God! God!"

A sea of shouts filled the entire god country.

Within the core of the god country, within the shrine.

Blood Beast sat in his throne and heard the calls from the countless people in his god country. He began to smile, as his mood started to brighten up.

Sou! A distant beam of light flew over and more beams shot over, all entering the shrine. In an instant, nine undyings stood within. These were all soul slaves, hence naturally they were completely loyal to him. However only two of them were the same race as Blood beast, the rest were of other races.

Nine undyings, and only one emperor, the rest of them were officials.

"Master." The nine of them bowed respectfully.

"From now on, I will stay in here for a long time. I'll appear after a 100 million years, and my territory will be left to Ba Nuo Er to take care of." His voice boomed within the over 10,000 km tall shrine.

"Yes master." A snake head undying replied respectfully.

"Master, you injury..." A single eyed male said anxiously below.

"You can all leave."

Blood Beast said solemnly.

"Yes." The nine of them bowed respectfully and left, leaving only Blood Beast in his shrine.

He was already calm now, muttering, "Blade River emperor..."

Even though he was enraged, he recognized how terrifying of an enemy Blade River was. To produce two strongest flame god crystals...even his own entire wealth wasn't enough to buy two, and Blade River even managed to withstand the full blast.

Just these two points alone made Blade River terrifying.

"You, were nameless before."

"And now you've become renowned as I became your stepping stone. However, I know that an emperor capable of withstanding the strongest crystal blast, definitely will achieve a lot more in the future." He muttered, "Unless I breakthrough to become a knight, it will be hard for me to match you."

"I'll appear a hundred million years later."

Rumble...

The shrine door closed and he began his long road to recovery...

Actually to a being like Blood Beast, they all had extremely long life spans, just like True Yan. A 100 million years was but a short portion of their life, and staying shut in for that amount of time was a very normal thing for them.

******

Within the primal universe primal chaos city.

True Yan had always been observing Luo Feng's growth. When Yang unleashed his strength and killed fourteen emperors, leaving Heavy Arrow comatose and Blood Beast fleeing, gaining himself the title Blade River emperor, True Yan immediately found out through the countless races that were spreading the news.

"Unbelievable."

"Even though he used countless treasures, Luo Feng was still only a sector lord. How did he get so strong? Even a pinnacle emperor was killed by him, and an emperor limit was left in coma?" True Yan was stunned. No matter what, Luo Feng was still a sector lord!

Many treasures had harsh requirements to use, if one had insufficient strength, it was hard to unleash its strength.

The general armor required hundred sector lord's strength in foundation to be used. Luo Feng had this because he had become a black warrior, trained in the Nameless manual's second volume and used beast god transformation. That was why he could use the general armor! It was obvious that even with treasure, it was still hard to raise one's strength that much.

"True Yan!" A booming voice resounded within True Yan's mind.

True Yan was shocked.

He immediately replied respectfully, "Primal chaos city leader."

"The news of Luo Feng being Blade River emperor must be kept a complete secret. It cannot be spread." The booming voice resounded within his mind.

"Yes."

...

Within the primal ruins, amidst the vast corpses all about, the city leader sat silently within.

"Even though Luo Feng relied on the flame god crystals, Fei Mo poison, and Sha Wu wings, he is still only sector lord, and he even used his earth body, to do so much..." Even though he paid attention to Luo Feng, he was still one of the pinnacle beings of humanity itself. Many important matters were handled by him and many other even more critical problems were all solved by him. He at most occasionally checked in on Luo Feng.

He was very clear...

The universe was fair. How much strength could a sector lord unleash, even with a lot of treasures? Making an emperor limit fall into a coma, how hard was that?

"Is it linked to the Yan Shen King armor? But the techniques used by the Yan Shen race themselves are gone, and the requirements on the body alone are extremely harsh. Normally only low emperors can fully use the king armor. My disciple, can his earth body trigger the strength of the king armor?" He said softly. "Looks like I'll have to find time to talk to him properly."

"Blade River emperor..."

"Interesting. He is able to receive an emperor title at sector lord level." He then closed his eyes and stopped thinking about Luo Feng, as he had to focus on the predicament his true body was in...

Chapter 862: Ancient Clock

When the name of Blade River emperor spread about, many emperors that Luo Feng had gotten close to immediately contacted him. They were incredibly passionate with their greetings. Luo Feng initially still dealt with them, "I was forced to do so, Blood Beast and Heavy Arrow both wanted to kill me. I had no choice but to give my all! Hence it ended up like that."

"Luck, just luck."

"Haha, thanks."

After dealing with some friends, he couldn't be bothered anymore and shut off his virtual universe reception.

******

Within his internal world.

A silver armored Luo Feng stood at the peak of a mountain, looking at the few treasures that laid there. Those emperors had ancient robes, powerful weapons and seemingly special perfect armors and some world and space rings. Luo Feng's gaze naturally landed on the ancient clock.

"Ancient clock." Luo Feng thought, "I better examine this carefully."

To examine this ancient clock, he sent his earth body into the internal world. As for outside...he let the golden horned beast with the Sha Wu wings lay hidden within a cave. In terms of strength, the beast was much stronger than his earth body, as it didn't fear any warriors outside.

"These words..."

The ancient clock had countless complex words on it, they were blocky letters but not like any he had seen before.

"Babata, do you recognize these words?" He asked mentally.

Babata had frequently searched through the virtual universe network, and any language that Luo Feng could search for with his status had been completely memorized by Babata.

"I know countless languages, yet I haven't seen this one before." Babata replied.

"Ah."

Luo Feng nodded and didn't ask anymore, and gathered his focus on the clock. It was about 3m tall and had a diameter of close to 3m. There were also countless words on it. From the looks of it... these words seemed to have some relationship, almost like a formless thread weaved through them, forming peculiar engravings.

"I don't understand it." He shook his head.

"I'll first meld with it." He gently touched its body. A heat wave pulsed through him, almost like a soldering iron, he immediately sent spirit energy in. The ownerless clock swiftly absorbed the energy and easily recognized Luo Feng as its new master.

Rumble...its consciousness howled.

An ancient message poured into Luo Feng's mind before it finally stopped.

"Battle technique, Demon note Flame god clock?" Luo Feng frowned. A technique on how to use the clock pulsed through his mind, however all he got was the first level. Only when one had completed this first level would he be able to read the second level.

However the requirements for this first level alone were extremely harsh. It required one to comprehend the fire and space laws well to make progress.

"It's no wonder Purple Clock could control the force of the flame god crystal explosion that way to kill Gold Cang. He should have completed the first level." Luo Feng muttered. "Just the requirements for the first level alone are so high. Looks like this is

a treasure suitable for knights."

Luo Feng's perspectives were incredibly high, like these items that were incredibly strong right from the beginning, which had harsh requirements too, obviously it was suited for warriors to grow to knights before using.aaawassss

"Fusion!"

Luo Feng tried fusing it into his body, but it seemed to be stopped at his skin level. The general armor imprint on his body shook violently.

"Hm?" He frowned. With a thought, the silver armor vanished and he forced the General armor pearl out. at this point, he was only wearing the cloud contact armor. He tried fusing with the ancient clock again.

Hu!

In an instant, the clock melded into his body, into his muscles and organs, becoming one with him.

"So it's like that." He shook his head, "This ancient clock is worthless to me, it's such a pity."

The clock was indeed a true treasure. I could diffuse 90% of soul and physical attacks! It's defensive abilities seemed to be on par with the General armor. Of course, the general armor gave him the strength of 10,000 sector lords...this was something the clock didn't have, however the general armor had harsh requirements for usage too. Other humans couldn't even use it. But the ancient clock didn't have such problems in recognizing its owner, as long as one sent in his spirit imprint, that would do it.

He had to admit that this was a true treasure.

And a priceless one at that.

But it was useless to him.

Because defensive items had ultimately limited usage. For

example, those that could meld with his skin meant that he could only wear one of these. It wasn't such that...one warrior could simultaneously wear ten to hundred armors. The general and soldier armor pearls melded into the muscles and organs etc, that meant he could only have one at a time.

It was impossible...

For one to wear several king armors, general and soldier armors together. To wear another, he had to first force out the previous one.

To meld with the ancient purple, he had to force the general armor pearl out!

The logic was the same, similar defensive items couldn't work together.

The general armor and the ancient clock, Luo Feng could only pick one at a time. He would naturally pick the general armor.

"This is definitely a treasure, one that is used by knights." He said softly. "It's a pity that I have the general armor already! The golden horned beast even has the stronger king armor! These armors are better suited for me..."

...

Even though he was somewhat disappointed, he was still very happy, as this was still a true treasure. In terms of price it should far exceed the 560 billion, and he had another thought...True Yan had always been good to him, this may help him.

"Let's see my other rewards." Luo Feng instantly left the internal world and entered a world ring.

A vast desert was within the world, and there lay a powerful undying body. Even in a comatose state, the formless pressure... was still as terrifying.

"Heavy Arrow emperor."

He smiled and faced him. "Back when you were heavily injured, you chose to self destruct. If you did so...countless years later you may be revived, even though you'll have to pay a huge price. However, after becoming my slave, you'll never have that possibility. Back then you still had the hopes of fleeing, you didn't expect the three thorns of the cloud contact vine to pierce your body, forcing you into a comatose state."

It was extremely rare for such a thing to happen.

Heavy Arrow didn't expect the cloud contact vine to pierce his body and corrode his undying body, forcing him into a coma.

"From today on, you'll become my slave." Luo Feng looked at Heavy Arrow before him, nad unleashed the 10,000 soul control technique. Unlike controlling the bug queen Alina before, even though she too was in a comatose state, that was a technique Hu Yan Bo had used on her.

The moment Luo Feng used his move, Alina awoke and began to resist.

Heavy Arrow however was seriously injured, and he had lost his consciousness. Right now he was like a fish waiting to be sliced, with no resistance whatsoever.

In an instant...

"Success." Luo Feng smiled.

However as he looked at Heavy Arrow lying there lifelessly, he frowned. Right, he had control over Heavy Arrow, but it did nothing to help his injuries. He was still in a comatose state from his injuries, like this, Heavy Arrow was useless to him.

"I have to recover his strength and his undying body." Luo Feng pondered. "There are many treasures in the universe that can help his recovery, but they are all extremely expensive. How much should I spend to recover this emperor limit slave, is it worth it?"

"However, this is an absolutely loyal slave, who is able to

teleport. With him helping me, my exploration of the universe will be much more convenient."

"I'll first go research."

******

He had killed fourteen emperors in total this time. A few armors, weapons and treasures in world rings added to a lot. Like the silver armor Purple Clock wore, this alone was worth fifty billion in the Hong alliance city shops, as it was capable of diffusing 50% of physical attacks!

50% and 90%, it may seem small in difference.

In truth, diffusing 50% allowed Purple Clock's defense to double. Diffusing 90% meant ten times the defence! It was obvious that the ancient clock, general and king armor, these were all extremely priceless. The general and king armors could be used in many ways, and their prices were definitely shocking. Even so, the king armor was still only regarded as being worth fifty billion in the Hong alliance treasure shop.

...

Luo Feng spent two days through the virtual universe network and Hong alliance before finally confirming the price of his goods.

Heavy Arrow's wealth was worth about sixty billion mixed elements (Luo Feng took off his ring and forcefully broke into it to take his treasures.)

The wealth of the thirteen emperors added together was about fifty billion mixed elements.

Purple Clock's wealth was worth about 120 billion, not counting the ancient clock!

In total.

230 billion mixed elements plus the ancient clock!

"It's still best to deal with powerful warriors like Purple Clock, as

the rewards are much higher." Luo Feng muttered. "After killing the normal emperors, thirteen of them only gave me fifty billion, and it created such a fuss. The more I kill them the more I'd attract the attention of the super beings."

"Hmph."

"Purple Clock type of warriors are the best. However, these special encounters warriors usually have powerful trump cards." He thought, "Killing them is hard too."

"Like me, whoever kills me would truly strike it rich."

"But killing me wouldn't be that easy." He thought, "If forced into a critical situation, I can call for the primal chaos city leader to save me! The moment he appears, anyone would be stunned! Seems right, the Sha Wu wings are such a treasure, I only got it because he gave it to me. If it weren't a gift from such a super being, stealing it would only be a dream."

Stealing the ancient clock was still possible.

But the Sha Wu wings? That was but a dream.

"If I have to let him appear, I would be too much of a failure." Luo Feng shook his head.

"What should I do now, how should I deal with these goods and the sleeping Heavy Arrow?" Luo Feng had more problems now, but fortunate problems.

Chapter 863: Recovered Heavy Arrow Emperor

Through Luo Feng's study on how to awaken and recover Heavy Arrow, he came to know of one good and one bad news.

The good news was that even though Heavy Arrow was an emperor limit, the level of emperor limit was through body amplification techniques that rose his strength for an instant. The overall energy still didn't change, just like how the golden horned beast uses Deities of the world.

However the reason behind the strength growth was the shrinking of the body and increased density of muscles etc.

The comatose Heavy Arrow naturally had dispersed his amplification technique, his body now was at most a normal pinnacle emperor

Hence to recover Heavy Arrow or a pinnacle emperor had no difference.

The bad news was...

There were 2 parts to his recovery, one was to awaken and the 2nd was to recover. As long as he was awake, he would have his own consciousness, he could personally absorb the treasures and energy to recover, while asleep, he couldn't do it himself, hence the amount of treasure needed was much more expensive.

The awakening stage required 63 billion mixed elements, even though it was simply raising his undying body from 12% to 20%, it was extremely expensive.

The recovery stage required 58 billion.

It may not seem like much, but an emperor limit's entire wealth was but about that much. They had accumulated that amount over countless years, like Blood Beast, he would rather lock himself in

to train slowly over a 100 million years than spend that amount.

...

In space, the 26th camp.

"Bought!" Luo Feng sat on the peak of the snow mountain and gritted his teeth, "No matter what, this is an emperor limit! A living one has space to grow, with the resources that I provide...it would definitely be faster than his own training, he might get even stronger."

In terms of strength, Heavy Arrow was stronger than Luo Feng.

However in terms of resources, he was an other race undying, how could he compare to Luo Feng of humanity? Luo Feng was the disciple of the primal chaos city leader, his resources were much more. Taking some and giving it to his soul slave would be plenty for his slave.

...

The following days were spent buying and selling, luckily the dealings weren't as complex as when he had to sell the treasure from the sacrificial tower. It was much easier this time.

Half a month later.

230 billion mixed elements, he spent about 120 on buying the materials required for Heavy Arrow to fully recover, he also spent another 30 billion on another strongest flame god crystal, leaving 80 billion plus the little left from the treasure from before.

His cash was about 90 billion, he wasn't in a rush to use it.

Whether it was strengthening Deities of the world or the cloud contact vine, or the 1,000 vine star eating plant, this amount was far from enough. Luo Feng sighed, "A plant life form and automaton weapons etc, these all rely heavily on countless treasures, and the countless treasures...require huge amounts of wealth!"

******

1 month after Blade River emperor got famous, within a world ring.

A nutrition cabin built according to Blade river's specifications, 10m long and 4m wide lay on the sand, black clothed Luo Feng looked at the sleeping Heavy Arrow beside him and used his world energy to drag him into the cabin.

Di! Luo Feng gently pressed the button.

Hua...

A transparent cover on the surface automatically closed, simultaneously releasing a large amount of liquid and materials within, many were broken down fragments and placed within the liquid. The most expensive was 1 San Jin Bo Luo leaf, this leaf alone took up 50 billion of the total amount of 63 billion.

Chi chi chi...the liquid engulfed Heavy arrow as the mysterious energy seeped into his body, the liquid began to bubble and boil about.

"It's begun." Luo Feng muttered softly.

"Heavy arrow, if you didn't become my slave, you'd probably sleep for countless years." Luo Feng looked at the cabin and smiled, "Of course if given the choice, you probably wouldn't choose to become my slave. No matter how weak you are, it's still your own, no matter how strong a slave is, he's still a slave...it can't be helped, this is the rule of the strong. You were forced by me into a coma, who can you blame? You can only blame your own lack of strength!"

Minutes and seconds passed.

The liquid within began to grow dim, about 3 days later, Luo Feng, who had been standing beside all the while could feel a ripple of consciousness from his slave.

"Almost." Luo Feng smiled.

The moment that ripple was there, it only took another hour for Heavy arrow to regain consciousness.

Hu la! The liquid in the cabin instantly became clear as the treasures within were swallowed immediately.

The transparent cabin opened.

Heavy arrow jumped out onto the sand, looking at Luo Feng, he couldn't help but exclaim, "One moment's folly and I've become an eternal slave. However for master to use such valuable treasures to awaken me, he must be a good master." With control on his soul, Heavy arrow naturally had a good impression of Luo feng, filled with worship.

He sensed that he was now a slave and being controlled, however he had no sense of disobedience at all. The control worked on the very essence of the soul, he naturally regarded his master as good and obeyed him.

This was a soul slave!

From the soul, he was an absolutely loyal slave.

Unlike the microchip controlled slaves, even though they were controlled, they were still unhappy from within, wanting to change their fates. A soul slave never had that possibility.

"Master." Heavy arrow bowed respectfully.

"Hm." Luo Feng looked at him, a black armor appeared on Heavy arrow along with a mask. He was over 8m tall, even though he bowed extremely low, it was still like talking to a 3 storey tall giant, it didn't feel good.

"Shrink to my height." Luo Feng said.

"Yes master." Heavy arrow immediately shrank, quickly changing to 1.7m, he bowed almost like a butler.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

An undying could easily change his size, however it would affect their strength, the original size was the optimum size. Heavy arrow would lose 30% of his strength by shrinking so much!

"Stay this way normally, only return to your original form during battle." Luo Feng said.

"Yes master." Heavy arrow replied respectfully, "However I just awoke, and my undying body isn't even at 20%, my strength is greatly affected."

"Later, I will help you recover your full strength quickly." Luo Feng flipped his hand and immediately an ancient clock appeared in mid air, landing on the sand. Heavy arrow looked at it, his eyes gleaming, the powerful energy emanating from it would make anybody turn.

Luo Feng smiled.

"That's a true treasure." Heavy arrow was excited, such a treasure was normally used by knights. To emperors...very few actually had such a treasure.

"Give it a shot." Luo Feng smiled, he had already gotten rid of the spirit imprint on it before, it was currently without a master. Even though in his plan, he had wanted to help his teacher True Yan, seeing if it was suitable for him, that was something for when he returned to Primal chaos city, it was best to pass it to Heavy Arrow first.

And the ancient clock was suited for a warrior proficient in fire and space laws, his teacher true yan was proficient in ground and space, it was hard to tell if it would be useful to him.

"Yes." Heavy arrow was very excited, he rubbed the clock and left his spirit imprint.

Hu!

The clock entered his body and a faint clock silhouette appeared on the surface of his skin, hiding itself after.

"Hm?" Heavy Arrow's eyes seemed worried.

"Master." He said respectfully, "This ancient clock has to be triggered by one proficient in fire and space laws. And i...relied on the ground laws to become undying, even though I have some comprehension of the fire laws, it's not much."

"Ah?" Luo Feng looked at him.

Heavy arrow said nervously, "However I did get recognized by the fire laws too, even though after reaching undying, my body has already become part of the ground laws and it's hard to comprehend others. I still ultimately have been recognized for the fire laws, there's still some hope."

"Haha..." Luo Feng smiled, "I'll let you use it for now, even if you are unable to use its other abilities, just its defense is extremely powerful. Hurry and comprehend more of the fire law."

"These are the treasures you need to recover."

Luo Feng casually tossed out a space ring at him, after Heavy arrow received it and checked, he was extremely gleeful, "Thank you master!"

"Hm, hurry and regain your strength, I'll need your help in exploring the dangerous regions of the universe." Luo Feng smiled.

...

At sector lord level, every law was easy and close.

At undying, the soul had already become part of the body, this was formed by undying energy and the law energies were a part of it. For example, if one used the ground laws to become undying, trying to study the other fire, water, light or wind laws after would be extremely hard, millions of times harder.

Of course there were exceptions.

If one had gotten recognized by the laws early on, there would be no backlash, it would simply be as hard.

Also...

The 5 basic laws added to one law above, the space law.

One could comprehend all 5 laws to become undying before studying the space law, even though there would be some backlash, there was a possibility of it still happening, only it was much harder than at sector lord level.

Wind, thunder and light could also be used to study the time law.

If one had studied the wind law but wanted to study the space law after, it was possible at sector lord level, however once he reached undying, it was impossible.

******

3 months passed in the blink of an eye and Heavy arrow regained his full strength, returning to his optimum strength.

Chapter 864: Star Tower

"Master, you wish to go to Star tower?" Within the villa, Heavy arrow carried a tray of dishes, his expression shocked, "This, don't you wish to leave the outer region wars, why are you going to star tower?"

Luo feng sat on the sofa and sipped his wine smiling, "I've already reached my contribution points quota, but since I've come all the way here, how can I not go to the most dangerous place in this battlefield, wouldn't it be a waste? In terms of danger level, Yan Ji continent is a whole level below star tower."

"It is indeed so." Heavy arrow said respectfully, "There are very few emperors on Yan Ji continent, however there are hundreds of thousands of emperors there on star tower."

"So many?" Luo Feng was shocked, "Our Hong alliance only has a total of over 3 million, this is only the 7th battlefield's star tower, how can so many emperors be there."

Even though he had planned on going, he hadn't fully studied up on star tower.

"It's not a lot." Heavy arrow said, "The Hong alliance and humanity itself are 2 different things. Anyone who joins the Hong alliance is from a race that completely ally themselves with humanity, any battle or war is completely controlled within humanity's leadership. The outer region war human camp is completely different...this is a lax camp, the Hong alliance is but a part of it. With trillions of races in the universe, and so many warriors here in the wars, many races that have no relationship with the Hong alliance would mix with humanity to be sent out here too."

"Hence, it may be said to be the war of the 4 pinnacle races, in truth, it's really the war of countless other races. Of course the number of warriors would be absurd."

"The number of emperors in total in the outer region wars... hehe, even if it's only 1% of the all the emperors in the universe, it would still be terrifying."

"This is one reason."

"Another reason is...star tower is a very special place, it's more dangerous than others and attracts more warriors." Heavy Arrow said, "As for it's specialty, if you check, you'll find out easily."

"Ah?"

Luo Feng sat on his sofa and looked ahead, ordering, "Projection."

A virtual projection appeared in mid air and Luo Feng's arm screen connected with it, he began to search through information on the virtual universe network.

...

A majestic 9 storey tower appeared on the projection, completely square shaped and similar to some towers in china on earth. Surrounding this majestic tower were countless nebula whirlpools that were simply mesmerizing.

Star tower, 9 light years tall, it had been here trillions of years ago when the battlefield was forged, over countless years, it had absorbed endless amounts of energy from the universe, forming the 9 whirlpool nebulas about. They seemed like nebulas but were in fact terrifying energy whirlpools.

9 nebula whirlpools, the ones closest to the tower was the strongest.

The 4th whirlpool, even emperors could barely withstand it, only a knight could safely enter.

The 7th, even a knight would perish.

...

The ancient star tower was completely black, its material was unknown, it was completely undamaged from the 4 pinnacles

forging the battlefield...even the powerful universe masters couldn't damage it.

...

There were the Sealed stars within the tower, every sealed star was about the size of a normal star, after melding, it could be used to seal warriors, after defeating them they could be sealed within this stars. The enemy would never be able to break out. Such a treasure...even the knights would go crazy for.

And within the 9 light year tall tower, it produced countless sealed stars, just like rain drops, even though they were true treasures, they were common within the tower.

It couldn't be helped...

Unless the sealed stars released themselves, even the knights had no way to forcefully take them out.

...

Information poured in as Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

"This, this, this..." he was shocked, "Even knights would die from the Nebula whirlpools? And, there are countless knight level treasure Sealed stars?"

"Right."

Heavy arrow exclaimed, "I heard that the powerful universe masters can safely enter the 9 nebula whirlpools. As for the sealed stars...look a the pictures behind, they do show many of them within, I've been exploring star tower for many years too, I've seen hundreds of them, yet I cannot obtain them, unless they break off themselves...otherwise there's no way to get them. I heard the absolute beings of the 4 pinnacle races had a huge war when they first discovered the star tower."

"Huge war?" Luo Feng was curious, even though his status was high, he had only lived for a few thousand years, he naturally

didn't know as many stories as an ancient being like Heavy Arrow emperor.

"Hm."

Heavy arrow nodded, "When the 4 pinnacle races forged the battlefield back then, they picked a distant star field and began their sweep. When they discovered star tower, those knights in charge of the sweep discovered how terrifying the 9 nebula whirlpools were, discovering that their attacks had no effect on the tower. They immediately regarded it as treasure, I heard they called the universe masters of their race over, for this star tower... the 4 pinnacle races had a huge war, I heard countless knights fell, as to who won, nobody knows. I only know that even the great universe masters couldn't do anything about the tower, leaving it here for countless years after!"

"Ah?" Luo Feng nodded.

The treasures could grow in size.

However, most were limited, like the Sha Wu wings, it could reach as wide as light years outside his body. However the prerequisite was his own strength.

This star tower was 9 light years tall, it produced countless sealed stars, but even universe masters couldn't deal with it.

"The countless races in the universe all have this saying...star tower is a unique treasure of the universe." Heavy arrow exclaimed, "It was a treasure that even universe masters would go crazy for, however, even within trillions of years in that space, no one was able to forcefully take it away, this was why it became renowned."

"Impressive." Luo Feng exclaimed.

An ownerless tower, able to form nebula whirlpools and easily destroy knights...causing the 4 pinnacle races to fight madly for it. However, even after that, no one was able to take it away...

treasures on the same level as the ancient clock were countless within...

Enough to make countless warriors go crazy for!

"Pinnacle races are the strongest races in the universe." Heavy arrow said, "The 4 races, even they weren't able to take it away. This has made countless warriors deduce...that relying on brute force alone is useless, the tower should be awaiting a master that was suitable. Or, that no one was worthy enough to be its master."

"Damn." Luo Feng choked.

"There are countless rumors, but every warrior hopes that they may be the lucky owner of the star tower, its reasoning is still unclear." He smiled, "And because countless warriors have this hope, there are many emperors around the star tower. And...the star tower would occasionally break off one of its sealed stars! Every sealed star is a true treasure capable of sealing away enemies, enough to make emperors go crazy for. Plus, even the universe masters are unable to destroy the area, naturally this became a pinnacle battleground."

Luo Feng nodded.

There were treasures suited for universe masters in the universe, like the Sha Wu wings, though it had little effect. Those special items that they used for battle, it was normal for them to be virtually indestructible.

"Widen my horizons." Luo feng exclaimed, "I have to go take a look."

"Heavy Arrow, let's go." Luo Feng got up.

"We are leaving now?" Heavy arrow was shocked.

"Right." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed with excitement.

"Yes master." Heavy arrow replied respectfully.

******

They travelled in the dark universe with the Yun Mo planet ship for 2 days, finally reaching the closest travel point to star tower.

...

Ripples appeared in the space and a malevolent triangular blood red ship appeared, within the control room, silver winged and armored Luo Feng stood alone. He had placed Heavy arrow within his world ring, in terms of battle strength, Luo Feng wasn't too weak, he was strong enough to explore star tower.

If he encountered danger, only then would he let Heavy arrow out. Revealing your trump card too early wasn't a wise thing to do.

"Wow!"

An automaton child jumped excited beside Luo Feng, pointing at the space ahead, "Luo Feng, look look, star tower, what a big star tower, 9 light years tall! This tower is so much bigger than those on Yan Ji continent, we are so far from it and yet it is already unbelievable."

Almost like it blocked off half of the universe, the tall majestic tower floated there.

The resplendent nebula whirlpools circled about the tower, madly swallowing endless amounts of energy, these 9 whirlpools were beautiful and also a warrior's nightmare, even knights would die within.

"Unbelievable, truly unbelievable." Luo feng looked at the star tower and muttered.

"Why so shocked? Didn't you read up on it, is there a need to be so stunned." The automaton child Babata mocked beside him.

Luo Feng was completely stunned.

When they successfully came out of universe travel, he felt a powerful calling instantly descend on him, that calling exceeded that of the soldier, general and king armor, even more than the

nameless manual metal board. It caused very cell in his body to shiver, to the point where his soul was shaking!

"A treasure like the nameless manual is calling me?" Luo Feng couldn't believe it.

Chapter 865: Entering the Tower

The tower didn't have a master that controlled it. Since it's nine nebular whirlpools were incredibly destructive, it was obvious why this tower was considered a legendary tower. However, for it to generate such a powerful calling on Luo Feng?

"Can I get the star tower?"

"Can I become its master?" Luo Feng didn't dare believe it, but the calling that he sensed in his soul was very evident, it was obviously coming from the tower.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng." The automaton child beside him Babata shouted, "Why are you spacing out?"

"Nothing." Luo Feng took a deep breath and calmed down.

Calm.

At this critical moment, it was crucial to remain calm and not let the calling get to him.

"The star tower has been here for over a trillion years. Even the universe masters couldn't handle it, it is legendary and priceless." Luo Feng thought. "Teacher gave the Sha Wu wings to me, but the star tower, with its endless supply of Sealed stars within, teacher couldn't give me something like that. It's obvious how much stronger this star tower is than the wings."

"If such a treasure were to land in my hands, would I dare use it?" Luo Feng thought. "Something capable of making the four pinnacle races fight over it. The moment I'm discovered to have it, many universe masters would rush over. Even if they couldn't control it, they would very likely make me their soul slave to control the tower through me..."

Strength and treasure were interdependent.

Without strength, one didn't have the right to have such a

treasure. The Sha Wu wings were a thing that only the primal chaos city leader knew about in the vast universe, no one else could recognize its abilities. Hence the city leader dared to give it to him.

The star tower...

Its reputation was huge!

In the vast universe, amongst trillions of races, who didn't know of the tower? If Luo Feng didn't have sufficient strength to take it, it would be a disaster! Acquiring it would leave him with only one choice, that was to hide it and wait till his strength rose. Only when he didn't have to fear the universe masters could he use it openly.

"I'm thinking too much, let's head over and take a look first. At least this proves one thing, that the tower is related to the nameless manual." Luo Feng sat in the Yun Mo planet ship and swiftly headed towards the tower.

The tower seemed close yet it was incredibly far away.

Looking at the tower that blocked off almost half of the entire universe, the ship that flew close to light speed took about ten more days to actually reach it. Even though he could easily use Heavy Arrow to teleport over...because the calling of the tower was messing with Luo Feng's mind, he forced himself to fly these ten days to calm himself down.

******

The star tower itself had the nebula whirlpools circling it.

The base of it however didn't have any. The lowest level 1 had nine entrances and many other race emperors and officials came to try their luck.

"We've arrived."

A silver beam of light stopped, Silver winged and armored Luo Feng stopped at the entrance.

Before the entrance, it was impossible to see the end of it. How high was nine light years? Compared to the sun, it was still a looming mountain.

"Let's see if it can recognize me as its master." Luo Feng took a deep breath, as he was incredibly nervous, calming himself down as his cells within burned with rage. He extended his hand to gently touch the huge over a million km tall entrance door. The black door was ice cold, and Luo feng was filled with anticipation as he touched it.

Back then, the soldier and general armor automatically entered his body and was easy to control.

"Hm?" He frowned, there was no reaction from the door at all.

"Recognize me." He sent a thread of spirit energy into the tower.

However it was like a drop of water falling into the ocean, instantly swallowed up. The tower remained the same and Luo Feng had no reaction from it whatsoever. He was somewhat anxious, trying with blood, changing his position, going to another door...basically he tried everything possible.

Failure, failure, and still failure!

"What's going on?"

"How can there be no reaction at all? Even if I cannot control it, it should still have some reaction, even the Sha Wu wings I got didn't act this way." He was very curious. "I feel like the entire tower is calling out to me strongly. However, no matter what I try, there's no reaction."

Sou!

A silhouette appeared from the distance behind Luo Feng, he flashed beside Luo Feng.

"Blade River emperor?" A passionate shout resounded.

Luo Feng turned to look, it was a malevolent looking other race

warrior with three curved horns and fangs, with a lizard tail on its back. It also had four legs and two arms. Luo Feng instantly recognized him, smiling, "Vulture emperor." Vulture was a renowned pinnacle emperor within the twenty fourth base. With Luo Feng's memory, he naturally recalled him easily.

"Haha, what a coincidence." Vulture smiled, looking even more malevolent than before. It could only be blamed on his race's appearance. Maybe to him, he thought that he was smiling very happily and being friendly, "I've heard of your incident before, and always wanted to meet you. It's such a coincidence for me to meet you here at star tower. Were you trying to get it to recognize you as its owner earlier?"

Luo Feng was stunned

"Give me a second, I'll give it a shot too." Vulture went to the side and tried all sorts of methods on it, be it blood, or spirit imprint etc. After awhile, he turned and shook his head, "Damn, looks like I don't have the luck. Any warrior that comes here for the first time, always gives it a shot. However over countless years, no one has ever succeeded."

Luo Feng smiled and nodded, "I failed too."

"Blade River emperor, how about we explore this star tower together?" He suggested. "There are many dangers within the tower and the tower itself is dangerous, along with hundreds of thousands of emperors...the battles can get terrifying." This invite was based on strength. Vulture had obviously not invited over by anyone when he came, and the name Blade River emperor was well renowned now. Vulture naturally wanted to have him on his side.

"No thanks." Luo Feng smiled and rejected.

Vulture didn't push it, they were after all from different races with their own mindsets and secrets etc, he naturally wouldn't ask further. He smiled and said, "Then I'll head in first." After which he became a blur and rushed into the tower.

Luo Feng waited a while before stepping in.

After confirming that the tower had a special connection with him, having other warriors around would make it troublesome. Luo Feng would rather head in alone. He even had his slave Heavy Arrow...why would he need a pinnacle emperor to go along with him.

...

He walked within the vast tower, each step crossing tens of thousands of km. His silhouette was simply a blur as he swiftly progressed. He could hear rumbling within the tower.

He had checked up quite a bit on the tower before and chatted with Heavy Arrow for awhile. Hence, he was clear about it's construct within.

The star tower was a massive skyscraper with many 'rooms' within. Naturally, each room was actually a forbidden space, and every one of them was secretly linked to each other.

Also...

The countless forbidden spaces would shift about occasionally.

Meaning even though staying inside of the star tower meant that one didn't move, as time flowed, the location of the tower would shift about.

"Forbidden spaces." Luo Feng was currently in one of these forbidden space. The pathway before had already sealed up and vanished behind him. This was an endless desert space, and at the edges, there were formless barriers that stopped anyone from getting close.

"Scanning devices, world projection, spirit energy scan, they can only be used within a forbidden space, and would be unable to reach outside or to another space. Teleportation can only be used within here too, I cannot teleport to another forbidden space." Luo Feng was clear on this point.

Getting out was easy.

Using god country teleportation would allow him to leave the star tower immediately. If he didn't need to, he would have to travel within the many forbidden spaces, until he found the pathway between two spaces.

"Star tower, nine light years tall, it holds countless forbidden spaces." Luo Feng looked about at this space.

Rumble...

The entire desert began to shake.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was shocked as he turned to look. All of the sand was shaking violently as a huge object seemed to climb out from the sand.

"I've never heard of Heavy Arrow talking about this." Luo Feng quickly summoned Heavy Arrow out.

Sou!

Heavy Arrow appeared beside him and said respectfully, "Master." Simultaneously, he noticed the shaking of the sand and his expression changed. "Such a huge disturbance? Master, the star tower is filled with dangers, and every forbidden space has its own dangers. Only they are normally dormant. Even if triggered, they have different levels of danger. The most dangerous thing about the tower is still mostly warriors killing amongst themselves. However, once the dangers of the rooms come out, they are terrifying. Such a huge disturbance means more danger! Master, did you just come in? Why does this forbidden space have such a huge disturbance?"

"This is the first forbidden room I entered." Luo Feng looked at the sand.

The sand grew upwards!

Almost like a wild beast awakening, hua hua...countless sand

particles fell off and a red armored being rose from within. Over 1,000km with a blur of over 10,000 sharp blades, a centipede like metal creature appeared. Its jade green eyes were looking at Luo Feng, and filled with killing intent.

"This, this 1,000km grade forbidden guard?" Heavy Arrow's eyes stared wide, he turned to Luo Feng, "Master, you actually attracted a 1,000km grade forbidden guard in your first forbidden room? I've been here over 10,000 years and been through countless rooms. The strongest I've ever encountered is only a 100km grade guard!"

Luo Feng frowned, "I definitely felt a strong calling from the tower, yet I was unable to make myself its master, and there was no special reaction. However the first room I entered, such a strong forbidden guard appeared...this, at least this is better than no reaction at all.

Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow were like two tiny ants, looking up at the huge forbidden guard.

Chapter 866: Forbidden Guard

"According to my research, the forbidden guards are metal automaton puppets." Luo Feng muttered. "Even though they are just puppets, they are extremely advanced, and are unaffected by soul attacks. Normally it's very hard to actually destroy their core within."

"Master."

Heavy Arrow looked at the huge fiery red centipede in the stand. Communicating mentally, "It's quite impossible to destroy it and soul attacks are ineffective. Even though it's energy core is very sturdy and hard to disrupt, we have only one choice...and that's to shake it enough to destroy its core within."

"I know." Luo Feng nodded, his eyes fixed on the guard.

Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow watched the centipede.

The huge centipede gazed down at them almost like a lion or tiger glaring at shivering rabbits, like it was mocking them.

"Howl!!!" An ear piercing cackle resounded from its throat. The sound itself rippled strongly throughout at light speed towards Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow. This caused their brains to shake from within. When Luo Feng awoke from the shock, the centipede had already vanished from its spot and appeared above them.

The huge body was almost like a cloud that covered them from above, crushing downwards.

The blur of claws along surrounded and began to attack the two of them.

Tear...

Tens of claws were aiming at them, and every one of these were tens of km long. They were thin, sharp and long blades with nine forks each. Each blade was taller than earth's tallest mountains

came slashing at them. They rotated like a meat grinder, the universe space was easily torn apart.

"Hmph!" Luo Feng wielded his blood shadow blade and snorted coldly as he rushed into the sky and unleashed his bladework, heading straight towards the huge body.

Hua!

A silver river slash appeared. Rumble...one of the claws clashed with his blade with a loud clang, being knocked aside as the surrounding other claws rushed madly at him.

"It's incredibly sturdy. Even my blade cannot break out of this." Luo Feng looked at the surrounding claws, his expression changing. He had initially wanted to attack the body of the centipede immediately. Only this had the highest possibility of shaking and disrupting its energy core within.

However with the claws surrounding it, he had no way to even touch the body.

Sou!

He flapped his wings, dodging over and over before the claws. They were thick and huge, hence Luo Feng could easily dodge and evade them.

"Break!!!" Not too far away, Heavy Arrow howled.

Luo Feng turned to look.

Heavy Arrow's energy had soared as he too was surrounded by tens of claws. He had unleashed his amplification technique and wielded his ancient bow, drawing and shooting his arrows. Just the backlash from the bow alone caused the space around to become stream particles. The arrow formed a demonic illusion and were incredibly condensed with energy, almost like two different shots.

As the arrow shot out, space split apart.

"Heavy Arrow emperor's dual arrow!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

It was one arrow, but it gave off the effect of two. This wasn't the space law's illusion technique, but rather the use of his powerful undying energy with law movement. The bow technique he used made it seem like two real arrows were shot out. Back then, when Heavy Arrow was chased by Luo Feng, he didn't even have enough strength to unleash this move.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The two arrows clashed hard against the many claws, knocking them aside.

Rumble...

The final arrow hit the stomach portion of the centipede, this was the full power of an emperor limit warrior!

Tear!

The first arrow forcefully tore at the stomach portion, revealing a wound as the second pierced right through. A huge cavity was left there as the centipede cringed, the claws that surrounded Luo Feng stopped their attacks too and withdrew.

"That powerful?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"Be careful master." Heavy Arrow flashed to beside him, communicating, "The forbidden guards have powerful defenses. Even invincible emperors have no way to tear through its body. From what I estimate, this one seems to have a weaker stomach portion, it may have other trump cards hidden."

Luo Feng was shocked.

Xiu! Xiu!

The two of them swiftly flashed and created distance between them and the centipede. It couldn't be helped, they were in a forbidden space, and it was impossible to escape.

Luo Feng carefully examined the twitching centipede, lightning

began to sprout from its torn up stomach region. Pa! Pa! Pa! Another head forcefully sprouted from the stomach hole as it tore open, the metal began to form a whole other centipede.

Stunned.

One centipede became two.

Cackle! Cackle!

The two howled and flew at them.

"One became two, don't tell me these two will become four?" Luo Feng flapped his wings and flew far away.

Cackle...

One centipede pierced through the skies, its countless claws climbing in mid air as the space around it shook violently. It chased Luo Feng, and its speed was pretty fast. However, with Luo Feng dodging with his max speed...even Heavy Arrow was far from his speed. This centipede could never catch up with him.

On the other end, another centipede was rushing at Heavy Arrow. Heavy Arrow once again shot an arrow at it.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

His powerful attack shot out!

The space about tore apart as the attack knocked away the claws!

The final vibrations hit the centipede's stomach...chi! Its stomach was pierced through. Heavy Arrow rushed angrily straight at the hole, countless claws madly slashed at him to stop him. But he had long prepared another arrow...easily knocking away all the claws as he took the chance to try and pierce into the body.

Just as he reached the hole and as about to rush in.

Chi!

A gold silhouette shot out from the hole, fast as lightning. Even

Heavy Arrow had no way to dodge.

Dang! It hit directly on his body and the ancient clock armor, knocking him far away. As he was flying backwards, he shot another arrow to breakthrough the other claws obstructing him.

Howl...

An ear piercing sound resounded throughout the space, shaking the entire desert.

The two huge centipedes stopped and landed on the ground.

Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow gathered.

"What's going on, why is it so hard?" Luo Feng frowned. Heavy Arrow looked at the two, especially the one with the hole in its stomach. It was twitching there with the gold silhouette that popped out before, almost like something was about to reveal itself.

"Master."

He said, "The true danger of Star tower is the hundreds of thousands of emperors. As for its own dangers, even though there are many, it shouldn't be so hard for an emperor limit like me. They are usually insufficient for me to burn my undying body... this time however, there's something wrong."

Chi chi chi...

That centipede with a hole in its head kept twitching at its stomach, some gold thing seemed to be climbing out.

"From what I know, there's only one reason why it's so troublesome." He said.

"Speak." Luo Feng felt something was amiss.

Heavy Arrow was an emperor limit.

If a forbidden guard had to force him to burn part of his undying body, then wouldn't all the pinnacle and high emperors be dead?

In truth...star tower couldn't be that dangerous, if a battlefield was that dangerous, why would so many emperors come?

"Star tower is usually very calm, unless a Sealed star is about to release." Heavy Arrow's eyes gleamed with fire.

"A sealed star is about to release?" Luo Feng was stunned.

"After we settle this guard, you can check with your friends in the virtual universe to see if those in star tower have encountered dangers too." Heavy Arrow said. "If a large group has encountered trouble, then a sealed star may possibly be released soon. A huge fight is about to occur here."

Luo Feng held his breath.

Defeating an emperor was easy, sealing was hard and killing was even harder!

And the Sealed star is a sealing treasure. As long as one was slightly stronger than the enemy, he could use the sealed star to seal his enemy within! The enemy would never be able to escape as its material was incredibly special. Once trapped within, even a knight wouldn't be able to forcefully break out.

Of course, it would be much more troublesome to seal a knight.

However it was still a true treasure, that was enough to make countless warriors from trillions of races go mad for. There were already many gathered here, while others may rush over. One could only imagine how brutal the bloodshed would be for the sealed stars. Every one of them would invite a huge massacre!

"Master, you just entered star tower and something like this is happening, looks like you are fated to get the sealed star." Heavy Arrow said. In a slave's heart, his master was the most important thing in the universe.

Pa pa pa!!!

The centipede with a hole in its stomach had its hole enlarged as

a gold armored creature climbed out. It was a 20m long gold armored scorpion, and its tail was sharp and bent. Heavy Arrow squinted at it, it was this tail that attacked him earlier.

Chapter 867: Danger

The two huge centipedes were each hundreds of km in length. This gold armored scorpion however was only 20m long. It was almost like an ant compared to the tw huge mountains.

Pa!

It gently waved its tail, causing explosions in the space around it. Tears could be seen as its dark blood red eyes stared hard at Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow.

Howl...it let out an ear piercing howl.

Cackle! Cackle!

The two huge centipedes obeyed it, lying down respectfully as the scorpion climbed on it, never taking its eyes off Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow.

Luo Feng stared back.

"Master, this gold armored creature is very strong. I only exchanged a quick blow with it earlier." Heavy Arrow said, "Even though it doesn't know any laws, its pure attack is still slightly stronger than a pinnacle emperor, and its tail...should be its strongest offensive weapon."

Luo Feng stared at the scorpion and replied, "Have you found its weak point?"

"No." Heavy Arrow said, "When I fought with the huge guard earlier, I discovered its body regions were weaker, and my arrows could pierce right through. However it could also be because it was hiding this gold armored creature within, hence it made its stomach region easier to break out off. As for this creature...its defense is much stronger, and dealing with it will be troublesome. It's not wise to butt heads with it. If we drag out this fight, we may discover the pathway out of this forbidden space, then we can swiftly leave. The guards have no way to leave their own space."

"Hm."

Luo Feng stared carefully.

He had the feeling that even though the scorpion was staring at the two of them, it seemed more focused on him, and not the stronger Heavy Arrow.

Howl...the creature suddenly howled.

Rumble! Rumble!

In the distance, the two centipedes lying down suddenly moved, both rushing at Heavy Arrow. Of course because of their size, and Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow were both close by, it seemed like both of them were simply attacking both of them. Luo Feng immediately dodged while Heavy Arrow went another direction.

Fight it out with the guards, using flame god crystals? Burning undying body? It wasn't worth it at all.

Drag the battle out!

Drag it till they discovered a pathway out.

"Cackle! Cackle!" The two huge centipedes called out, both rushing at Heavy Arrow, one on each side. With their huge form, it was almost like two red clouds descending on him, along with the blur of 10km long claws, it was like a blade forest which was engulfing Heavy Arrow.

An ancient clock appeared on his body. He was an emperor limit with an undying body, with the ancient clock protecting him... even the strongest flame god crystal explosion would hardly even make him lose 1% of his undying body. The two centipedes may seem powerful and capable of suppressing him but in truth, it was hard to harm even a hair of him.

...

"Weird." Luo Feng was stunned as he noticed the two centipedes attack Heavy Arrow.

"Howl..." The gold armored scorpion which was sitting in the distance finally made its move.

Xiu!

It waved its tail like a gold lightning bolt, piercing at Luo Feng.

"Let's see just how strong this scorpion is." Luo Feng was confident in his defense, plus the scorpion wasn't as huge as the centipedes. Being trapped by them was troublesome, against this scorpion however, with just 20m in size, Luo Feng could easily dodge...and escape.

The gold scorpion was a gold beam of light, and Luo Feng was a silver beam of light. The two of them instantly clashed.

Rumble...

A resplendent silver slash clashed with its claw, and the even fast tail of the scorpion formed a gold beam of light, piercing at the unstable Luo Feng who was flying backwards from the clash. Luo Feng however reacted fast enough, waving his wing infront.

Chi!

The sharp tail clashed with the Sha Wu wings. This force that had knocked away an emperor limit earlier caused Luo Feng to be knocked back in a silver beam of light. As for the scorpion, it had hit an immovable wall, the undamaged wings created a huge force back at it...

It caused the scorpion to roll backwards for awhile.

"Heavy Arrow is right." He flapped his wings to stop in mid air, gazing at the scorpion. "The tail is indeed powerful, against such an automaton puppet, the Fei Mo poison is useless."

"Then receive another attack."

Luo Feng wielded his blood shadow blade and instantly became a beam of light rushing forward.

Howl...the scorpion rushed at him too, force against force, it had

no fear.

Luo Feng raised his blade!

The scorpion used its pincers to defend.

Hua!

Luo Feng's right wing flapped hard as he unleashed moon policy. One had to know that this pinnacle technique was created for wing usage, and later on adapted for the blade. The scorpion which was defending against his blade was suddenly hit by the silver wing and thrown off balance.

As the distance between them was too close. Luo Feng had unleashed it when they had gotten extremely close.

Chi! The edges of the wing were incredibly sharp, and as a true treasure, its sharpness exceeded any blade.

Hua!

The space around was torn apart almost as though an invincible god had appeared to attack. A silver light followed the tear and slashed at the scorpion's body. As it touched, it became the special space energy of the Sha Wu wings that pierced inwards. Even an undying facing this energy would have his body destroyed somewhat. The defense of the scorpion too naturally weakened.

Ge chi chi chi...a weird sound, almost like a guillotine slamming into a steel bar could be heard, as the scorpion rolled backwards.

The gold armor seemed undamaged, however there was definitely damage within.

The scorpion however continued to roll into the distant desert until it stopped, lifeless.

Cackle! Cackle!

The distant huge centipedes immediately flew over, they didn't care about Heavy Arrow anymore. One of which opened its large mouth and swallowed the metal of the scorpion, after which it

glanced at Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow before burrowing into the sand.

Both centipedes burrowed deep into the sand and calm followed after.

Heavy Arrow flew over and landed beside Luo feng.

"It was that easy?" Luo Feng frowned.

Heavy Arrow who had been watching his fight said, "Master, I only clashed slightly with its tail earlier, as for his body's defenses, I wasn't clear about it. Your attack earlier did cause damage to its energy core within, it was afterall much smaller and the force of the attack could easily reach its core."

...

Hearing his explanation, Luo Feng agreed. Automaton puppets were indeed that way. Destroying their bodies was tough, normally the only way to deal with them was to destroy their core within.

However he still felt something amiss.

"Heavy Arrow has never encountered such troublesome guards after so many years in here. It's only my first time, and it's my first forbidden space, yet this happened."

"Also, the gold scorpion was drawn out by Heavy Arrow. Yet...it chose not to deal with him but rushed at me instead."

"And I can feel..."

"The gazes of both centipedes and the scorpion have emotions, they were filled with killing intent, and were trying to kill me."

"Did my coming here arouse their defenses?"

He frowned, pondering according to the situation before. Even though he could feel the strong calling from the tower, he was unable to become its master. It was completely different form the soldier, general and King armor. Also, getting a pinnacle treasure like the star tower...couldn't be that simple.

"The closer I am to victory, the more careful I have to be."

"The star tower is reacting differently to me. It can mean two things, one is that it's friendly with me, another is that it truly wants to kill me." Luo Feng thought. "If I was the creator of the tower, and I left this powerful tool here...I wouldn't casually hand it over easily to the later generations, especially by simply relying on luck? Not possible, even to the most pinnacle of beings in the universe, the star tower is still an incredibly huge treasure."

Luo Feng's soul could be excited, happy and gleeful, but he always maintained his calm.

Knowing oneself!

Laughing when it was the time, being excited, nervous, angry as needed! Everything was simply being himself, yet it didn't mean that he would lose himself to these emotions, or truly believe that his luck was heavenly, easily getting such a huge treasure like the star tower. If he was like that, he would very likely lose his life.

"I have a feeling."

"Star tower may be the place where I die." Luo Feng gazed about the desert forbidden space. The gold armored scorpion and centipedes had emotions in their eyes, they were filled with killing intent that made Luo feng shudder.

He wasn't fearful of the guards, rather...of the entire tower!

"The star tower had a master before, and its master may very likely be the creator of the nameless manual. I was lucky in attaining the manual, don't tell me, that the tower is specially used to deal with lucky people like me who got the manual unexpectedly?" Luo Feng thought. "Success means I'll live! Failure means death?"

Many thoughts flashed within his mind...

"Master master, I've discovered the pathway." Heavy Arrow shouted, waking Luo Feng from his thoughts.

"Ah, pathway?" Luo Feng looked over.

"Master, here." Heavy Arrow walked ahead.

Sou!

They quickly reached far away. There in the center of the desert, there was a whirlpool, and within the darkness...there was star light.

"This is the pathway, I've been through such pathways many times." Heavy Arrow said.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded, "Let's go."

They stepped straight into the whirlpool...

Chapter 868: Human Name

The moment they stepped through, they landed on a stone surface, leaving the desert forbidden space.

"This is..." Luo Feng was shocked and looked around.

Within the vast space.

A rock bridge spiraled into the distance. But, there were no beams supporting it, it simply floated there downwards.

"Master, this is the pathway." Heavy Arrow landed beside, respectfully pointing at the end of the bridge. "There's nothing there, Reaching the end of this passage leads to another forbidden space."

"What's below?" Luo Feng gazed down at the void below the bridge. "Can we fly down?"

"Nothing will happen." Heavy Arrow smiled. "Normally if your luck is good, you'll see Sealed stars along the pathway. However, the place they are in is very dangerous, there are formless barriers that stop warriors from getting close. If one forcefully gets close, he would most likely fall. I've seen many sealed stars about. If my luck was good, I'd see one every one or two years. If it was poor, maybe one every 1,000 years. Back then there were some other race emperors that got very excited from seeing them, they flew directly to grab them but they were killed."

"See one every one to two years?" Luo Feng gazed below, "I think I've already seen it."

"Ah." Heavy Arrow was stunned, he looked down too and stared wide eyed, "Indeed."

Luo Feng gazed below.

Deep in the void, there was a star that was rolling. Its size was similar to a normal star, the energy it gave off was terrifying. It

revolved there in a steady speed within the vast void...

"True treasure." Luo Feng said.

Heavy Arrow said, "We can only look at it. There are many sealed stars in Star tower, just those recorded are plenty, along with many others that haven't been found. It's a pity, unless the sealed stars fall off themselves, even the invincible universe masters of the four pinnacle races cannot forcefully grab them."

"Hm."

Luo Feng continued forward.

"Another sealed star." Heavy arrow walked along the stone bridge and exclaimed shocked.

Luo Feng followed. In the depths of below the bridge, they would occasionally see a revolving sealed star in a different position. It maintained such speed for trillions of years, never stopping, until it falls...

Just as he walked along the bridge, he received a call request. He immediately sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe network to receive the call.

"Yang."

"Tian Chen emperor." Luo Feng smiled shocked. This emperor was a human, he hadn't been in the Hong alliance too long but he had spoken to quite a few human emperors within. Many of them were either immersed in their own training or too proud or exploring secret regions etc. Even though Luo Feng didn't get the chance to meet a lot of them, he had gathered most of their basic information.

"I'm at star tower. Through the army system, it showed me that you are nearby, hence I immediately messaged you." Tian Chen said.

"Ah." Luo Feng nodded.

The army system compiled the locations of all the soldiers and broadcast them within the virtual universe system. Even in a special environment like the forbidden space where one could scan other spaces, they could still discover their allies.

"I've already contacted a few good friends because I was attacked by the forbidden guards within the space. It's rare for them to be so troublesome. Three of the friends I've contacted encountered the same, what about you?" He asked.

"Ah, you too? I was attacked by the guards too." Luo Feng said.

"It's getting serious, looks like the chances of a sealed star falling is very high." Tian Chen said. "Yang...if a sealed star were to fall, the forbidden spaces within the tower will keep drawing the warriors closer together. This would naturally gather all the warriors to where the star would fall! Everytime a sealed star falls, a huge massacre would occur, you have to be careful too. I'm entering my next space now."

...

After ending the call with Tian Chen, Luo Feng received another six calls from allies that were closeby. Any ally within a one billion km area would be able to detect him. They all went through the same trouble and suspected the imminent fall of the sealed star. After talking to them, it seemed like...the possibility was very high.

"A sealed star is really going to fall?" Luo feng was on alert now.

Even though the sealed star was a true treasure, for Luo Feng who had the space lock arm band, the general armor, the king armor, the Sha Wu wings and the ancient clock, he wouldn't simply lose his mind over the falling of a sealed star. With his perspective and the strong calling of the tower, his vision was much higher than others.

"A sealed star only falls once in a very long time."

"One is falling the moment I came here?"

"Doesn't seem like a coincidence!"

Luo Feng was on alert, asking, "Heavy Arrow, what happens when a sealed star falls?"

"They are usually different, but there are still some similarities. The forbidden spaces within the tower would all naturally join, gathering all the warriors together, resulting in a final bloodbath..." Heavy Arrow explained.

"Hm, let's go."

Luo Feng nodded, not speaking anymore as they quickly reached the end.

Looking at the void below the bridge, he could make out the revolving sealed stars below. He kept Heavy Arrow in his world ring and stepped through alone into another forbidden space.

...

This was an ocean world.

The moment Luo Feng stepped through, the entrance disappeared and the silver armored Luo Feng floated in the air above the ocean, looking about and searching for the pathway to the next space. Under normal circumstances, the pathways were very easy to find, it usually took up to one day max to find it.

Hua hua hua... The waves began to churn violently, rumbling from within.

An explosion occurred right after.

Li!

An ear piercing screech could be heard. A jade blue snake like creature with a head full of metal scales flew out of the ocean, revealing close to 2km of itself above the surface. Its lower half had limbs as its appearance caused the ocean to shake from within.

Its gold eyes stared at the silver winged and armored human.

"Another guard?" Luo Feng muttered.

...

The star seemed incredibly unfriendly against Luo Feng. From the first to the ninth space, every space had a guard appear and their battle techniques and styles all had different levels of danger. The seventh space was the most dangerous one he encountered. A 1.2m short black metal gorilla wielded two huge hammers and was incredibly fast and nimble.

The smaller it was, the more nimble it was.

The black gorilla was the fastest guard he had encountered in all nine spaces. In terms of speed and dodging, it could keep up with Luo Feng. Its two hammers were more terrifying than Heavy Arrow's attacks.

Heavy Arrow could only resort to being a shield, unless he burnt his undying body, he had no way to fight back.

It was the first time Luo Feng used his full strength with the Sha Wu wings, defending against the hammers and dodging. It took over half an hour before the exit appeared. Only then did they escape the seventh space. When they escaped, the gorilla was still howling within.

"Luckily it's only a metal puppet, unable to burn its undying body." Luo Feng muttered.

"Madness, this guard, in terms of strength...he's already exceeded an emperor limit, and was even close to an invincible emperor. If it was a true god, who is able to burn his undying body, just burning a little would raise its strength over 1,000 times. I would have no resistance whatsoever." Heavy Arrow was still reeling from the shock.

...

After the ninth space, Luo Feng didn't get attacked by any more guards.

Within the tower, they passed through the many forbidden spaces.

"Twenty first space." Luo Feng sat crossed legged on a fireball, as the ball flew straight to the twenty first exit.

******

This twenty first space was a swamp land, and two groups of other race undyings were floating in the skies above. One was from the automaton camp with twenty two undyings, all at emperor level, and two of which were automaton people.

Two automaton emperors!

The other group...was the bug camp, with six emperors. Their energy levels were however much higher. Among the six, there was one that was an emperor limit puppet. This emperor limit puppet naturally represented that terrifying bug undying.

The undying bug queens, everyone of them was a terrifying force.

"I didn't expect to bump into them here."

"This will be troublesome."

"However there's no need to fear. When the sealed star falls, our race's Life Fall emperor will definitely appear. Our automaton race will team up, would we need to fear the bug race?"

Two similarly dressed automaton warriors in black armor exchanged glances. Beside them, the twenty other undyings obviously followed them. The automatons were few in numbers, and every emperor represented a terrifying automaton empire that was truly terrifying.

Of course under normal circumstances, they were still weaker than the bug undyings. The bug race didn't have such level

markings of emperors.

As long as a queen was undying...it would naturally be the most terrifying being beneath knight level, controlling an undying bug army...each combined attack would make countless emperors shiver in fear.

Hua!

In the distance a split in space occurred.

A silver armored and winged silhouette flew out and floated in mid air.

The automaton and bug camps were engaged in a deadlock, both sides didn't seem to care much about the lone warrior that appeared.

"It's Blade River emperor!"

"It's the human Blade River emperor!"

"Ah, this is the one that chased Blood Beast emperor away and forced Heavy Arrow into a coma?"

Both sides quickly went on full alert, the reputation and incident from before made them not underestimate this human.

"This is..." Seeing the two distance camps face off in mid air in the twenty first space, especially the powerful energies they emanated, Luo Feng was nervous.

Chapter 869: Chen Hun Emperor

Luo Feng carefully examined the groups. One group was huge while the other had less undyings. The automaton side had two more prominent automaton warriors dressed in black armor, and the others crowded together. Their positions were obviously different.

"It's a pity that I don't know any of them." Even though Luo Feng had studied a lot on many warriors, he knew many of the emperors on Yan Ji continent.

As for star tower...

There were hundreds of thousands of emperors from other camps, and it wasn't easy to go through all of them.

"On the other side." Luo Feng turned to look.

The group with lesser undyings, with a total of six emperors. However from the deadlock, he could see from their gazes and the energies they emanated that this group was more powerful.

"It's him!" Luo Feng stared at one of the six emperors. His energy was huge, and no weaker than Gold Cang and Heavy Arrow. His appearance was ugly, as he was 3m tall covered in a layer of black. His face had eight soft black horns that drooped down the side, his little eyes shot a cold gaze.

He was from the Ba Yi race, Skeleton emperor.

His reputation was huge within the entire seventh battlefield. However, he was renowned not because he was an emperor limit, and not even because he was from the Ba Yi race, but rather... because he was a soul slave. A slave that was controlled by a bug can queen. His presence here meant that his master was also here!

"Bug clan queen." Luo Feng tensed up within, "Nan Cheng!"

Nan Cheng was the name that queen had reported before. Within

the bug clan, there was no separation of class amongst undyings, no officials or emperors. That queen was naturally simply called Nan Cheng, with no emperor title. However within the seventh battlefield, many warriors had gathered information on her because she was a bug clan queen!

"Bug queen Nan Cheng, she controls quite a few emperor limits and pinnacles, among which the Ba Yi race Skeleton emperor is the one with the strongest defense. Hence she normally uses him to move about, while she and her army stay hidden within a world ring." Luo Feng thought. "It's no wonder the automaton side is being pressured despite their strength..."

...

It was only then that Luo Feng truly felt, that this was star tower! The highest and most dangerous place within the seventh battlefield. Finding one emperor limit on Yan Ji continent was extremely hard, and finding an emperor pinnacle proficient in soul attacks was very hard as well. However in Star tower...there were trillions of emperor pinnacles from all over. Even though there were less emperor limits or pinnacles proficient in soul attacks, there were still quite a few

And a few terrifying beings!

Like queen Nan Cheng...this level of being, because of her race, treasures and strength, she was close to an invincible emperor. However, compared to a true invincible emperor like True Yan, there was still quite a difference. Her level of being could be considered invincible below knight level. However against a knight...she would have no resistance at all.

It was easy to see the difference between her and True Yan.

However in the seventh battlefield, she was already the most pinnacle of beings. True Yan's level was rare even amongst the trillions of races. Those at his level were all looking for chances to breakthrough to the knight level. They would hardly ever come to

the outer region wars, mainly because they pose no challenge to them at all.

******

In mid air.

The automaton side and bug side floated, Luo Feng stood alone as the three faced off, all searching for the exit from the forbidden space.

Luo Feng naturally didn't get too close to them. The two camps were both his enemies, why would he get close?

"You are Blade River emperor?" A hoarse voice resounded.

Luo Feng turned to look. It was a larger sized undying from the automaton camp with a huge iron face and black mouth. From a human point of view, this was the face of a simple and honest person, he was smiling oddly at Luo Feng.

"Who are you?" Luo Feng asked.

"I am Chen Hun emperor, a good brother of Purple Clock." He mocked.

"Purple Clock's brother?" Luo Feng frowned at him. He had searched a lot about Purple Clock before but he never picked up on this. However, they were both from the automaton camp. Hence, connections such as this were common.

The other automaton emperors beside seemed chatty. Even though they were on alert...whether it was them or the bug clan side, they all had the right to look down on Luo Feng! In terms of absolute strength, they were much more powerful.

"Purple Clock's brother, do you have a problem?" Luo Feng looked at him.

"Blade River emperor."

He snorted, "Quite arrogant, however you have to understand that this is star tower, not Yan Ji continent. Over here...especially

here, whether its against us or the bug race, you have no right at all to be arrogant!"

"Haha..." Laughter resounded from beside.

The automaton camp burst out in laughter, the bug side watched on.

Luo Feng frowned at the scene. He felt the animosity from the automaton camp, especially from this Chen Hun emperor. He seemed to be filled with killing intent. Back then Luo Feng had killed Purple Clock along with thirteen other emperors from the automaton camp, using them as stepping stones. It was understandable that they were filled with contempt for him.

"I've never displayed any arrogance before the two camps. But you, this tiny little Chen Hun emperor, you dare get arrogant before me?" Luo Feng mocked.

"Are you looking..." Chen Hun raged but suddenly stopped.

In the distance, a huge silhouette appeared beside Luo Feng. It was the masked black skinny warrior, and his powerful energy... was definitely comparable to the strongest warrior from both sides here.

"Heavy Arrow emperor!"

"It's Heavy Arrow!"

"What powerful energy, he's in his peak form."

"The comatose Heavy Arrow has recovered his full strength so quickly?" Both camps were completely shocked.

Even though both sides were on alert before, they didn't bother too much with Luo Feng. Now however, they were on their toes. Even the warriors from the automaton camp who were making fun of Luo Feng before all stopped smiling, not daring to brag anymore. They felt threatened!

Able to help recover Heavy arrow to his perfect form in such a

short time required over 100s of billions of mixed elements! Just the wealth alone...showed how much of a threat Luo Feng was!

And also, with Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow combined...they were a force not to be reckoned with!

"Chen Hun, know your place." Luo Feng gazed coldly at him and looked away after.

"Master." Heavy Arrow stood behind him respectfully.

"Heavy Arrow, remember, don't reveal your ancient clock. The fact that you have it...is my huge trump card." Luo Feng communicated mentally.

"Understood." Heavy Arrow replied.

An emperor limit was terrifying.

One with the ancient clock was even more terrifying! Just from how Purple Clock was incredibly powerful with it was proof enough. Also he was only a pinnacle emperor, who was able to kill two emperor limits with the clock. Now, Heavy Arrow was an emperor limit with the ancient clock...

"Hmph." Luo Feng looked at the two sides. He was very clear, in the world of warriors...displaying strength appropriately was the way to win respect. If he remained low profile all the way, he would be bullied. Even the pinnacle emperor Chen Hun was trying to stand above him.

Suddenly...

"We've found the exit."

"Exit!"

Hua! Hua!

The two sides immediately flew into the distance. Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow flew forward too, the exit was closest to the bug camp side. Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow were closer then the Automatons. The Automaton camp was the furthest.

The three powers flew towards the exit.

"Blade River emperor...the automaton camp and the bug camp will head forward first. You should wait behind." Chen Hun shouted at him.

Luo Feng turned behind to look, Chen Hun was flying with his large group of emperors. His eyes gleeful, being disgraced earlier... however his words implied their different standings, that their camp was stronger and they should naturally leave first.

"Hmph." Luo Feng turned away and continued heading forward.

"Blade River!" Chen Hun's expression changed, he immediately raged and shouted angrily.

"Looking for death!"

Luo Feng turned fiercely.

Hua!

Heavy Arrow instantly attacked, he rushed straight at Chen Hun since their distance wasn't too huge. With one flying forward and another rushing back at him...they instantly connected.

Heavy Arrow wielded an arc blade and it glowed with a purple light.

Pu chi! Pu Chi!

Two flashes occurred and the blade slashed through Chen Hun's body. He was instantly cut into three parts. His eyes still originally gleeful, "Without burning your undying body, an emperor limit cannot kill me. Your action only starts a fight and when the two automaton warriors make their move, you'll be dead!"

"Ah!" After which his eyes were filled with shock. The two arc blades were covered with the Fei Mo poison, they completely entered his body and destroyed it from within.

Chen Hun emperor...dead!

...

The bug side and automaton side all watched in shock as Chen Hun's undying body crumbled. They couldn't imagine...how could a pinnacle emperor fall so easily?

Heavy Arrow wielded the blades coldly and looked at the armor, weapons and treasure left behind, saying coldly, "Humiliating my master, you deserve to die!"

Chapter 870: The Warriors Gather

Chen Hun just fell like that?

The automaton camp was completely stunned. They immediately guessed...that the famous Blade River emperor had some special techniques, buying some special weapons from the universe. Afterall, even though Heavy Arrow was an emperor limit, he couldn't simply kill another pinnacle emperor just like that. The blade he used must definitely be special, either its material was special or there was something unique about it.

"So extravagant."

"That Blade River emperor must have some kind of background."

"Before his name grew huge, I heard he got the sacrificial tower treasure and was instantly different. The treasure must have been shocking, allowing him to buy such weapons." The other warriors of the automaton camp, including the warriors in the bug camp all swiftly deduced.

Both sides began to take more notice of Blade River emperor, not daring to stupidly go insult him anymore.

...

Even so, the automaton camp was still made of emperors with two automaton warriors within. Not that they had been bullied, but could they live it down? If they didn't even do anything for their fallen comrade, that would be too huge of a disgrace.

"Blade River! What are you doing?" The two black armored automaton warriors with slight green skin roared.

Sou!

Heavy Arrow had already returned to Luo Feng's side, respectful as before. However no one could forget how vicious he was earlier.

"Automaton undying!"

Luo Feng said coldly, "I never picked a fight with either yours or the bug side! However that little Chen Hun dared to insult me! Hmph...do you really think that with allies around I wouldn't react to insult? He forgot...the pride of a warrior doesn't submit to humiliation or challenges!"

"Unless...he had enough strength, it's a pity my underling Heavy Arrow proved one thing, that he was too weak."

"Since he dared insult me, then he should have been prepared to receive my attack."

Luo Feng's gaze swept past the automaton camp. "I believe that all of you saw everything and understand my reasons. If you wish to act because of that idiot before, I will welcome you! My character...is such that I do not usually fight with people I have no grudges with. I wish to save my strength for the falling of the Sealed star, wasting any strength now will simply lead to regret later! It'll allow the others to gain the advantage!"

The automaton warriors all gazed at the bug clan ahead.

There were three powers now.

Luo Feng was the weakest, the automaton camp was slightly stronger and the bug clan was the strongest. If the automaton side fought it out with Luo Feng...they may ultimately be picked off by the bug clan after.

"Hmph, the sealed star is the most important, let's hope you can survive till then." The leading automaton warrior roared.

"Let's hope you can do the same." Luo Feng smiled.

After which, they didn't speak anymore.

The bug side was disappointed but this was still within their expectations.

...

The warriors that weren't too different in strength would hardly

ever truly fight it out, who would attack if they didn't have a guarantee? Without any benefits, what's the point? Chen Hun's death forced the automaton side to question Luo Feng, and he replied accordingly. Everybody understood the reason, as to settling the debt?

Was it possible? Who would be stupid enough to risk their life against Blade River emperor who could even enslave an emperor limit?

Seemingly dignified on the surface, but within they were all greedy.

"There's benefits from chaos." Luo Feng muttered. "Our chinese history has seen all of this before, everything is for the sake of benefits."

******

The Bug side, the automaton side and Luo Feng with Heavy Arrow, the three groups entered the next forbidden space.

The moment they entered, they discovered that there were already two groups of undyings there, who were also stuck in a deadlock. One of which was the human camp and the other was the bug side.

"Tian Chen emperor." Luo Feng saw a three eyed man with long brown hair within the human camp. That was Tian Chen emperor, a pinnacle emperor. However because he was proficient in soul and illusion attacks, his threat was comparable to that of an emperor limit.

Such warriors proficient in illusions or soul attacks, as long as they burned a little of their undying body to attack, even an emperor limit would be in danger.

"Yang." Tian Chen's eyes gleamed.

"Qiang Wu emperor." Luo Feng brought Heavy Arrow over, mixing in with the many others in the human camp. The group of

human undyings only had one true human, the rest were from other races.

"Yang."

"Blade River emperor."

"Blade River." Many warriors were shocked when they saw Heavy Arrow behaving obediently around Luo Feng. Back then when he was forced into a coma, everybody had guessed that he would be enslaved. However, to recover his full strength so quickly would have huge costs. It made the emperors all respect Luo Feng, but feel despair at the same time!

Everyone was extra passionate with him, those close called out Yang, those that weren't shouted out Blade River emperor.

The camp naturally revolved around Luo Feng and Tian Chen emperor as the core.

On the other side.

The two bug groups had gathered, many shouted out Skeleton emperor. "Skeleton emperor, where's lord Nan Cheng?" "Skeleton emperor..." From those words, one could tell without a doubt that the leader of the group was still the queen Nan Cheng, who had yet to show herself!

"Skeleton emperor?" Tian Chen frowned. "He's the one with the strongest defense, with him there, Nan Cheng will definitely be around, I didn't expect to bump into her so early."

"Even if you don't meet her now, you'll still eventually see her." Luo Feng smiled.

"Do you have confidence in dealing with Nan Cheng?" Tian Chen looked at Luo Feng.

"Nope." Luo Feng said casually, "You?"

"No hope at all." Tian Chen shook his head. He too was candid. "Every bug queen is proficient in soul attacks and defense. Even

Skeleton emperor, an emperor limit was enslaved...she's definitely stronger than me in soul attacks, I have no hope at all."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

Undying Bug queens were all terrifying, they were naturally proficient in soul attacks, and they even had an undying bug army!

"The more warriors there are, the less of a threat of this strength difference." Tian Chen said. "Right now the queen Nan Chen is very threatening, she alone can stand over all of us here. However as the number of warriors grow, the threat will shrink. Especially when the sealed star falls, the number of other race emperors would have grown to a huge number. As long as we all combine our attacks, even a knight wouldn't be able to withstand it. They would have to dodge and not take it head on."

Luo Feng nodded.

When the numbers grew over an extent it would get even more terrifying.

...

As time passed, they travelled from one forbidden space to the next.

Every space they entered, they gathered more warriors and the numbers grew bigger. This scene made all the warriors sure that a sealed star was about to fall. Only when that was about to happen would the star tower actually shift the spaces this way, gathering the warriors together.

"Skeleton emperor."

"It's Skeleton emperor!"

"If Skeleton emperor is there, the bug queen Nan Chen must be there too. That old being is here to fight for the sealed star too, our chances have gotten slimmer." Even though the numbers were

growing, whether it was the human camp, demon camp or automaton camp, the main topic seemed to be Skeleton emperor and Nan Cheng.

Nan Cheng...without a doubt, was the strongest warrior amongst the entire group gathered!

******

Luo Feng stood in the air above the grass with the undyings from the human camp.

"Meeting Skeleton emperor and killing Chen Hun all happened today. And this is only the ninth space. I didn't expect to already see over 2,600 undyings gathered." Luo Feng glanced into the distance. The automaton camp had over 600 warriors, the bug camp had over 800, the demon camp had over 500 and the human camp had over 600.

2,600 undyings. Even though Luo Feng could recognize quite a few, from the percentage he could deduce...

Over 90% were emperors!

"We haven't reached the final space and there are already so many. When the sealed star falls, how many would there be." Luo Feng exclaimed. It took countless years for a large group of emperors to be revived, and even so, that would only be about 100,000 emperors.

In the universe, with trillions of races added together, the number of emperors was absurd.

Just star tower alone had 100s of thousands of emperors, exceeding humanity as a whole. One race alone had no way to compete with trillions of others. Even if only a thousandth came out from the other races, it would still far exceed the single race. However the pinnacle races were strong because...they had more pinnacle strength!

Weng...

A tear occurred in the space, a large group of warriors hustled through.

"It's the exit." Luo Feng glanced over. "There are even more undyings now. Hm, it's mostly two camps, one from the bug camp and another from the human...no, there are three camps!"

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

There were indeed three camps from this intake. The bug camp had over hundred, the human had over thirty and the demon camp only had one!

"Black Tomb emperor!"

"Black Tomb emperor!"

"It's Black Tomb emperor!"

Immediately, the attention of the over 2,600 undyings in this region all switched to the lone warrior from the demon camp entering. He carried a huge blood colored blade on his back, covered in blood red scales, with a single horn on his wolf head. His face had one green and one blood colored vein, with nine scaled tails. He stepped through the space, his gaze making everybody shudder.

Even though there were over 2,000 undyings here, they all immediately went silent, their energies suppressed by this one warrior.

Even the bug camp with the queen Nan Cheng instantly went silent.

"It's Black Tomb emperor!" Luo Feng squinted.

Chapter 871: Battleground

There were several terrifying beings in the seventh battlefield, each from different camps. They all stood above the rest and Luo Feng was clear, even if he gave it his all, using all his trump cards, he still wouldn't be a match for anyone of them. When the difference in power was too huge, nothing really mattered.

If one said that the bug queen Nan Cheng was one of them, then Black Tomb emperor was another.

Nan Cheng used her undying bug army to rule over the battlefield.

Black Tomb relied on his one Blood tomb blade, massacring many, he relied on brute force.

In terms of reputation, Black Tomb was higher! As for battle strength, it was hard to tell who was weaker between the two of them. In a small space where the undying bug army would be affected, Black Tomb could easily kill the entire army! If they had sufficient space, the bug army could easily attack over and over, that would be terrifying.

"Black Tomb emperor is proud in nature, he has offended countless warriors and is from the Qi Wang race. As he offended too many warriors, he fled to the outer region wars during his domain lord level. He then began a long journey of killing, growing till he was almost invincible at emperor level. The Qi Wang race had long treated him as a pillar of support, settling all his enemies from back then. Even giving him huge amounts of resources to grow." Luo Feng's mind reflected on the data he read before.

"Impressive."

"Growing from domain lord to such a level, if he was better in certain aspects, he would be akin to my teacher True Yan already." He thought.

Nan Cheng and Black Tomb were both close to invincible emperors.

The difference may not seem like much, but it got harder as one climbed higher. To perfect certain areas was simply too hard. For True Yan to reach invincible emperor level, it was extremely rare even in the trillions of races. The number of such undyings was even lower than the number of knights in total!

...

Time passed and the warriors kept growing in numbers, all gathering in the many forbidden spaces and heading on to the next. They stayed for half an hour to half a day in each space before moving on. This kept on happening for two days and the number of warriors in each team grew to a shocking number.

"Just our batch alone has over 16,000 warriors." Tian Chen was shocked beside Luo Feng. "And we haven't even reached the final gathering spot, the other groups will make the number grow even more."

"Hm."

Luo Feng's gaze was however fixed on a warrior in the human camp. He carried seven different blades on his back, a human warrior. He was dressed in an ancient purple armor, wielding a special black glove on his hands. His forehead had the mark of seven blades and he gave off an incredibly amount of energy. Even the distant demon camp Black Tomb emperor felt it, so much so that he strengthened his bloodthirst.

"Seven Blade emperor!" Luo Feng muttered within.

Seven Blade emperor, a human warrior.

The number of warriors in the human side had already reached over 5,000 undyings, and over 90% of them were emperors. Just the emperor limits alone had reached tens of them. There were another ten emperor pinnacles proficient in soul attacks. Naturally

the core of the group was no longer focused on Luo Feng or Tian Chen, but rather that Seven Blade emperor!

"According to teacher, Seven Blade has hopes of catching up with him and Heavenly Feather." Luo Feng thought.

Seven Blade was a spirit reader warrior.

He rose up from the Huge Axe dojo and was absorbed as a core genius. And he was the number one genius of that generation back then. Maybe in terms of talent and improvement speed he couldn't compare to Ke Di, or Luo Feng (Luo Feng has the golden horned beast and mosha bodies, at sector lord level, and his earth body was still at domain lord level. Hence, even though it appeared as though his improvement was incredibly fast, it wasn't as crazy as it seemed.)

But Seven Blade was still much higher than a genius like Bolan.

After becoming undying, he was taken in as a disciple by one of the universe masters of the Huge Axe dojo, later on rising up even further. In just a few tens of thousands of years, he was already close to Invincible emperor level, and was not far from True Yan and Heavenly Feather and some other ancient warriors.

The upper echelon of humanity favored Seven Blade and all regarded him as having high hopes of becoming a knight.

With humanity's nurture and that universe master's guidance...

Along with some of his own special encounters...

It resulted in the current Seven Blade emperor.

"This is a true disciple of a universe master."

"It's that universe master?"

"No idea, I heard it's from the Huge Axe dojo."

"Humanity sure is strong, we don't even have one universe master in our race, but they have enough to form five leviathans, everyone with a few within."

The human camp discussed in hushed tones. Not even mentioning Seven Blade's strength, just the title of being a disciple of a universe master alone was enough to allow him to lead the group. Because such a being...definitely wouldn't fall! What a joke, if a disciple of a universe master fell here, that would be more terrifying than the falling of a sealed star.

"Luo Feng, if you reveal your identity, you'd stand out even more than that Seven Blade!" Babata said mentally. "You are the disciple of the primal chaos city leader, and he is the number one person of the Virtual Universe Company. He defends the human sacred land primal chaos city, which is much stronger. And you were accepted at sector lord level."

"Stand out my ass, shut up." Luo Feng roared.

"So fierce!"

Babata didn't bother with Luo Feng anymore.

"Seven Blade?" Luo Feng glanced, it would be very hard for Luo Feng to defeat him at sector lord level, but once he broke through to undying, then defeating him would be easy.

"What a pity, I'm only sector lord level."

"Without getting the best choice for the third clone and producing it, I definitely cannot break through. My training time has been very short too and my law comprehension is not high, I'm in no rush to break through." Luo Feng had pondered hard about the third body. Just within Hong alliance, and the treasure trove, he had checked up on special beasts and their furs, blood etc.

However...

Whatever he could buy, there were a few better than the golden horned beast, yet they did not meet his expectations.

The universe did after all have some heavenly beasts, some with only one in the entire universe, like the beast god. Naturally Luo Feng only required a sector lord version of one of these beasts...

******

The human camp had a total of over 16,000 undyings, and all of them were from different parts of the universe, with different appearances. Some were flesh and blood life forms, some energy, some metal, some plants...the plant life forms were a huge species, even though plants like the cloud contact vine and star eating plant had weak consciousness.

There were some with intellect comparable to humans, some that looked similar to humans, only with different constructs within.

Rumble...

The mountain rumbled and revealed a huge incredibly deep hole, stars revolving within.

"Exit!"

"It's the exit!"

The four camps immediately moved, according to their distance from the exit. Over 16,000 undyings from all races entered the huge hole. The human camp was the third group to enter, after they flew in, they felt the time and space shift as they landed on a huge stone peak.

...

A vast space, there floated many stone peaks, close to each other...they were like countless pebbles floating about, forming a huge pathway.

Luo Feng already had this experience, knowing that this was the void pathway. Following this would lead to the next forbidden space.

"Damn!" Luo Feng landed on a stone and gazed into the distant space, taking a deep breath. "So many warriors? This is simply a pathway to the next space. The number of warriors here should be much lower, yet over here there are over 100,000 undyings."

A blur of stones floated in the vast space.

Every one of them had a huge number of undyings gathered on top, the numbers was simply absurd. At this point alone, it had exceeded 100,000!

"The Hong alliance of the humans only has 100,000 emperors." Tian Chen stood beside him and smiled.

"And the quality of that 100,000 emperors isn't that high either." Luo Feng said.

"Of course it isn't." Tian Chen exclaimed. "This entire process, gathering more warriors from each space, especially the weak ones, after seeing the stronger warriors would naturally back off. They all fear losing their lives, along the way they would definitely leave."

The way to give up on the sealed star was simple...when the large groups entered the pathways, simply not follow them through and wait for the next one to leave alone, that would allow them to leave the groups.

"Also, many absolute warriors full of confidence around the seventh battlefield may also head over here after hearing the imminent fall of a sealed star."

"The super warriors of star tower are the same, teleporting via god countries over, heading close to the spot." Tian Chen exclaimed. "Hence of the over 100,000 undyings here, there are many absolute warriors. Look, the automaton Life Fall emperor, our race's Seven Blade, and that Da Long emperor...who isn't renowned here? Now that everybody is gathered here and there are so many in this pathway...this will probably be where the sealed star will fall."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

The place where they could normally see the sealed stars was within these pathways. Hence the chances of it falling here was

very high.

"Sealed star."

"Look, sealed star."

"It's appeared."

"The sealed star has appeared." The bustling over 100,000 undyings all focused their attention below immediately, Tian Chen and Luo Feng followed.

In the vast space below...a whirlpool of energy appeared and in its depths, a star was revolving and floating up.

Chapter 872: Alliance

Rumble...A rumble occurred from the huge whirlpool.

Within the whirlpool, the sealed star was revolving and floating up slower and slower, almost like it was being stopped by something.

"So many sealed stars!"

"There's got to be thousands of them."

"Wow!"

Shocked voices.

Around the huge whirlpool, revolving sealed stars were floating about. Every one of them with diameters of 9,000 km to 90,000 km. With one glance, there were thousands of them all moving gradually within, they were all revolving about the center of the whirlpool. The one sealed star that had floated out was the most glaring of the group...this scene immediately made the over 100,000 undyings there go crazy.

"Many of them already cannot wait." Luo Feng glanced.

"Yang."

Tian Chen called out to him beside, "Do you want the sealed star, don't tell me you don't want it."

Luo Feng glanced at him beside and smiled. "Who would come risk their life if they didn't want it? However, our chances of getting it are very low. There are over 100,000 undyings here, of which there's Nan Chen, Black Tomb, Da Long etc, a total of nine terrifying beings..."

"They are strong, but there are over 100,000 undyings here. Their individual strengths have been diminished, who would dare go against a group? Even the knights, if hit by a combined attack of over 100,000 emperors would die from the attack!" Tian Chen said,

"I've already contacted the emperor limits, forming an alliance with about 1,000 allies around. We'll attack together and get the treasure."

"Over 1,000 allies forming an alliance?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"Hm." Tian Chen said. "I've already sent a request via the virtual universe system to have a meeting, allowing all those with access to enter."

This temporary meeting room, whether it was in the outer region wars or secret regions, undyings could frequently set them up under dire circumstances. The moment the request was approved, undyings invited could immediately enter and they could make quick decisions...naturally the cost wasn't small.

However it wasn't much to an emperor.

"I've sent mass mail out to remind them, we have to hurry and make a move to have a chance." Tian Chen said.

"Attention, I am Tian Chen emperor and I've sent out mail to you all. After reading it, please immediately head to the meeting room." Tian Chen communicated, making over 1,000 undying allies in the human camp exchange glances, all sending their consciousness into the virtual universe to check their mails.

...

Virtual universe, within a special space, there were many islands there with several others floating in the sky. Every island had a magnificent meeting room. Anyone who requested to use these rooms could use them at any time.

Within the room, there was a huge round table, there were stone carved thrones about, a total of 1,000 of them.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Silhouettes appeared around on the thrones, as the number of warriors grew. Luo Feng and Tian Chen appeared on thrones too.

Within ten seconds, the 1,000 thrones were filled, almost all of them emperors.

"Attention all."

Tian Chen spoke, "According to the rules from before about the sealed star falling, from the time it appears to the time it falls, it has to slowly break through the barriers about it to finally fall. This would take quite some time. We still have time to plan now! However, the fight for the sealed star has attracted many warriors about, even Black tomb and Da Long and others have appeared...if we don't team up, we have no hope at all!"

"Right, we all came here not to watch them get the treasure." An undying with powerful energy covered in heavy armor said.

"There are a huge number of warriors. The moment the star falls, it'll be an all out war. A team that is too big will be hard to control, 1,000 undyings is just nice." Tian Chen continued. "We may not be a match for Black Tomb if we are alone, but with 1,000 of us, with almost all at emperor level, we won't have to worry too much. Also, there are eleven emperor limits and eight pinnacle emperor's proficient in soul attacks.

Luo Feng was shocked.

The percentage was really high. Among normal emperors...it was hard for even one out of hundred to hit emperor limit level! The main thing was that many of the weaker warriors had left early, leaving only the strong. Hence, the percentage was so high.

"There are over 1,000 emperors!"

"With our forces combined, even Da Long or Black Tomb wouldn't dare pick a fight with us alone." Tian Chen said, "With 1,000 of us...we have a chance."

"Tian Chen, who will the sealed star go to?" A distant other race undying immediately shouted.

"Very simple, when it first begins, we will combine forces." He

smiled, "As to who gets the sealed star, that'll depend on luck. Whoever gets it...our alliance will automatically disband then! At least we are all allies in the army system, and we cannot kill each other. As for the one that gets the sealed star, he'll have to depend on his own fleeing ability. To expect others to help him after getting the treasure, even if I say it, I doubt anybody will do it."

"Haha..."

"Cackle..."

All sorts of laughter came from the group of undyings, they resounded throughout the meeting room.

"As to the plan, there's no need. When I send out the message, we will all help each other out later. I believe no emperor is that stupid!" Tian Chen said. "When we combine forces later, we only have one goal...when the sealed star falls, we will all get as close as possible. Whoever gets it will be up to luck and skill."

"Does everybody agree with my suggestion?" He looked around. "If there are any objection, please speak up."

The entire room was silent, no one said anything.

To be able to reach emperor level, they would all naturally be clear about the plan. Such an alliance...had to be naturally formed against beings like Da Long and Nan Cheng. Afterall, with over 100,000 emperors here, no one was here to play around, every body had ambition.

"Very good!" Tian Chen smiled.

"Our alliance is formed." A distant human warrior smiled too. It was a pinnacle emperor Cang Qi emperor. Normally, such alliances had humans as the core.

"We'll work together, as to who gets the sealed star and whether he can keep it, it'll depend on his own skill."

"Good!"

"Howl!"

"Battle!"

All sorts of noises were heard. Even other race languages could be heard, it was obvious the group was excited and filled with anticipation.

Actually, there was hope to flee with the sealed star. Like if Luo Feng or some others got it, he could immediately flee into their group of allies. While they may not be too happy about it, they wouldn't dare betray him. And the other enemies would have no way to do combined attacks either. If they did, it would hit the other human warriors and they would naturally block it together.

In such a mess, having allies as shields definitely gave one the hope of surviving.

Of course...

The chances of falling was much higher!

However for the sealed star, the undyings here were all willing to take the gamble!

****

Luo Feng stood in mid air and looked around, clearly seeing the many undyings floating above the peaks, naturally forming their own groups and moving. It was obvious that they were secretly forming their alliances. Many of the warriors here didn't have the strength to match up to Da Long or Black Tomb or Seven Blade... however no one was willing to simply let them get away with it!

Even Luo Feng...

Even though he was on alert about everything within star tower, he too wanted to try and get the sealed star.

"Yang, Can Yu emperor." Tian Chen said, "We nine are all humans, we'll definitely be more united."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"But of course." A distant short white haired man with a white beard said.

Tian Chen, Luo Feng and Can Yu were the strongest of the nine humans.

What followed them were the pinnacle emperors and high emperors. The nine humans didn't have any low emperors or officials.

"It's a pity that Seven Blade won't help us." Cang Qi communicated, "If he joins us...we...."

"We would become cannon fodder!" Tian Chen roared. "Do you know how strong he is, and with his high position? Haven't you realized that there are many warriors that he's already bought over beside him? He is the disciple of a universe master, his wealth must be insane, buying these warriors over. These warriors know their chances of getting the sealed star are very low. But, to get some benefit and make allies with Seven Blade, there are many would be willing."

"If it was me, I'd be willing too." Cang Qi muttered.

"You punk." Tian Chen couldn't even force a smile.

"Stop messing about, look below." Can Yu shouted.

Luo Feng and the group of nine humans all looked down. That sealed star within the whirlpool was floating upwards...however it fought hard against a formless pressure. As it floated, Luo Feng could visibly see ripples, countless ripples holding the star back.

Whether it was that sealed star that was about to fall or the other thousands revolving about, they were all held back by the same ripples.

"That's the energy of star tower, it holds back the countless sealed stars!"

"We cannot get close." Tian Chen said softly. "If we forcefully

pierce through that barrier, we will definitely fall. No warrior here has the guts to do that, and they are all waiting for the sealed star to fall itself, everybody is being careful. When the star breaks through later, even though the barrier will be broken and there'll be no energy holding back the thousands of stars, we'll be able to actually fly to the countless stars. However, don't ever do that, unless a star falls on its own, even a universe master is unable to forcefully take it away, the result of such greed is only one... death!"

Minutes and seconds passed as the sealed star rushing upwards got stronger and stronger.

Weng weng weng...that formless pressure around created a ripple that was visible to all.

Almost like a soap bubble, above a sewing needle, no matter how solid and sturdy the bubble was...as long as the needle reached the bubble, it would pop.

...

Time passed and the blur of warriors all looked down, all patiently waiting.

Rumble...an explosion shook the space about.

Xiu!

The sealed star that was rushing upwards immediately shot up, becoming a glaring light and rushing into the sky.

The sealed star...had emerged!

Chapter 873: Killing

Over 100,000 undyings from all over the universe gathered here. When the sealed star rushed up, it was like a stone breaking the surface of water, the silence was instantly broken! The vast group of undyings all began to move, all sorts of long distance attacks instantly erupted!

Rumble...

The originally calm space around was like a piece of paper, as it tore apart and countless fragments were thrown all around. Countless fragments caused the flight for many undyings to get a lot harder.

"Space lock."

"Space lock."

The instant the sealed star erupted, a large amount of pinnacle emperors unleashed space lock, as they didn't want to allow the other warriors to teleport to the sealed star and take it away.

...

"Quick, rush forward."

"Go."

"The space has been locked, teleportation is useless, let's combine forces, hurry." Tian Chen hurriedly communicated.

Luo Feng who had wanted to let Heavy Arrow teleport him over saw that space had crumbled into countless fragments, and its regeneration speed couldn't keep up with the rate of destruction. With large amounts of warriors unleashing space lock, he could only order, "Heavy Arrow, give up on teleporting, let's fly over!"

"Yes master."

"Remember, keep your god energy around me at all times, stop any warriors from using soul attacks on me." Luo Feng ordered

mentally. His greatest weakness was his soul defense, even though he had beast god howl with 32 times soul amplification combined with emperor level law comprehension, and a terrifying willpower! Also the golden horned beast naturally had a strong consciousness!

Many things combined!

It made his soul defense akin to a high official!

After the silver armor and the Sha Wu wings diffused most of the attacks, even a high emperor proficient in soul attacks would find it hard to kill him. But he could still be affected by the soul attack. And a pinnacle emperor proficient in soul attacks was able to be a huge threat to him, of course that's only if he didn't burn his undying body. If he did, even a low emperor would be able to kill Luo Feng's earth body.

Luckily...

There were very few proficient in soul attacks! Luo Feng hadn't suffered before, but there were over 100,000 warriors here, there were plenty of such warriors.

Even though his earth body was only one of the bodies, which is able to be reborn after destruction, but to have his soul destroyed here under such circumstances would be disastrous.

"Yes master." Heavy Arrow followed him.

They rushed towards the sealed star, the other 1,000 undyings about did the same.

"Block!"

"Block!" Tian Chen shouted hurriedly.

Luo Feng and the group all released undying energy attacks together to form a combined barrier and shield to block the terrifying attacks.

...

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

An all out war!

Over 100,000 undyings from the four camps, were made up of over 95% emperors. They had already secretly formed their own alliances before. Be it an alliance of 500, 1,000 or 2,000, the combined attacks may not be as precise as a bug army attack, but its power was terrifying. There was only one way to block such attacks...

Similarly using hundreds to thousands of warriors together to defend.

"Madness." Luo Feng held his breath. Even with his powerful defense, he didn't dare go up against such combined attacks.

"Block."

"Be careful."

"Rush, go, go."

Tian Chen and the other emperor limits or pinnacles proficient in soul attacks all shouted anxiously.

"Not good." Luo Feng was naturally safe within the group. Looking in the distance where the sealed star was, there were already large amounts of warriors getting close. The attacks and explosions there were the most terrifying. This made Luo Feng's expression change, "When we were together earlier, with tens of thousands from the human camp together, even though we split into our little groups, we wouldn't attack each other. The distant attacks would only occasionally hit us, we only needed to defend once or twice. In all, it wasn't too dangerous."

"However, getting close to the sealed star...it's a complete mess." Luo Feng had the feeling that his group may have the first casualty.

"Rush!"

They were only a group of 1,000 undyings, rushing forward as a group towards the sealed star. Simultaneously, the other tens of groups were doing the same. The teams lagging behind all gritted their teeth and attacked over and over at those rushing at the sealed star!

Rumble..." The area near the star constantly had explosions, the space around had been completely destroyed, leaving nothing but stream particles.

Even though the teams were getting close, no one dared to rush in.

Because the combined attacks from the teams that landed on the sealed star itself were all already capable of killing knights. The sealed star was truly a treasure even knights would go crazy for. Such attacks didn't even scratch it, as the teams got closer, there were less teams behind and the attacks got weaker.

And as the number of teams getting close to the sealed star grew, they could easily work together to defend the attacks from behind.

It may seem slow!

In truth, in the twelfth second after the sealed star erupted, the star was finally not attacked, because the earlier attacks had knocked it so much it flew downwards.

"Grab the treasure!"

"Grab it!"

The many undyings all madly rushed at the sealed stuff. In an instant, over 10,000 undyings rushed towards the surface of the star. This was a star that was the size of a planet. Even with over 100,000 undyings landing on it, there would still be plenty of room. The undyings used their greatest speed to send their undying energy into the sealed star, wanting to leave their soul imprint.

To control a treasure, one had to completely leave a spirit

imprint, and this had to be done within the shortest amount of time.

However with over 10,000 undyings, the difference between the fastest and slowest was probably less than 0.1 seconds. In such a short time, with so many imprints...naturally they all failed.

Leaving an imprint required one to be alone and not disturbed. The treasure could afterall only have one master.

...

Luo Feng and his team were the second group to land on the sealed star, there were already over 30,000 undyings then.

"How will this work." Luo Feng rubbed the star, failing as he shook his head. More and more undyings were gathering on the star, 40,000, 50,000, 60,000...

Rumble!

A terrifying combined attack instantly descended from afar.

The thousands of undyings on the star surface immediately unleashed their defenses, easily blocking the attack. However the force of the attack...knocked the star downwards even faster.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The many attacks from afar were easily blocked by the undyings on the star.

"It's them." Luo Feng glanced. There were about 30,000 undyings floating in mid air in their groups. Among this group, Da Long, Black tomb and Seven Blade, the nine terrifying beings all led their own teams, they didn't rush over at all.

"The strong and the weak have different methods." Luo Feng thought. "Tian Chen and the others are weaker, they can only rush to get to the star first. And the absolute beings like Da Long, even if a lucky undying got the star, they have a guarantee of killing him and taking the treasure from him."

"Flee!"

"Quickly flee!"

A piercing order resounded, many undyings around quickly spread the word as they madly fled from the star.

Rumble...the sealed star was already moving extremely fast downwards. Even though the formless pressure below was broken, it was still the energy of star tower. The ripples formed after grew even more violent, some fleeing from it were hit by attacks from other undyings. Even if they didn't die, they were knocked backwards, into the mad star tower energy...

Chi!

Whether it was a low emperor or pinnacle emperor or even an emperor limit, the moment they were hit downwards and unable to dodge, flying into the energy ripples, they would instantly be reduced to ashes. Some warriors' weapons were instantly destroyed, while some world rings broke as well. The better rings may not break.

"What terrifying power." Luo Feng was shocked.

That formless barrier was stable before, forcing back the countless sealed stars and the terrifying force behind it.

Now that it was broken.

The formless barrier itself became a mad source of energy. Combined with the other similar energies around, it produced the mysterious energy of star tower...easily destroying the emperors. Whoever touched it would die without doubt.

"Treasure."

"Di She emperor's world ring."

"It's mine."

The danger from below where the thousands of sealed stars were located, terrified all the warriors above. However those unlucky

ones that died left behind huge amounts of treasure that floated about, making many rush to get them. Because the powerful energies pushed the items left behind up, it was easy to take the treasures.

...

Amidst the mess, the nine absolute warriors led their teams, seemingly in no rush.

"You think the sealed star would be so easy to get?" The automaton warrior Life Fall emperor gazed coldly from afar, he was dressed in gold armor with black skin. "They are too anxious. The tens of thousands of exits haven't even appeared. Even if they get the star, they won't be able to flee, they'll only become a target."

He had forgotten...

The other undyings weren't as powerful as he was. If they didn't make their move early and stood in the distance, waiting till the final moment, they would have no chance at all.

"Getting the sealed star is the second goal, Seven Blade is the first." He shot a look at the distant Seven Blade emperor.

The automaton race had detailed information about the Seven Blade emperor. He was their number three target on their list to assassinate amongst the human geniuses.

Ranked number one was the genius sector lord Luo Feng who was comparable to Ke Di, and was accepted as a disciple of the terrifying primal chaos city leader. According to their information, Luo Feng should be in the outer region wars, with many undyings dying by his hand, after which he disappeared, he should be hiding from the danger.

Ranked number two was Dream Fire emperor.

Ranked third was Seven Blade emperor.

Chapter 874: Luo Feng Waiting

Humanity was one of the four pinnacle races. Anyone able to be ranked as the third genius on their assassination list must have extraordinary talent, mental strength and encounters, like Seven Blade emperor. The automaton race had already confirmed that he had the treasure seven blades, and others like Space Grasp etc. He should have also gotten some special inheritance from the universe master before.

"The inheritance he got may very likely be from the universe top power, the Ancestor Gods, and it's the ultimate inheritance." Life Fall emperor said, "If he keeps growing, he will definitely become a terrifying being in humanity."

"We must kill him."

"Make him fall, even if his teacher reverses time and space to revive him, the cost of reviving such a warrior that's close to invincible emperor and with such a terrifying inheritance, will definitely be akin to reviving a knight. And his treasure, seven blades, along with the space grasp and other things...will come to us." Life Fall looked at the distant team that Seven Blade emperor led.

Seven Blade emperor carried his seven blades on his back and floated in space, gazing at the distant sealed star, not rushing at all.

"Get ready." Life Fall ordered secretly.

The automaton race were extremely strict and orderly, akin to the most organized race in the entire universe, with the characteristics of living AIs, they were incredibly synchronized. The highest authority here was Life Fall emperor, the others would follow his orders all the way. As for the other races under the automaton camp, they too had acquired the virtual world system from them, the rewards given within made them submit too.

"Target the Seven Blade emperor."

"Sixth formation."

"Activate the separating tower!"

"Attack!"

...

When the bug queen Nan Chen, Da Long, Seven Blade and Life Fall emperors were watching the fight, the sealed star was knocked so far low it landed in the danger region. The moment it hit that part, many emperors instantly fell, causing fear amongst the rest.

"Items."

"World rings."

"Grab them!"

The tens of fallen undyings had left behind many items that the rest fought to get their hands on.

"Haha...The bottom area is dangerous. It's filled with the mad energy of star tower itself. The moment one touches it, he will fall! It's usually very hard for us to kill the other emperors. However, now as long as we knock them into that area, they will die without a doubt."

"Kill." The large portion of undyings that had just fled from the dangerous region immediately began to fight it out.

While they may have stayed in their groups when they rushed towards the sealed star, now, everything was in a complete mess. Everybody fought for survival, as they distanced themselves from the sealed star. The camps began to fight each other, the teams were all gone. Only the camps in general were left.

Rumble!

Rumble!

Spirit weapons, soul attacks, energy attacks, automaton weapon

attacks...amidst the fragmented space, some unlucky warriors were pushed into the dangerous regions and instantly destroyed.

"Grab them all!"

"Haha, I've been waiting for this moment. The sealed star isn't something I can get, but using the dangerous region, I can actually kill many other camp emperors. I may easily get tens of billions to hundreds of billions." A six armed human giant killed excitedly.

Whether it was the humans, automatons, demons or bugs, or the other countless races, they were all killing and grabbing whatever they could!

"It's madness. The sealed star can only have one owner. Hence, many will die because of it." Luo Feng looked around at the dangerous region below. "But that region can easily wipe out these emperors with undying bodies, this is a rare chance. Those emperor limits have gone all out..."

Suddenly...

"Ang!!!"

A jade green light rippled throughout, instantly covering the vast space, stunning the over 100,000 emperors. Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow were both stunned too, and they looked over. In the distance, Life Fall led his automaton team with over 100 automaton warriors.

They all wielded a 3m tall tower like weapon, and Life Fall emperor had one that was close to 20m tall.

There were close to 900 other emperors that simultaneously burnt their undying bodies, every eight or nine of them supporting each automaton warrior, creating terrifying energies to pour into the towers. The over 100 towers...all gave off a terrifying pulse network that gathered in Life Fall emperor's huge tower.

After which...

One ripple of jade green light pulsed through the area and shot straight at Seven Blade's team.

"Separation tower!" Seven Blade's usual calm expression suddenly changed greatly, and his eyes were filled with shock. "The automatons are going all out for me!"

"Burn! Act according to the plan I said earlier!" He shouted madly.

As one of the nine super powers here.

Seven Blade had already set up a plan for offense and defense earlier.

None of the emperors under him hesitated. The automaton side was aiming straight at Seven Blade. If they didn't act, he would die without a doubt. However, the ripples from the attack alone was enough to kill them all! Hence the human camp warriors all simultaneously burnt their undying bodies...

The peculiar thing was, they dispersed the energy from their burnt undying bodies into mid air.

"Howl..." Seven Blade opened his large mouth.

A gold river shot right out. This gold river had many ancient beast statues along its side, of which there was the beast god statue too. In the center of it, there was a barren spot, as it shot out, it instantly swallowed all the dispersed energy from the human camp.

Rumble...the energies rushed in.

The ancient river swallowed all the energy and erupted, instantly spreading a formless gold net that completely covered the over 1,000 warriors of the human camp. Rumble...the jade green beam shot out from the separation tower hit the gold net, ancient beast images appeared throughout the gold net.

"It's really the Ancestor gods!" Life Fall gritted his teeth at the

scene, "My guess was right."

This was the first time Seven Blade revealed the ancient gold river.

...

Luo Feng was stunned. The separation tower was a super weapon from the automaton race, and its price was comparable to true treasures. However he didn't expect Seven Blade to take out the ancient gold river. Just its energy and the beasts projections about...made all the warriors there know that this was a terrifying treasure.

One had to know that the automaton Life Fall had long prepared his plan and unleashed his strongest attack.

And even though Seven Blade reacted on the spot, and the amount of undying energy the human camp burnt was far from the automaton side, the net formed from the gold river was still sufficiently strong enough to diffuse the attack from the separation tower. It was obvious the gold river's defence far exceeded the tower.

"Strong."

"Terrifying."

The many undyings were all shocked, losing all confidence in getting the sealed star.

"Kill."

"Kill."

The four camps were in an all out war. Close to 100,000 warriors were fighting and madly killing, and any warrior caught close to the danger region because of the fights instantly fell.

Weng! Weng! Weng! Weng! Weng! Weng!

Space fell apart around them.

Many exits appeared everywhere, and thousands of them were visible.

"The tens of thousands of exits!"

"The exits have appeared!"

Anyone who's seen the history of the sealed star falling would know that once the killing got too extreme within the area, many exits would appear and each exit led to individual forbidden spaces. One could swiftly head to any of them and leave the area.

As long as one left, they could escape.

"Flee."

"Let's hurry and go." The weaker warriors were completely shocked by the madness, heading to the closest exits and leaving.

"Kill."

"Kill them all."

"There won't be another chance if they escape." The emperor limits and pinnacle emperors however were going all out. They wanted to make use of the dangerous region to kill as many as they could to take all their treasures and remains. To them, there would never be such an easy chance to kill so many emperors.

...

Even though Luo Feng had come here, he wasn't as crazy about the sealed star as the others. Even towards killing the other emperors, he wasn't that interested. If there was any interest at all, it only towards the entire star tower itself.

"That calling that exceeded the king armor, even the black metal board."

"Yet I cannot become its master."

"The moment I came so much happened, and a sealed star even fell." Luo Feng thought. He didn't think of this as a coincidence at

all, about the strong calling that brought him here and the fact that the star chose to fall only when he came. Was there such coincidence in the universe? Maybe so, but the chances were extremely low.

Luo Feng believed that there was something special here. Because of the calling of the star tower, the sealed star naturally didn't interest him too much.

Hence...

He simply followed along and mixed in with the teams, and when they rushed, he did so too. Until he got to the sealed star, he didn't run around randomly, and simply stayed close to Tian Chen and Cang Qi emperor along with the other strong warriors. Later on, when the star entered the dangerous regions, he fled along with the large group.

In all, he was just tagging along and mixed in with the army, quietly observing everything and seeing if there was any difference between this star's falling with those in the past.

But in overall till now, there hadn't been anything special.

"If my guess is right."

"During the process of the star falling, there should be something special." Luo Feng had been waiting for that moment.

Chapter 875: Unexpected Twist

Luo Feng mixed in with the huge camps and teamed up with Tian Chen, Cang Qi and Qu Wu emperor. Even though he didn't purposely kill the other undyings, Qu Wu was an emperor limit and Tian Chen was a pinnacle emperor proficient in soul attacks. The two would do a lot of combined attacks!

That plus the complete mess the place was in, several items that were thrown around by emperors killed would occasionally fly to Luo Feng's little team's side.

"In just a few minutes, even I've gotten over ten billion mixed elements worth of wealth." Luo Feng was stunned, "It's no wonder all the emperors have gone crazy."

There was both death and wealth about!

Madness!

Within the vast space, there were thousands of exits. However, amidst the ripples of fights, the space around would crumble, but new exits kept appearing...

"Be careful everybody!" Tian Chen shouted anxiously, "I've gotten hit by a soul attack!"

"What?"

"Tian Chen, you got hit by a soul attack?"

Qu Wu, Cang Qi and Luo Feng were all shocked.

"The demon camp has about ten warriors heading over, amongst which there's Chi Mang emperor who's another pinnacle emperor proficient in soul attacks. I've fought with him several times before, I don't have a guarantee on dealing with him." Tian Chen said, "They are already here!"

The others had already seen. In the distance, twelve demon camp warriors were rushing over to them.

"Tian Chen!" The leader was extremely ugly. He had four animal like limbs. He roared out loudly.

"Qu Wu!" A 10km long double headed dragon roared too.

"Blade River!"

The elite demon team had obviously caught on to Luo Feng's little team.

On Luo Feng's side, they had Qu wu and Heavy Arrow who were both emperor limits. Blade River's name had long spread far and wide, and they all treated him as another emperor limit too. Tian Chen too could be treated the same. Only Cang Qi was as well renowned. In all, Luo Feng's team...could be said to have four emperor limits. This was also the reason why they could stay safe before and get treasures from around them.

And for the demon team to rush over, it meant they had confidence.

The twelve warriors had six emperor limits! And that Chi Mang emperor had fought with Tian chen in star tower before, but they couldn't finish each other off. Even though he couldn't kill Tian Chen, stopping him wasn't a problem.

"Let's retreat." Qu Wu ordered.

Howl...

The dual head dragon from the demon side howled, unleashing a time control on the area Luo Feng's team was in.

Time stop!

"Break!" Their team all howled within, unleashing their strength to return the time flow back to normal.

"Haha, Tian Chen, you will die this time." Chi Mang smiled widely, his laughter piercing.

"Kill them."

"What a rare chance."

The demon elite team were all incredibly excited.

The amount of wealth they could get from killing this team was crazy, especially that Blade River emperor that had gotten the sacrificial tower treasure before, who was able to make the comatose Heavy Arrow recover in such a short time. His wealth was well known throughout.

...

Amidst the 100,000 undyings war, Luo Feng's team fight wasn't very glaring.

Their side had five warriors, and four of them were considered emperor limits.

The demon side had twelve warriors, and six of them were emperor limits. However, with the six combined together, it gave them the strength of one more extra emperor limit.

Luo Feng's side was disadvantaged.

The battle immediately sunk into madness.

"I can only stop Chi Mang."Tian Chen said urgently.

"I can only temporarily stop two emperor limits combined." Qu Wu was anxious too. "Blade River, can you withstand them?"

"Leave it to me." Luo Feng gritted his teeth.

There was no way.

Even though he had the strongest flame god crystal, the explosion wouldn't differentiate allies from foes. What's more, the enemy side had six emperor limits, and their combined defense could completely withstand the blast. If he detonated all three crystals he had on him, there was still some hope then, however that would probably mean his side would be gone too.

"First kill those emperor pinnacles." Luo Feng ordered Heavy

Arrow.

Hua! Luo Feng flapped his wings and brought Heavy Arrow along. Fast like lightning, making the demon camp have no way to catch up with him.

"We can't catch him!"

"This Blade River is too fast."

"Deal with Tian Chen and Qu wu first! We'll combine strengths later to settle Blade River." The demon camp swiftly made the decision to give up on chasing Luo Feng.

However even if they did so...Luo Feng wouldn't let them go.

Luo Feng brought Heavy Arrow and rushed towards the emperor pinnacles, "Pu chi! Pu Chi!" Heavy Arrow wielded the two arc blades and slashed them., one pinnacle fell...

Death!

Death!

Luo Feng himself fought against the other pinnacle. Using the Sha Wu wings to tear through his defense before using the poison shadow blade. He slashed through 50% of his undying body, decreasing his strength before using another slash to almost kill him.

In the blink of an eye.

Heavy Arrow had dealt with three emperor pinnacles and Luo Feng had settled one.

"Ah..." When the four pinnacles of the demon camp fell, the human side's Cang Qi emperor howled. He was knocked into the danger region and instantly reduced to nothing...Can Qi had fallen!

Rumble!

Qu wu was simultaneously attacked by three emperor limits, narrowly avoiding the danger region and escaping. He was

shivering within as he said, "Yang, Tian Chen, let's faster flee, I can't hold on any longer."

"I can't flee." Tian Chen was anxious too. He was facing off against Chi Mang and another emperor limit and was in extreme danger.

Luo Feng was panicking too. In an instant, his side had fallen into such a predicament, and even Cang Qi had fallen. "Heavy Arrow, go help Qu Wu. Your defense is strong, you should be able to take the two to there emperor limits."

That emperor limit that killed Cang Qi was flying towards Qu Wu. Qu Wu would then be attacked by four emperor limits at the same time.

"Yes master."

"I'll go help Tian Chen." Luo Feng flapped his wings and flew towards him.

According to his plan, Heavy Arrow was able to block two to three of the enemies. With him teamed up with Qu Wu...even with the four emperor limits attacking them, they could withstand it.

Tian Chen however was in danger...

His strength was close to Chi Mang, and at this time another emperor limit was helping Chi Mang. The only reason Tian Chen could hold on was because he had already burnt his undying energy to fight back. Chi Mang and his partner had done the same and the battle was intense.

Chi!

A blurry huge hammer silhouette smashed hard into Tian Chen, causing him to spit out blood, falling fast. Below him was the danger region.

"Tian Chen." Luo Feng flapped his wings and formed an arc line, rushing to stop him.

Rumble!

With the burnt undying energy, one could only imagine how strong that attack was. Luo Feng held on and slowed him down but he too was dragged down.

"Yang." Tian Chen looked urgently at Luo Feng.

Weng!

A formless soul illusion attack...was sent from Chi Mang above, hitting Luo Feng.

While he was hit, Luo Feng lost control of his body and flew downwards. This made the distant Heavy Arrow change his expression to fear as he shouted, "Master!!!"

"Yang!" Tian Chen had pained look too as he rushed downwards at him.

...

Tian Chen seemed like he was in pain, but his eyes gleamed with a cold excitement.

"Hahaha...I'm truly to going to get a heavenly gift this time!"

"Back then I managed to control Chi Mang's soul, allowing him to return to stay in the demon camp, that was indeed a wise move." He was extremely excited.

Tian Chen was a master at soul control.

He had led a hard life and faced a lot of adversity. It made him have a special view of the world. He passionately made friends with a large group of people, anyone who interacted with him would all think he was not a bad person!

Within however...he was completely something else.

He had indeed fought with Chi Mang several times before. That third time they met, he used his soul techniques to control the enemy and Chi Mang became his soul slave! There was no way to

see it on the surface, plus the demon camp's army system communication was that weak.

They didn't have the human or automaton's army scanning system.

The way they accumulated contribution points required them to record everything and pass it on, and they could only send messages. This allowed him to control Chi Mang emperor...and because of the poor communication system, no one could discover the changes within him.

Hence...

Chi Mang continued to stay within the demon camp, occasionally going out for missions with his partners, later on they would accidentally meet and work together. He had done this three times before! Once, they managed to work together to control another emperor limit Mist emperor.

This time with the falling of the sealed star, they immediately realized the chance. When he met Luo Feng, he was immediately happy, "Haha, Yang? Blade River? This is a big fish. I heard that he got the treasure of the sacrificial tower, and he could even make Heavy Arrow recover that quickly...his wealth must be much more than the normal emperor limits."

...

Hence, he had ordered Chi Mang and Mist to immediately bring along some demon friends to attack them together.

The two of them were both controlled by him!

And when Chi Mang had teamed up with another emperor limit before to attack Tian Chen...Tian Chen and Chi Mang had both burnt their undyings bodies to pretend. In truth, they teamed up to attack the other emperor limit together. Two masters at soul attacks burning undying bodies, their first goal was to control that emperor limit. If that didn't work they would kill him...

However the result was a success.

"The heavens are helping me, how hard is it to control an emperor limit. Even if I burnt my undying body and even though both Chi Mang and I are proficient in soul attacks, even with all these...the chances are all very low. And I actually succeeded. Hahaha..." Tian Chen was incredibly excited.

Hence...

The fight this time, Tian chen had already three emperor limits helping him, no one on either side knew about this at all.

"You are all my targets."

"Your treasure and wealth is all mine!" He crazed madly within.

To become an absolute warrior of the universe...

One either had special encounters or powerful teachers.

Without any or both, one had to create their own chances. Tian Chen had happened to control Chi Mang and let him return normally back to the demon camp. With the demon camp's poor system, it allowed this to go on for awhile and gave him the chance to rise up.

...

He pretended to be knocked far back simply to lure Luo Feng to save him. Luo Feng naturally rushed in but was hit by Chi Mang's attack, falling quickly.

"Yang!" Tian Chen rushed down with a pained look, within however he thought, "Your wealth is mine, it's mine! No one else will get it!" He watched as Luo Feng fell towards the danger region. Fearing that his wealth would get stolen by other warriors, hence he was the first to rush in after him.

"Yang!"

"Yang!" Tian Chen rushed downwards.

"Master!" The distant Heavy Arrow couldn't care about Qu Wu, and immediately rushed over. Qu Wu didn't dare fight against the four emperor limits, quickly retreating with Heavy Arrow and flying towards Luo Feng.

However, no matter how fast they flew, how could they catch up?

They looked on...

Luo Feng was about to fall into the danger region.

"Hmph!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed as he awoke. Back then when he took part in the genius battles, his mental state had already reached the first level's limit, long reaching the level of Knowing oneself. However, he had yet to reach the second level, pushing the limit as he grew.

Primal chaos city, outer region wars, the thousands of years of training, yet he stayed at this limit!

Madly refining it!

It made his beliefs incredibly sturdy! His willpower grew more and more terrifying! The ancestors of china probably didn't have thousands of years to refine their mental states.

His heart and mind had long been refined into a diamond, and was able to see through anything without a single speck of dust. It was sharp and piercing. This was his mental state! Even when hit by a soul attack...he may be in slight trouble, he may have to let the golden horned beast appear.

But illusion?

Luo Feng could use his willpower to break through!

"Tian Chen!!!" Luo Feng looked at him, his eyes filled with madness, "It's you!"

The moment Luo Feng awoke...he knew Tian Chen had planned this!

Firstly, Tian Chen was a master at soul attacks. He knew Luo Feng would come save him, how could he allow the enemy Chi Mang's attack to hit Luo Feng? Would he commit such a grave error?

Secondly, when Luo Feng held on to Tian Chen, in theory, Tian Chen should have been strongly fighting against the force of the attack. However, he not only didn't fight back, but when Luo Feng held on to him, he even pushed Luo Feng alittle more! When Luo Feng felt the force of the attack...he was hit by the illusion!

Force, Illusion, perfect combination.

Everything was prepared perfectly for Luo Feng! He was supposed to die from this!

"Not good." Tian Chen noticed Luo Feng awoke and was shocked. He had guessed that Luo Feng knew the secret, however his eyes flashed coldly. "It's too late, the distance to the danger region is too close and the force of him falling is too strong, there's no way to stop now."

"It's too late." Luo Feng noticed this too. The force of his fall was too strong and even with the Sha Wu wings, he had no way to dodge the vast danger region.

He flipped his hand and produced a strongest flame god crystal, ready to detonate.

"I am not able to escape, I'll use the crystal to escape and use its force to push me up." Luo Feng's reaction was simple and deadly, "During the explosion, the close distance will also kill that evil Tian Chen!"

"Not good." Tian Chen's expression changed, "He's trying to kill us all together!"

...

However just as Luo Feng took out the flame god crystal, a majestic irresistible mysterious energy instantly covered Luo Feng,

a voice resounding within his ears, mind and consciousness, "Child, come here!"

Hua!

With over 100,000 undyings madly fighting it out above, even Da Long, Life Fall and Seven Blade, with thousands of exits crumbling and new ones appearing, one suddenly appeared before Luo Feng, making him unable to even dodge. In truth, that mysterious energy had actually guided him into it.

Xiu!

Luo Feng wielded the flame god crystal and rushed through the exit, leaving the space.

Chapter 876: Receiver

Tian Chen, who was regretting and in fear after seeing Luo Feng take out the strongest flame god crystal was relieved to discover him fall into an exit, leaving the space altogether.

"I survived!" He gushed.

"My luck is not bad, I managed to work with Chi Mang before to control an emperor limit. I thought that was lucky enough, and now even as Yang took out the strongest flame god crystal at the last moment, right before my death, who would have expected an exit to appear right there and suck him in...allowing me to live on!"

"Luck."

Tian Chen was celebrating within, after which he thought, "Is this where my era begins?"

Even though his plan against Luo Feng failed, allowing Luo Feng to know his true colors, he wasn't worried or regretful. Afterall compared to keeping his life, what was having one more enemy to him?

"I have two emperor limit slaves, and Chi Mang who is close to my level of strength. Also amidst this mad war, I can use this strength to get more wealth...huge wealth to raise my strength even further! With such strength, would I still fear a Blade River emperor?"

"Hm!"

"Since I failed this plan, there are three more emperor limits on the demon side, and I have Chi Mang and Heavy Arrow to deal with." He immediately made a decision. "I'll first let the demon side deal with Qu Wu and Heavy Arrow, then I'll secretly use them to get rid of the demon side emperor limits not under my control."

This was his ideal plan. However, even if he just killed the three emperor limits, his earnings would already be shocking.

If he could soul control another, then that would be his lucky day.

"Master!" Heavy Arrow rushed over.

Weng!

The exit Luo Feng escaped through crumbled.

"Master!" Heavy Arrow called out within. However it wasn't as crazy as before, at least his master wasn't in danger.

...

Luo Feng was wrapped in that mysterious energy, unable to resist as he went through the exit. The calling resounding in his mind. "Child, come!"

After entering the exit, he didn't appear in another forbidden space, rather, he flew along a colorful pathway.

Hua hua...

A beautiful pathway.

Luo Feng was wrapped around and was flying continuously. The space around him warped and he could see huge sealed stars around enormous pillars. There were many treasures with powerful energies, only Luo Feng couldn't visibly see them clearly.

"Heavy Arrow, Heavy Arrow." Luo Feng called out mentally to Heavy Arrow.

The soul slave and his master had a binding via their souls.

As long as the distance between them wasn't absurd, they could communicate via their souls. Since they were still both within star tower, no matter how far they were within, with their soul strength, they could easily communicate.

"Master, are you ok?" Heavy Arrow asked.

"I'm fine. Remember, Tian Chen is evil. He tried to kill me earlier and I almost died...and I suspect that the demon side's Chi Mang

has a deal with him. Anyway, tell this to Qu Wu and flee as fast as possible. Mix in with the other humans and bear with it. First leave the space and star tower, and wait for me to return."

"Yes master."

Luo Feng relaxed a little.

It wasn't that he didn't want revenge. But, he had tried to save Tian Chen but was actually used and almost killed! No matter who it was...they would definitely want to take revenge, however Tian Chen was after all still a human.

With the threat of the army system, Luo Feng didn't dare go against an ally!

Killing an ally meant death, it would result in large amounts of the human camp combining their strengths to assassinate him. Even his teacher the primal chaos city leader wouldn't be able to save him. This was afterall the ironclad system set in place by the humans and the countless other races, how could he go against it?

"I cannot go against the army system."

"But there are loopholes." Luo Feng thought. "Like the army system relies on scanning to observe the battles before making its decisions. And the scanning relies on the scanning devices. These devices naturally have limitations, just like when I went to save Tian Chen earlier and he secretly added more force to the fall...the devices have no way to measure that."

"Even so, that Tian Chen..."

"I treated you as a brother and you tried to kill me. If I don't kill you, how will I find peace?" Luo Feng was raging within. "The army system is a disciplinary authority on the soldiers. When I choose to retire later on, I won't be a soldier of the human camp anymore. Even though it means the other human warriors can kill me without any repercussions, I can do the same..."

Tian Chen had been marked for death within Luo Feng's mind.

...

Many thoughts floated within his mind as he was brought around by the mysterious energy, flying through the warped pathways.

Rumble!

The mysterious energy dispersed.

Luo Feng flew out of the pathway and landed on the ground. He turned around like a feather and gently stood up.

"This is..." He looked around.

This was a vast mysterious shrine. There were a total of nine, over 10,000 km tall pillars that held it up. In the air above, there were many sealed stars. These countless sealed stars looked almost like a galaxy above the entire shrine.

This shrine seemed to float in the center amongst countless sealed stars.

"That is?" He looked over.

In the distance sat a silhouette. He had a long snake like body, and the top half was human. His purple beard drooped down and his eyelids gently hung down too. However, the vast pressure he gave off made anyone about naturally submit.

His energy was vast and endless, though not violent, it didn't allow any resistance.

"Child." The ancient voice resounded from him, "Come here."

"It's him, he was the one who brought me here." Luo Feng thought. "And what terrifying pressure. This is much stronger than Shi Huo knight, and even close to the primal chaos city leaders. Is he a universe master level being?"

Luo Feng at least understood this one point.

When he stood before this being, he was like an ant with no power whatsoever.

Since that was so, it was better to just obey.

...

Within the shrine that stood amidst the countless sealed stars, two people stood. One was a snake bodied human while the other was Luo Feng.

Luo Feng walked over to him.

"This great being seems like a human." He thought. "But the four pinnacle races have yet to control the star tower. How can this being actually stay in here and call me over?" This beast snake man seemed like one of the many races.

Like the apeman, wolfman, snakeman etc, they were all considered part of humanity.

"Elder." Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

"Sit!"

The powerful ancient being pointed to the ground.

"Yes." Luo Feng immediately sat beside.

"Are you filled with suspicion?" The great being looked down at him, he smiled. "Wondering why the tower calls out to you and yet you cannot become its master. Wondering why you met such a powerful forbidden guard the moment you came, and even wondering about the falling of the sealed star?"

Luo Feng was shocked.

This being even knew about the star tower calling out to him?

"Yes, I'm filled with questions, please enlighten me." Luo Feng replied respectfully.

"I've been waiting for you for far too long." The being sighed. "Of course, I normally only leave a clone here, only rushing here personally when I knew you were here. Ah...I've yet to introduce myself. I'm called Pu Ti, I'm the guardian of the Star tower, and

also the one to welcome you here."

Luo Feng was stunned, "You are not the creator of the tower? I..."

"You are wondering about who left you the manual? You are wondering on who was the one who created the star tower?" Pu Ti gazed down at him smiling. "Haha, I am the first servant of the creator of the star tower. However, over countless years, I've become a universe master...my master was graceful enough to accept me as his disciple."

"I am his first disciple."

"The leader of the Yan Shen race is his second disciple."

"He has many underlings, but only two disciples. I was lucky, because I've followed him the longest. Because of my strength and how sentimental he is, hence I had the right to become his disciple. But the Yan Shen Race and the Earthling race, those are the true core of what teacher poured his soul into." Pu Ti looked at Luo Feng. "There were two other candidates from earth before that failed, you are the third one. Coming here 8.2 billion years after the second one. If you succeed, you will be like the leader of the Yan Shen race, you'll become the leader of the earthling race, the third disciple of teacher! If you fail, you'll end up like the two before you. Only death will await you!"

Luo Feng was stunned.

There were two candidates before him? He was the third that came 8.2 billion years later?

Leader of the Yan Shen race? Leader of the Earthling race?

"The leader of the Yan shen race and this Pu Ti...just who was their teacher?"

"The creator of the nameless manual and star tower, specially producing the Yan Shen race and Earthling race? Is this the Huge Axe dojo founder's almighty tribe warrior?" Many thoughts flashed through his mind.

Chapter 877: Cause

"The Yan Shen Race and the Earthling race? And I'm the third candidate?" Luo Feng looked at him.

Pu Ti smiled, "Earth is simply the name you give to your living planet. During the timeframe of the previous two candidates, they called it different things. The first candidate called it the Shan Hai world, the second one called it the Origin Star, and during your era now, you all call it earth."

Luo Feng nodded.

"As to the two races..."

"Back then, I followed my teacher and explored the vast universe."

"He spent countless amounts of effort and chose this particular planet and began to nurture it, producing a powerful race! This race later became the Yan Shen race." Pu Ti smiled. "Unlike the servants and others that he chose, this race was one that he specially nurtured. Under his strict selection, the strongest being of that race became his second disciple."

"This junior of mine submitted to no one."

"He brought his own race and formed his own Yan Shen area, becoming one of the powerful races of the universe." Pu Ti smiled. "Even though in total, the power of the Yan Shen race was far from humanity itself, they have my junior and he is a universe master with special treasures from master. He didn't fear the pinnacle beings of humanity and hence became one of the powers of the universe."

Luo Feng's heart skipped a beat, saying, "Then what about you, elder Pu Ti?"

The Yan Shen race was originally a part of humanity.

Pu Ti seemed like he was human too.

"Hahaha..." He sat crossed legged there, his beard drooping down as he laughed loudly, shaking the entire shrine. He looked down at Luo Feng and smiled, "Have you heard the name Ti Pu?"

"Ti Pu?" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, recalling the name on the 10,000 soul control manual.

That manual was written by Ti Pu.

"Pu Ti, Ti Pu, is it?" Luo Feng looked shock at this powerful being that followed an even more powerful being.

"I don't have such ambition, and I'm not like my junior with my own special race, who is able to bring that race around and take over territories, becoming a superpower." He sighed. "What's more, teacher valued both the earth and Yan Shen race highly. He had prepared special treasures for both...my junior has more such treasures and is stronger than me."

"I've been alone all this while, naturally I stayed within humanity."

"But I do not wish to reveal my strength, since that may implicate my teacher. Hence, I've remained low profile and allowing my clone to stay for long periods here, allowing it to demonstrate only knight pinnacle level strength, naming myself Ti Pu." He said.

Luo Feng sighed.

That great being had two disciples.

One of them ruled the Yan Shen race, becoming a superpower.

The other simply left a clone here and revealed strength on the level of Tian Shi palace leader and Xi Luo Duo.

"Even though teacher created the Yan Shen race, he wasn't too satisfied with it." Pu Ti continued softly. "Teacher had lamented... that he had raised the basic level of talent, but the soul evolution was much harder. Hence he spent even more time and effort to

find a way to finally create your earthling race."

"A pure soul from birth."

"Teacher even spent time to specially create a heavenly technique, the Nine volume manual to help your bodies keep evolving, until it reached the level of several rare races in the universe."

"With a soul that was naturally exceptional along with the Nine volume manual, this was the best combination he came up with." Pu Ti's eyes gleamed.

Luo Feng held his breath.

That great being was simply too heavenly. To create an exceptional race of humans, he had actually spent so much effort to prepare and created such an unbelievable technique.

"However, this manual was rejected by the universe laws themselves." Pu Ti shook his head. "Even though it was created, the moment teacher passed it on to any earthling, the universe laws would automatically try and wipe away memories of the manual. Teacher's power was strong, hence the laws couldn't affect him, but it affected anyone he tried to train."

Luo Feng was shocked.

Memory wipe?

But he was able to learn this heavenly technique.

"Later on, teacher left alone, not knowing where to go. Finally he brought back some special treasures, named the Heavenly soul crystals, placing the entire manual within." Pu Ti said. "They have unbelievable power, and as long as one was human and from earth, if they are able to pass the illusions within, they could acquire the techniques from the crystals."

"Why wouldn't the laws wipe the memories after?" Luo Feng asked.

Without a doubt, these crystals were the black metal boards.

"That's the wonder of the Heavenly soul crystals." Pu Ti said. "Teacher had said before that the universe laws were very fair, without any absolutes, there was always a chance. Using the crystals made it possible for the Nine volume manuals to be passed on. The natural power of the crystals could pass on the technique to you, and not be affected by the universe laws...but they only have one shot at it."

"Only one shot?" Luo Feng was stunned.

"Yes."

Pu Ti nodded, "The crystals record within them the nine volumes. However, its power only allows for it to be passed on once. As long as the warrior who received the technique is alive...it would be unable to pass it on to another. Unless the first one dies!"

"Hence, the earthling race, including you, has had three candidates."

"The first one fell and because of its power, only then could the crystal pass it on to the second one."

"The second one fell and thus you became the third."

"The manual, even with the heavenly soul crystals, would never have two candidates living simultaneously."

Luo Feng was completely speechless. The laws of the vast universe were incredibly harsh. The more special and rare something was, like the power of the Nine volume manual, the harder it was to even create it. It even required a special vessel and there could only be one who trained in it!

"Teacher valued the Yan Shen race, but he valued the earthling race even more."

"The leader of the Yan Shen race is my junior."

"The leader of the earthling race will become the third disciple."

Pu Ti said. "And teacher has...prepared treasure for both his disciples!"

Luo Feng frowned, asking, "Elder Pu Ti, your teacher, that great being...why did he even create both the Yan Shen and the earthling race?"

"At teacher's level, he's already invincible within the universe." Pu Ti's voice sounded old and tired. He said, "You don't need to think too much. As one of the strongest in the universe, he had long been invited to many powers and organizations to be their leader, but he was too lazy to bother."

"As a leader?" Luo Feng asked.

"The strongest powers of the universe, the Human alliance (Hong alliance), the Space beast alliance, the Bug race alliance...and many others, they are the pinnacle strengths of the universe. There are others like the Nine domain alliance and other weaker ones, I'll simply tell you about this one."

"The Nine domain alliance is formed by 100,000 races, of which there are some powerful ones within. In terms of numbers, they far exceed the human and bug alliance."

"They have over 50 million emperors, over 100,000 knights and over 10 universe masters! In terms of strength, they are not weaker than any other." Pu Ti said. "Hence they invited teacher over to be their alliance head, do you know why?"

Luo Feng was still shocked over the power of this alliance.

The Hong alliance only had just over 3 million emperors, tens of thousands of knights, and as for universe masters...he wasn't clear.

"The universe masters are considered pinnacle beings in the vast universe, why get teacher to be their head? Why are 100,000 races all willing to submit to him? Even the strongest of warriors, would find it extremely hard to kill a universe master, there's no need to submit at all, why do so?" Pu Ti smiled, "It's because...teacher is

able to revive any being Universe master and lower."

Luo Feng took a deep breath.

The primal chaos city leader had said before...that he could easily withstand the backlash from reviving an emperor. He would be heavily injured from reviving a knight! If he tried to revive the Tian Shi palace leader or Xi Luo Duo level of warrior, he would fall.

And from what he knew, the city leader was already extremely strong amongst the universe masters, and was one of the top three beings of humanity.

"You should know that some powerful knights have strength akin to universe masters." Pu Ti said. "To be able to revive them meant that they could risk it all and continuously fight for their race! Even if they fell, they could be revived over and over! This would naturally make the alliance incredibly powerful."

"The most pinnacle strength in the universe."

"The six pinnacle races, they all have their own strongest warriors who is able to do so. Your human race has the Huge axe founder!" Pu Ti said. "And outside the six pinnacle races, there are some special life forms like teacher, the only one in the entire universe with no other similar life forms."

"Outside the six pinnacle races, these special life forms, along with the powerful beings from the trillions of races...created beings like the huge axe founder."

"Teacher is one of such."

"Any such warrior leading an alliance would make the alliance truly strong. They needn't even go out and battle, just using their revival abilities, would make the enemies fear them. What's more, they had many other special abilities." Pu Ti looked at Luo Feng. "Once one reaches teacher's level, conquering the universe has no meaning. If he wanted to, he could easily join any alliance as a

leader! However to him, that's meaningless."

"He prefers to work alone."

"Carefree, the six pinnacle races had long spent huge amounts of wealth and effort to invite him. But, he didn't even bother and never participated in the wars."

"However, he had other special goals."

"The Yan Shen and earthling race were the fruits of his labor."

"Of course, if you succeed, you will become the third disciple! Then your future will be boundless, becoming a universe master and dominating the earthling race wouldn't be impossible. You could choose to stay within humanity and become one of its upper echelons, or even be like your second senior, breaking away and taking your own territory, becoming your own power. Everything will be your own choice."

"Of course, the prerequisite is that you do not fall like the two before you. If you do, then I'd have to wait for the fourth candidate. Only, that would be another countless years from now."

Chapter 878: Life Or Death Inheritance

Within the shrine.

Pu Ti looked down on Luo Feng, "Child, you are the most exceptional one from Earth. You've already passed many hidden tests before, there's only one last life or death path you have ahead. If you live, you become the true leader of the earthlings! You'll have the chance to become a super power in the universe, even having the possibility of reaching teacher's level."

"Reaching teacher's level?" Luo Feng was shocked.

That great being...was one of the greatest in the vast universe, and only the founder of the Huge Axe dojo in the Hong alliance could match him.

"This was what he said personally." Pu Ti emphasized. "Of course, it's just a possibility. Anything related to laws or training, techniques and so on, all relies on yourself. Just like my junior, the leader of the Yan Shen race, even after training for trillions of years, he's still weaker than teacher."

Luo Feng nodded.

Actually, the leader of the Yan Shen race, who is a power in the universe alone, and is able to make humanity not dare challenge him, was already very powerful.

"The final life or death path, what is it?" Luo Feng asked.

"Star tower!" Pu Ti said softly, "The final challenge is...make star tower recognize you as its owner!"

"Star tower to recognize me as the owner?" Luo Feng's body shook.

The process of making this treasure recognize an owner was a life or death battle?

"Teacher is extremely proficient in creating treasures. All the

strongest beings in the universe are good at different things. While teacher may not compare to the Huge axe founder at certain things, in terms of creating treasures, he's definitely the best." Pu Ti exclaimed. "The vast universe has many hidden treasures, and even the strongest dare not say they've seen and know everything. This star tower...was something he created by chance within a special secret region back then. When it was close to completion, it interacted with a special gold light. Hence, it created this current star tower, making it different from the initial idea he had envisioned."

"Teacher has his own treasures and has no need for it."

"But he realized that it was too hard to let it search for its owner and recognize an owner." Pu Ti said. "The star tower is considered as one of the strongest treasures in the universe, and is even compared to teacher's treasures. The process for recognizing an owner however is extremely harsh."

"Harsh?" Luo Feng frowned.

Pu Ti looked down at Luo Feng, "Yes! The stronger the soul of the candidate, the more terrifying the process would be. A long time ago, teacher had searched among tens of thousands of warriors, from sector lord to undying, to knights etc to try. But, all of the warriors that tried had failed and died."

This great being was vicious indeed, Luo Feng thought. Casually getting a bunch of warriors to experiment, even knights were like lab rats to him.

"Through trial and error, teacher deduced..."

"That there was still a chance for sector lords and undyings. But, knights and above have no chance at all."

"The process tests one's soul and willpower!"

"Hence teacher nurtured the earthling race to have swift growths in mental states." Pu Ti said, "You are now at sector lord, and you

have a chance of success. In history, among the two candidates before, one was sector lord and another was undying, and both of them had reached high levels in mental states. However, both of them still failed."

"I'm sector lord?" Luo Feng looked at him, this Pu Ti's vision had seen through everything.

"I can easily see through your soul."

"The treasure you rely on to camouflage your life energy may fool knights, but you cannot fool a universe master." Pu Ti smiled. Luo Feng realized, back then the primal chaos city leader had easily seen through him too, knowing he had other bodies and so on. And this Pu Ti was only slightly weaker than the city leader.

But he was still a universe master being.

"I know about your other bodies too."

"However the moment the process begins, you'll have no way out. Even if your primal chaos city leader teacher appeared, he couldn't save you." Pu Ti emphasized. "Even though he's very powerful, and is even considered invincible within the primal universe, however in the actual universe and in star tower itself, he cannot do a thing."

"The moment the process starts, no one can stop it."

"The moment you fail."

"Your willpower and soul will completely crumble, and you'll die." Pu Ti emphasized. "Even though your teacher can reverse time and space to revive you, he cannot revive any memory of the Nine volume manual. You cannot be revived along with that manual, it is something the universe doesn't allow."

"The moment you die."

"Even if you are revived, the Nine volume manual will be gone and the evolution you got from it will be gone. Even if you get the

general and king armor again, you'll have no way to use them. In all, you'll lose the right to become the leader of the earth race, and any ability to ever get it."

Luo Feng took a deep breath. If he lost all this, his strength would fall greatly.

...

Rumble...countless sealed stars suddenly shook about the shrine.

"It's begun."

Pu Ti turned to the center of the shrine, "The process is about to begin."

"Star tower is a treasure the leader of the earth race deserves."

Xiu!

Light descended from above the shrine and gathered in the center. Countless lights were shining on one spot, forming a translucent crystal, and it glowed with gold threads within.

"Luo Feng." Pu Ti turned over. "The first candidate persevered for 2,600 years before falling. The second one went on to 3,300 years. I hope you can survive."

"Hm." Luo Feng turned to look at the crystal.

A chance to change his fate!

This entire process was a chance to change his fate.

If he failed, even if the primal chaos city leader revived him, he would lose everything in regards to the Nine volume manual. He would only be a genius without his special encounters. He would be much weaker than before and the city leader's respect for him would definitely fall. It would be lucky if he could become a knight, and a knight...in the great beings eyes, were nothing but little ants.

If he succeeded...

Becoming the leader of the earth race would give him the chance to become a superpower in the vast universe. He would even have the chance to become someone as strong as the great being himself!

"Success!"

"I have to succeed." Luo Feng roared.

"Master master." Heavy Arrow communicated mentally to him." I just fled from the space, even though I warned Qu Wu about Tian Chen, he was surrounded and ultimately killed by the demon camp! Master, where are you? I can feel your location but I cannot enter."

"Qu Wu fell?" Luo Feng couldn't help but shout out. "Tian Chen! I have to kill you!"

"Heavy Arrow, leave star tower first, and even the outer region wars. Wait patiently until I contact you via the virtual universe." Luo Feng ordered. He had given him an anonymous virtual universe network device much earlier.

"Yes master."

...

"Luo Feng, you must be sturdy, since the process is incredibly painful and long. The two candidates have proven in the past that 3,300 years still isn't enough." Pu Ti looked at him.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Kill Tian Chen?

He first had to pass this trial. If he failed and died, his own underlings will die along with him. Even if he was revived... without the general and king armor, it would be hard to even deal with Tian Chen.

"I must survive this." Luo Feng thought.

"Then begin!"

Pu Ti emphasized and gently pointed at Luo Feng. Immediately, a seemingly normal crystal without any special energy or pressure flew at him. As it touched Luo Feng, he didn't even feel it enter his mind.

"Chi!"

The instant the crystal touched with his core.

His main core hidden within his world ring shook violently. Even the mosha body and Golden horned beast's souls shook...just like how if someone controlled his human body's soul, they could completely control his other bodies!

There were three parts of the soul, but the main core was the center of it. Also, his consciousness could easily switch between the three.

Even if one body was destroyed, it was fine. However the moment his soul was taken over and he became a slave, the rest of the bodies would be affected as well.

As the crystal melded with him, it affected the main core. The moment he failed, the main core would crumble.

"I don't sense anything?"

"Didn't he say that it was very painful and would last for a long time?" Luo Feng sat crossed legged, and was curious.

Rumble!

That unbelievable terrifying pain instantly attacked all three bodies and his main core. It felt like a beast was trying to crawl out of his soul.

...

Pu Ti sat crossed legged within the shrine, his purple long beard swaying in the wind. Looking at the crossed legged Luo Feng shivering from the pain, he thought, "It's not so easy to become the leader of the earthling race. Let's hope that this third candidate

will make it through."

...

There was once in his life that Luo Feng had to immolate his soul to fight the golden horned beast, that was when he possessed it.

That was when his life took a big change!

And since then, this was the second time. Everything depended on whether he could survive this...

******

Within the vast energy flows.

A being over 90,000 km tall glowed with black light. He sat crossed legged on a mountain peak. This old being had sparkling translucent horns, his voice boomed, "Meng Tuo master, I've unintentionally butted in on your fight with the humans. However, those ninety one sand grains, I want them!"

"Old punk, my race finally managed to suppress that human and now you want to simply take away one of the three treasures?" A thunderous voice shook the entire energy flow about, resounding at the over 90,000 km tall being.

"If you don't hand it over, I'll help the human." The majestic old being didn't seem disturbed at all.

Suddenly, his expression changed slightly as he turned towards the vast space, almost like he could see through any distance, straight at the star tower in the seventh battlefield.

"The third candidate has begun?" The majestic being's eyes lit up with anticipation. "Let's hope that the little punk will succeed."

"Old punk, you sure are vicious! Don't let me meet you!"

In the distance, the great being raged, causing lightning to strike throughout the energies. After which, ninety one resplendent beams of light shot over towards the old being.

"Meng Tuo master, Primal chaos city leader, I'll take my leave!" The old being laughed. Sitting on the mountain peak, he instantly became a beam of light, even the mountain peak vanished from the energies about.

Chapter 879: Long Time

The pain of his soul tearing apart caused his body to shudder.

"This pain is still much weaker than anticipated."

"It should be about the level when I absorbed the 110th blood river crystal." Luo Feng was able to maintain his calm. In terms of threshold of pain, thousands of years ago when he was still weak in Blood river world, he felt that the pain caused during the absorption of the first crystal's alone was unbearable. However, as he grew, it honed his mental state more.

However, as he absorbed more blood river crystals, the pain naturally grew more and more. Back then he had crumbled countless times from the pain, and over these thousands of years, his threshold grew more and more. Currently, the golden horned beast's right claw and back had a total of 165 crystals!

"It's easy."

Even though his body shook slightly, he could still smile.

Luckily in terms of mental states, he had already reached the limit of Knowing oneself. Even though this was the lowest of the three levels, it simply represented where he was at. Like Innocence emphasized on coupling strength with gentleness and the highest level, Encompassing all included everything.

The three levels were explained as such. The first level was stupidly sticking to one's self, without any skill, simply relying on force alone and perseverance. Almost like a stone against rushing waters, being honed over and over.

The second level had skill involved. Knowing when to be soft, and when to be hard, and eventually melding the two, naturally withstanding any force against it.

The third level was above them all.

However...

The only reason why the second and third levels were higher than the first, was simply because skill was involved and there was an amplifying effect.

The same soul willpower, comprehending Innocence and perfect fusion could withstand pressure and illusions, withstanding soul attacks at least ten to hundreds of times more. If one reached the level of Encompassing all, his ability to withstand all these would rise hundreds to thousands of times more again.

However, this fusion of the crystal had nothing to do with soft or hard, encompassing nothing. It was simply melding the crystal and the soul. All one had to do was to bear the pain! And at this time, the mental states were useless...it all depended on one's perseverance and pain threshold!

This pain was from within the soul.

Not illusions or from external sources!

Ying Yang?

Encompassing all?

This pain was from within, and not from an attack, rather, true pain from the fusion of his soul with the crystal! Luo Feng had walked the limit of the first level all this while, constantly honing his self and forcefully bearing with pain. His mental state had long been honed to that of a diamond.

...

The star tower's crystal gradually melded with his soul in an extremely slow manner. As the level of fusion grew gradually, the pain naturally followed suit!

1 year, 2 years, 3 years...10 years, 20, 30..

In the blink of an eye, 60 years had passed.

While bearing with the pain, he continued to study the Beast god

statue and laws. Even connecting to the virtual universe and meeting with his family.

******

On the 61st year, the pain level had already doubled compared to before.

Luo Feng who was optimistic initially began to worry. "The speed of this pain growing is faster than expected. I could easily bear with it initially, but it's grown so much in 60 years. If it keeps up this way...I don't have any confidence in bearing with this for over 3,000 years."

"What do I do?"

"Fall?"

"No." He opened his eyes, looking at Pu Ti sitting crossed legged beside him.

"I have to survive, I have to succeed and become the earthling races leader." Luo Feng thought. While bearing with the intense pain, he swiftly made his plan.

"Hone my soul!"

"From birth till now, I've only lived for a few thousands years. In terms of mental state training, this process will go on for at least 3,300 years. During these 3,300 years, my mental state may rise even more! However the level of growth is still not enough...I have to search for the quickest way!"

Luo Feng pondered, his mind coming up with many mental state training methods.

Actually, bearing with the intense pain alone was a form of training, it would make one more resolute.

"Not enough, just using the pain to hone my self is not enough."

"I need a quicker way."

From birth till today.

The first 200 years, his mental state training had been going pretty well. The later thousands of years...even though it had risen quite a lot over time, in terms of speed, it was much slower than before.

"The heart, is true, pure and honest! Only then can a miracle occur!" Luo Feng believed in one of the experiences shared by one of china's ancestors before.

True. In nature and in virtue.

Pure. No distractions.

Honest, having an honest heart.

This was the path to unleashing one's soul.

The theory may seem simple, just like if how a researcher focused solely on research, without any distractions within, he could fully immerse himself within and his soul would provide sufficient energy to grow. The results and efficiency would improve by tens to hundreds of times.

"These 60 years, I've been bearing with the pain. Yet, I've been affected by it and unable to steady myself." Luo Feng thought.

"From now on."

"I'll begin to study the Beast god path, and purely focus on it. No matter how painful it gets, I will not let it affect me. My heart will be pure and solely focused on study." Luo Feng thought.

...

Being vigilant in peace time, and planning ahead. Luo Feng could feel the impending danger ahead. Under this formless pressure and intense pain, he began to immerse himself in the study of the Beast god path.

Being true and pure may sound easy, doing it however was extremely hard!

Without the intense pain, Luo Feng was easily able to carry on. However it was hard not to be affected by it. Even with his strong willpower, he would often get distracted and thrown off by the pain.

And the descending formless pressure would distract him too.

...

However gradually, he forgot all about it. Tossing the pain aside, no matter how intense it got, he focused on the Beast god path...

Only in solitude, would one's soul unleash its strength!

And a pure and honest heart, especially one that is able to remain this way despite the pain, would produce endless energy, allowing him to persevere...

******

Virtual universe, in the highest peaks of thunder island, within a shrine covered in vast energy.

The primal chaos city leader had been worrying about his own matters for the past hundreds of years, he had finally gotten to relax a little. He summoned Luo Feng, wanting to test him, also find out about his situation.

"He actually closed off his virtual universe connection? And he even left an automated reply for me, saying he's training?" He sat in the throne and laughed.

Ever since he began accepting the inheritance, Luo Feng had entrusted several tasks to his family but he didn't dare disturb the city leader, not even sending a mail. Rather, he prepared an automated reply, the moment the city leader sent a request or mail over, it would reply him immediately.

"Outer region wars army system."

"When and where was the last time my disciple Luo Feng connected to the virtual universe?" The city leader sat in his

throne and said to the space ahead.

"Primal chaos city leader."

Almost like metal clanging, "Luo Feng's last connection to the virtual universe was in star tower."

"Star tower?" The city leader nodded.

Hundreds of years ago, the sealed star had fallen. Over 100,000 emperors went for it with about 8,000 of them falling. It was extremely hard for an emperor to fall, since so many fell at that one time, the news spread far and wide, shaking the entire universe. As for the sealed star, it was said that it landed in one of the distant universe races' Qi Hou Race emperors.

"Luo Feng, when you enter the virtual universe, come see me immediately." The city leader sent out an order to Luo Feng. He didn't know that his disciple was currently facing a terrifying trial."

...

With his soul under intense pain, Luo Feng had been immersed in studying the Beast god path. During this time, his consciousness and willpower unknowingly began to grow at a rapid rate...the effect was incredibly beneficial. Even though his mind was growing, as time passed, the pain grew more and more intense too.

The level of pain outgrew his soul's growth!

100 years, 200, 300...800, 900 years...

In the blink of an eye, 1,000 years had passed.

Luo Feng initially had a huge advantage against the pain. However, even his 1,000 years of training couldn't keep up with the pain growth, it reached closer to his limit. If this kept up, Luo Feng was afraid he would barely make it past 2,000 years.

When that happened, the moment it exceeded his limit, his consciousness and willpower would crumble, and the crystal

would make his soul crumble...

He would fall!

Of course there were unexpected benefits from this 1,000 year of training. His over 1,000 years of honing and immersion into the Beast god path resulted in certain gains. Just his Beast god presence alone had reached the 19th level of the heavenly bridge. It was a pity that his law comprehension had no help towards this life or death inheritance.

...

Even though he faced danger, his soul was still completely immersed. With a pure and true soul, he didn't even sense the danger.

If he didn't do so, his soul wouldn't have grown so fast over these years.

1,600 years, 1,700, 1,800, 1,900...

The pain of the soul grew more and more terrifying, it far exceeded that of absorbing the 165th crystal, and was very close to his limit. However, he still kept himself immersed in the Beast god path. Unless the pain reached a level where it could actually affect his state, he didn't even sense the danger.

Heart pure and true, with no other distractions.

Chapter 880: Hope and Despair

2,000 years, 2,100, 2,200...

The fusion level of the crystal and his soul got higher and higher. It made the intense pain grow even more. This wasn't just any ordinary pain, but a tearing of the soul. At the final threshold, the soul would be completely torn apart! However as it got closer to the limit, Luo Feng focused his mind, it helped hone his mental state even more and he improved faster.

2,300 years, 2,400, 2,500, 2,600...

"It's been 2,600 years."

Within the shrine amidst the sealed stars, Luo Feng sat crossed legged there covered in perspiration and blood. Under such pain, blood drops would drip out as his entire body shivered. However, there was a strong sense of sturdiness from his expression, and he wasn't shaken by such pain.

"The two candidates from the past, the first one lasted 2,600 years, and the other for 3,300 years."

"Both were absolute geniuses of their time, and were incredibly exceptional elites and beings of the earth race. In terms of encounters, the first one was the strongest, and he was at the level of Innocence, yet he only lasted 2,600 years. The second one however was slightly weaker, even weaker than Luo Feng. However, his mental state reached the level of Encompassing all. At the end, he too fell."

"There have been many with strong mental states in the history of earth. There are countless in the first level, many in the second and quite a few in the third."

Pu Ti sighed within.

His teacher, the great being that nurtured the earth race had said before...

The three states weren't higher or lower than each other, they simply represented three different paths.

Knowing oneself and staying true to it, knowing one's strength and absolute confidence! No matter what happens, one would always believe in oneself and not be shaken. However the growth of this path was the hardest, with no external factors, relying solely on willpower.

Put crudely, it simply meant being extremely obstinate. Such a person would suffer easily.

However such a warrior wouldn't follow the crowds, he would be sturdy from within. Even when many others criticize and scold him, he wouldn't change. This was the most tiring paths of all...

Innocence, Man and nature as one.

Such a person could gain the respect of many others, it was hard to hold grudges against such a person, as they saw through the souls of trillions of lives. In history, many of them were considered saints.

Encompassing all, one believed in the vastness of the universe, and that they were unable to exceed everything. They weren't satisfied with just going with the flow, they wanted to encompass everything.

Such warriors had huge hearts.

With endless ambition, and one's belief was terrifying too.

...

Three paths.

The reason why the earth people regarded each level as higher than the other was because they hadn't produced a true great being.

There were many in history that had reached the peak of Knowing oneself, and after encountering countless setbacks, there

were huge changes in history itself. They had seen through themselves and realized eventually that getting along was the path, and completely enforcing their way was too extreme.

Hence there was Man and nature as one, the so called perfect level.

Then, they no longer suffered, no longer butted heads, rather they were worshipped by many.

...

After walking that second path for a long time, they would have deeper visions.

They weren't satisfied with just man and nature as one, they wanted to encompass it all, this was the third level.

In the history of earth, anyone who reached the third level, built countries or sects. All in all they were all the pinnacle beings of earth. This heart that encompass all allowed them to take any setbacks and improve through any situation.

While their qualifications may not match others, however with resolve and steady improvement, it allowed them to reach the top!

...

Three paths, different levels.

The third was the strongest, the second one followed and the first one was the hardest.

Hence it became known this way through the many generations of earth...and ignorance was as such. Any great being...or absolute warrior would however mock this, as they knew that the path was simply different. What was the point of comparing these?

...

"To persevere for over 2,600 years, his heart is indeed sturdy." Pu Ti said, "Against such tearing pain, he must have a completely sturdy heart and willpower to push through. Only then could he

last long...it'll just depend on how strong his heart is."

There were many courageous warriors in chinese history that crumbled under torture.

Despite their loyalty, it could only be said that their pain threshold hadn't been honed. That their methods to train weren't strong enough. As for such pain that permeated the soul, that lasted for thousands of years...who could take it? As for the normal heroes from the past, just a few thousand years of solitude would make them go crazy, much less what Luo Feng was going through now...

******

While he was bearing with the torture, he forced himself to not be affected by anything, immersing himself in studying the Beast god path.

In the 2,800th year...

The high level of pain finally reached his true limit, affecting his study.

"Don't disturb me."

"Howl!"

Within his internal world, the golden horned beast looked down at the statue and copied it.

Just like some scientist from earth, even in sickness and pain, they continue to research. Even though they were affected and distracted, they would continue their work. Luo Feng who had been immersed within for over 2,000 years had already gotten so deep in that even though he was affected, he would simply push it aside!

Pain? Force it away, continue his study!

Distraction? Push it aside!

A pure heart, against the danger, it created a mysterious energy

and strength, allowing him to push aside the pain. And everytime he did so, it allowed his heart to stabilize. It would gradually strengthen him...and this speed of growth was faster than before.

Just like that...Luo Feng held on.

2,900 years, 3,000, 3,100 years, 3,200...

His ability to push aside the pain grew better as time passed. The strength his soul had for pushing aside this eternally rising pain, this pain that he could never quell, only continue to meld with it. However, the pain continued to grow. Almost like after stabilizing himself from the distractions for so long, one would still eventually get tired and unable to move. No matter how strong his beliefs were, one would reach a limit, and the result was...to die!

"Is this the end?" Pu Ti sat crossed legged there and looked at the shivering Luo Feng covered in sweat and blood. His body twitched in pain, sometimes madly, sometimes a little...

His entire body was shivering madly.

"He's tired."

"Child, just give up."

"Even if you fall, and your teacher doesn't revive you, just because of your strong will, I will reverse time and space to revive you. While you may lose much, however...the process for the star tower to recognize an owner is simply too hard. Back then when the tower melded with that colorful light, even teacher didn't have a guarantee, maybe...then even if the earth race produced incredibly exceptional beings, it still wouldn't work. If the first three all failed, even the fourth, fifth and so on might keep failing. Who knows when teacher will change his mind and not force this star tower to recognize an owner."

Pu Ti sighed,

He was a universe master, a pinnacle being of the vast universe. He could easily see through Luo Feng's soul, and he knew that Luo

Feng was already at his limit.

"Don't disturb me!"

"Don't bother me!!!" Luo Feng was still completely immersed in studying the Beast god path. Against the powerful pain that constantly interrupted him, he howled within and raged, "Don't disturb me, no one can disturb me, no one will!"

Rumble!

A sudden change!

If his willpower and consciousness before was said to be honed into a diamond, incredibly sturdy and piercing, over the 3,200 years of training, it reached another level and it became an even denser diamond than before. Just like it was placed in a location with extreme pressure, like a star becoming a neutron star.

Consciousness and willpower, it had an unbelievable evolution!

The diamond was forced into an atomic nucleus.

"Continue." Luo Feng had a feeling like he never had before. Almost like when he reached his final limit of fatigue, passing it now gave him even more strength than before! The pain had disrupted his study before, knocking him hard until he reached his limit. Now however, it was completely suppressed and gave no resistance whatsoever.

...

"What!"

In the shrine, Pu Ti who had been observing the entire process glanced at Luo Feng' s soul and naturally discovered the evolution.

"How did it change?"

"How did this happen, this never happened to the two of them before him. Especially the second, he lasted for 3,300 years before falling and nothing like this ever happened." Pu Ti was shocked. "Right, the two candidates, one was at Innocence and the other at

Encompassing all. They had different ways of dealing with the pain. Innocence would make him get used to the pain and meld with it. Encompassing all...would encompass even the pain. However the two of them were both wrong. Wrong in the sense that this isn't a pain from anything, but rather the crystal melding with the soul. This isn't an illusion, but something real!"

"While their methods could push their souls to the limit to not feel the pain."

"However without withstanding it, they cannot suppress it. Their strength to suppress it naturally won't be enough. Because they melded with it, they encompassed it."

"And Luo Feng chose to withstand it! Completely withstand and suppressing the pain, not ever melding or encompassing it."

"While he may feel more pain."

"But isn't this a way to train the first level of Knowing oneself? Pushing his willpower to the limit finally resulted in evolution, resulting in a huge jump." Pu Ti gasped.

A huge leap forward gave Luo Feng a huge leeway.

3,300 years...3,900...

4,000...

4,300...4.900...

The crystal continued to meld with him, and the pain gradually rose. Even though the evolution before gave Luo Feng a huge leeway, over the past 2,000 years, it finally got close to his limit again.

"Is there no way for this star tower to recognize an owner?"

"The past 3,200 years was only the first half?" Pu Ti was shocked as well, because the longest a candidate lasted before was only 3,300 years. No one truly knew how long this process would take.

No one had done it.

No one knew the limit...whether it was Pu Ti or that great being before.

"If Luo Feng fails, how many more candidates would it take to actually succeed?" His face was filled with worry.

Chapter 881: Missing...You all...

"5,000 years!" Pu Ti's voice was old and filled with worry.

He had never expected the process to take over 5,000 years. The first two had only lasted 2,600 and 3,300 years respectively.

"Let's hope that Luo Feng succeeds." Pu Ti heaved a long sigh, his voice resounding throughout the shrine.

...

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain, Nine star bay.

Within an ancient construct.

Nine star bay was now used only by the highest levels of Luo Feng's family, as the many other members all lived in other places. As a family with over 10,000 years of history, plus with Luo Feng's status being akin to the Ganwu universe country leader, the family's power was huge.

Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!

Walking along the exquisite stone floor, Xu Xin walked along the pathway followed by two ladies. As Luo Feng, the highest power in the family was exploring the universe, everything was mostly left to his oldest son Luo Ping to handle, however the important matters were still handled by Xu Xin.

Xu Xin had a special position in the family, and also she was the CEO of the Ping Hai company. Over the 10,000 years, her position and authority grew, just a glance from her would make others shudder.

Normal people didn't even dare look up at her.

However, there always seemed to be a sense of worry on her face.

"Master, it's a letter from the family leader." Her virtual assistant suddenly alerted her.

"Mail?"

She suddenly stopped, her eyes happy from the surprise. No matter how calm she was, she was in a flurry now, "He said he was off to do something important, closing off the virtual universe receiver. However, he completely vanished for 6,000 years, and was unable to be found or contacted. How can I not worry?"

In the world of warriors, disappearing for 6,000 years without any news, it could very likely mean one had fallen.

Luckily he had left messages for his family before he shut off his receiver.

"The wife seems very happy."

"I've never seen her so happy."

"She's been deep in worry the past few years. Now however, she seems much lighter than before." The two ladies behind discussed secretly.

Indeed so, Xu Xin was happily reading the mail.

"He really knows how to say the right things." She read the mail, her smile growing wider, "Even the events from high school, we are already an old couple, is there a need for all these..."

The mail was very long.

A total of tens of thousands of words, Xu Xin had walked from the pathway to the grass and sat in a chair to slowly read through. This was a mail filled with emotions, from the time the two met to the time they fell in love...Xu Xin couldn't help but smile as she read.

As she read on...suddenly her expression changed.

Her body shivered as her eyes revealed shock.

"No!"

"No!"

She stood up fiercely, roaring within, tears about to flow down, "I don't want your guilt, no!!!"

This shocked the two ladies behind her, they exchanged glances and felt something amiss.

"Ma! Ma!"

An urgent shout resounded from afar as a silhouette swiftly rushed over and another from another side. They were Luo Ping and Luo Hai, they both had anxious expressions, shouting for her as they arrived. They too had received mails.

"Close the door, forbid anyone from entering." Xu Xin shouted at the two ladies.

"Yes."

The two ladies were her personal staff. Whether it was matters with Ping Hai company or family affairs, Xu Xin often gave her orders through them. Even though they were just her staff, their position was akin to high level managers of the family, naturally they were incredibly astute and intelligent. When they sensed something amiss, they immediately shut off the doors.

"Ma, what's going on?"

"Has dad really..." Luo Ping and Luo Hai were both anxious.

Xu Xin hugged her two sons, finding it hard to hold back her tears.

This mail was something Luo Feng had actually set to send 6,000 years after he began the life or death inheritance. According to his thinking back then...the first candidate lasted 2,600 years and the second one lasted 3,300 years. He expected the entire process to only last at most 4,000 years.

It was too long, absurdly long. The two had passed the hidden tests before and had finally gone for the life or death inheritance. They were obviously both exceptional beings too, they shouldn't

have been too far from the end.

Luo Feng had expected 6,000 years!

"Since the first lasted 2,600 and the entire process should be about 4,000 years. It wouldn't be so absurd as to go on for 6,000 years right, who could last that long?"

"If I succeed in this, I'll get rid of the mail."

"If I fail, at least they will have something."

"Afterall, the moment I fall...the connection to the virtual universe has been shut and the primal chaos city leader wouldn't know about me falling. With his level of being, his training may go on for hundreds of millions of years at a time, who knows when he would actually revive me. And Xu Xin's life span is at most 10 million years."

Luo Feng was very worried.

He believed...that even if he fell, he would eventually be revived by his teacher. However, what if he was only revived after ten million years?

What about his wife?

After his revival, what if his wife, son, parents and younger brother were all dead?

Hence...

He prepared a mail for them and set it to send automatically 6,000 years from when he began.

"Your father is in a predicament, but he did say he would return in the future. If short, ten thousand years, if long up to ten million years..." Xu Xin's voice shook, right, ten million years, her life span was but that long, would she see him again?

"Dad."

"Dad." Luo Ping and Luo Hai were shocked too.

"Let's go see your grandparents." Xu Xin suppressed the pain and said.

...

After awhile, the three of them met up with Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan, along with Luo Hua, they all bore a look of pain. The entire Luo Family...was supported by Luo Feng! The humans of earth were the same! He had always been there, weathering the storms and allowing them to grow to such strength, allowing the humans of earth to stand high in the entire Gan Wu universe country.

However...the pillar had fallen!

"Little Feng, little Feng." Gong Xin Lan was shaking. Even though Luo Feng said he would return in the distant future, the family all regarded this as words to console them.

"Our Luo family, our earth, is facing a huge crisis." Xu Xin's voice was hoarse.

Everyone looked at her.

"The account number and password he left in the mail is for some wealth for the Luo family. It's one with a huge amount of wealth within." Xu Xin said, she hadn't seen him in so long. She didn't expect for him to leave an account in the mail, reaching up to 50 billion mixed elements!

This was an unbelievable sum to her. Within the entire Gan wu universe country, other than the leader himself, who would have such wealth?

"Everybody hurry and get ready to deal with this." She said hoarsely. "The hypocrisy of the world, if Luo Feng truly fell, our family would definitely be targeted. We don't have enough strength to protect the entire huge family. I'm heading immediately to see his teacher True Yan and ask about him."

"Hurry and go."

"Go, leave the family to us."

Luo Hong Guo and Luo Hua said.

"Hm." She nodded.

******

Xu xin was afterall a core member of the Virtual Universe Company. With her connections and her having True Yan's number from a long time ago, she quickly contacted him and told him what happened.

"What?"

"Return in the distant future?" True Yan's expression changed.

Unlike Xu Xin and the others, True Yan was an absolute warrior of the universe. He knew much more, he immediately understood...Luo Feng's distant future meant he would be revived. Otherwise with the virtual universe network spreading all over the vast universe, how could they not be able to contact him?

"I'm going to see the Primal chaos city leader." True Yan said urgently.

"Sorry to trouble you." Xu Xin said anxiously.

"I am his teacher!" True Yan immediately left the virtual universe network.

...

Primal chaos city, True Yan immediately rushed to the city leader's residence to request a visit.

What level of being was the city leader? Even True Yan had almost no possibility of ever seeing his true body, unless there were extenuating circumstances, this time...True Yan saw him.

"You say that he might have fallen?" The city leader sat crossed legged across the vast wasteland of corpses.

"Yes." True Yan said respectfully.

"He's still alive." The city leader said.

"Alive?" True Yan was shocked.

"I can confirm that he's been in the seventh battlefield's star tower, and he's been there the past 6,000 years." The city leader said. "He hasn't connected to the network for the past 6,000 years, but I can confirm his life energy is still there. At most, he should be in some trouble. It's normal for danger to appear within star tower."

True Yan was somewhat nervous when he heard, that was the star tower!

On the surface, the tower only had forbidden guards in spaces. However in truth, it had many dangers about, one had to know that it was a place that even universe masters didn't dare mess about within.

****

Star tower.

Within the shrine surrounded by countless sealed stars, the floor was stained in a layer of blood. Luo Feng sat there, his body shivering from the pain, as blood flowing all around. The sector lord body's regeneration was incredibly strong, the main core could give never ending energy to recover, yet he kept bleeding...

His body was about to crumble everywhere, this was the result of intense pain from the soul. It was obvious that the pain from his soul was absurd!

"6,000 years!"

"5,000 years ago, he was already close to his limit, and at 5,600 years, he had completely reached his limit already. He was able to evolve at the critical moment last time, I don't believe that he can be so lucky this time. However from the 5,600 year to the 6,000 year...it's been 400 years, just what amount of strength does he have!"

Pu Ti sat crossed legged and looked at Luo feng shocked, he couldn't imagine how he could still hold on even after reaching his limit 400 years ago.

...

The pain on his soul had already reached its limit, and he had no way to suppress it anymore. Luo Feng couldn't study the Beast god path anymore, and his consciousness was simply holding on by a thread...withstanding the tearing of his soul.

"I want to see you all again!"

"You all!"

"You all..."

Luo Feng's consciousness held on to one single thing, that was his family. His parents and brother, his wife, he didn't want to be revived to a time where they were all gone. He couldn't accept that. At the final point, his heart only held that one thought...his family!

"I wish!"

"I really wish!"

...

His soul began to crumble, however a formless willpower forced it back together. Crumble...form...amidst the struggle, his only thought held him together, within he called out to his family. He was guilty, he couldn't bear to...that crystal however continued to meld and tear his soul apart...

His soul was about to crumble!

"I really wish..."

"You all..."

Chapter 882: Luo Feng Awakens

He was already unable to even think, as his soul was on the brink of shattering.

Just one thought...

Forced his soul to stick together, the only surviving thought...

...

"You are still fighting, your soul is already crumbling." Pu Ti sighed. "Child, you are too tired, just give up." With his unbelievable power as a universe master, he had seen the state of Luo Feng's soul, he had begun to care for this child.

"You have already spent 6,000 years you've struggled with this, yet....you've only lived past 10,000 years."

"You are too young."

"And still a child..." He shook his head. He was the first underling of the great being. From the most ancient of times, he had followed the great being throughout the universe, and he had lived an incredibly long life. In his eyes, the sector lord lifespan of 1,000 eras was only maturity.

As for Luo Feng's 6,000 years of struggle with the inheritance, he had only lived past 10,000 years, in the vast universe, it was indeed tender.

"Ke ke..." Luo Feng's body shook as it unconsciously made noise, as fresh blood flowed.

Almost like a fish on shore that was about to die...

He was struggling! He couldn't die that easily, even if he knew he would be revived eventually.

******

Pu Ti's snake tail lay across the ground. He looked on at Luo Feng

who could fall at any time. He understood that this youth was fighting with everything he had.

"You are impressive."

"The first one lasted 2,600 years, while the second one lasted 3,300 years. Yet, you've been here over 6,000 years. It's already very impressive, and you should be proud. Just give up." Pu Ti was very clear on what Luo feng was going through, who was even unable to even think, while his soul was falling apart...

"Star tower!"

"Why is this inheritance so hard?" He sighed, looking at the unconscious shivering and bleeding Luo Feng.

...

Luo Feng had a life changing event before, that was when he immolated his soul to fight the golden horned beast. During that time he was supposed to die too, he was willing to give it all up to kill the beast. Fate plays tricks on people, he didn't expect to actually possess the beast and begin a whole new life.

He was the pride of the genius battle, the Ganwu universe investigator, the disciple of the Primal chaos city leader. He had massacred emperors till he got the name Blade River emperor... intrepid! Incredibly exciting!

Now he was at this point again.

This was the second life changing event.

If he succeeded, he would live on.

If he failed, he would fall.

...

His body unconsciously made cracking noises, as his expression was warped. His skin was torn apart, even more tragic than most dead people.

Live or die.

Luo Feng struggled on this thin fine line. The mad winds blew at him, blowing him towards the side of death, but his love and affection for his family made him fight hard to hold on, pulling himself to side of living.

However, every thought had its limit, and if the inheritance continued, his soul would continue to be torn up stronger than before!

"I wish...really wish..."

Luo Feng was like a person running on the highway being chased by the cars, running as fast as he could. However the traffic behind was speeding up and gradually catching up...

Finally they caught up!

******

Within the thousands of forbidden spaces in star tower, many undyings from all over were suddenly shocked.

"What's going on?"

"Why are the forbidden spaces shaking?"

Rumble...

Almost like a giant who was shaking every space violently, the entire nine light year tall tower shook. However, with the nine whirlpools around, it was hard to tell. The countless undyings within all didn't know what had happened.

...

Simultaneously, within an incredibly distant dangerous area, amidst vast energies, a lonely palace glowing with green light floated up.

The many underlings within were all knights.

"Hm?"Within a huge throne, a majestic old man over 90,000 km

tall sat there, listening to the reports from his underlings. Suddenly, his expression changed and he looked far away, almost like he saw through time and space, right at the star tower.

"The process of the star tower recognizing an owner has been going on for so long, that youth actually lasted past it."

"Haha..."

"A Trillion years of waiting, the earth race has finally produced an exceptional warrior."

He got up suddenly.

Sou!

Vanishing from sight.

...

"Success?" Pu Ti looked shocked at Luo Feng who had stopped shivering. He had felt Luo Feng's consciousness slowly fading away, almost like it was about to end, he would at most last another two to three years. Luo Feng had already lasted 6,092 years.

What was two to three years before the thousands of years before?

Anyone would have known that the end was coming.

Even if he fought hard, with no more fuel left, he would naturally stop moving altogether.

And just earlier, that crystal had finally completely melded with his soul, the fusion was a success.

Fate decreed so!

Actually, if Luo Feng didn't have such a sturdy heart, withstanding the pain for so long, the evolution wouldn't even have happened 3,200 years ago. Without that evolution...no matter how strong he was, he wouldn't have lasted another 3,000 years.

Even with that evolution.

If he didn't hold on to his thought for close to 500 years...

This final moment! The final evolution!

Even with miracles, one needs hard work to create opportunities!

"Success." Luo Feng opened his eyes, as his world energy shook off all the blood on his body. His eyes were incredibly fatigued and joyful. "I've succeeded, I've succeeded, I can return to you all..."

He was relaxed and gleeful.

The extreme fatigue on his soul overtook him and consumed his consciousness.

Rumble!

Luo Feng who had been sitting crossed legged all this while, even when death was upon him, suddenly fell and lay on the ground motionless. He had fallen into a deep sleep.

"He's fallen asleep?"

"He actually fell asleep?" Pu Ti smiled at the scene, "It's rare for a sector lord to fall asleep from fatigue."

An undying would fall into a coma when they lost too much of their undying body.

And the moment a sector lord's soul collapses, they die. Unless it was like Luo Feng's condition where he forced too much out of his soul, far exceeding the limits of a sector lord's soul. Hence he fell asleep right after succeeding. His soul itself was too tired, it required time to recover.

However, normally warriors who are able to unleash their soul strength were already considered not bad, much less exceeding its limits. For a sector lord to lose consciousness from fatigue was incredibly rare.

...

One month, two months, three months...

For a sector lord to be so tired that he required sleep, the sleep naturally lasted a long time. However as his soul was still complete, it wouldn't be as long as an undying recovering from a coma.

Luo Feng slept for over nine years!

He hadn't dreamt like that in a long time. He lay within the shrine of star tower, smiling as he lay there. He seemed to dream of happy things. At this time, beside him in the shrine...there were two incredibly terrifying beings of the universe there watching the scene.

Luo Feng's eyes gradually opened.

He slept so deep that he dreamt of many things. It was clear his soul had completely recovered, when his dream finished, he opened his eyes.

"Child..." A warm voice resounded. Just like the voice from the black metal board, it made Luo Feng stand up immediately and turn about.

There were two silhouettes.

One was the familiar universe master Pu Ti. At this time, he sat crossed legged and had kept his power, remaining low profile. And right ahead in the center stood a majestic over 900m tall huge silhouette. He wore a normal green armor and had two translucent horns on his forehead, he was looking down at Luo Feng.

His vast energy engulfed the entire shrine.

Amidst the vast energy, Luo Feng felt like a normal human being covered by the sun. There was no sense of threat, instead it was very comfortable. It also made him realize this wasn't pressure, but the natural life energy this being emitted. Just this energy alone far exceeded Pu Ti's, and even the Primal chaos city leader's...

"The universe laws, I can't feel them anymore." Luo Feng was shocked.

"How is this possible?"

"Why can't I feel the laws?"

The warriors all trained in feeling the laws and comprehending them, the clearer they were the faster they trained. However, whether it was his human body, or the mosha body or the golden horned beast, they all similarly couldn't feel a hint of the laws, just as though...

This being before him, his life energy forced even the laws of the universe away.

"This is the power of the great being?" Luo Feng looked at this over 900m tall majestic old being. Feeling shock within, "Even the laws of the universe are no match for him? It's no wonder he can create the Nine volume manual, something that goes against the laws altogether, this is simply too...too..."

Over 900m tall, it shocked Luo Feng.

Human beings were hardly ever that tall. He didn't know that this being's normal size was actually over 90,000 km tall. As a completely unique life form, in terms of talent and bloodline level, it was much higher than the golden horned beast. However, to enter the shrine to see Luo Feng, he shrank himself to only 900m.

"Congratulations, from now on, you are the leader of the earth race. You have the right to become an absolute warrior of the universe!" The majestic being's voice thundered throughout the hall straight into Luo Feng's heart.

Beside him, the universe master Pu Ti was smiling at him too, and was happy for him. "Third junior, congratulations."

Chapter 883: The Great Being

The words "Have the right to become an absolute warrior" made Luo Feng excited. This was coming from the great being of the universe himself...able to match up to the founder of the Huge axe dojo. In the eyes of this great being, to even begin to be called an absolute warrior, one had to at least be a universe master.

He had two disciples.

One was Pu Ti, a universe master.

The second was the leader of the Yan Shen race, who was also a universe master.

Luo Feng was about to become the third. He had hopes of becoming a universe master too! This made him burn with excitement within, universe master...reaching the pinnacle of knight level like the Tian Shi palace leader or Xi Luo Duo were already considered huge powers of the universe. As to reach the level of universe master...

With the power of time and space in his hands, one is even able to revive warriors. It would make the race have a never ending supply of warriors.

"The human race and the Yan Shen race are both my children." The mountain like majestic old being gazed at Luo Feng, his voice booming throughout, "You've passed the many hidden tests, and even survived the star tower test, you are now my disciple, and probably the last one too."

Luo Feng was shocked.

Last disciple? Who could say what the future held. But this being seemed to have already confirmed that he would only have three.

"Don't be shocked." The great being's gaze was like sunlight itself, shining on Luo Feng's soul. "For your senior and you, since the beginning of the universe, I've long had a plan and spent countless

amounts of effort and used wealth accumulated over countless years on treasures for you two."

"A large amount of treasures?" Luo Feng was stunned.

"Like building the star tower, even if your entire human race uses all its energy, even if you had my skills in creating treasures, how many can you build?" The being turned to Pu Ti, "My help towards Pu Ti however has been the least."

Pu Ti bowed, "Teacher, without your help, I would have probably stayed an undying all my life."

"Even without me, you would still have become a knight." The being shook his head. "Back then I took in many underlings, and all of them with great talents. I've helped so many of them, they all had the same amount of help and resources, yet they all remained knights. Only you became a universe master."

"It can't be helped, every treasure recognizing a master is incredibly harsh. I began preparing for your two juniors long before they were born."

"I already have my own treasures." Pu Ti said.

"Your treasure isn't worth mentioning. Compared to the six pinnacle races and their universe masters, yours is only considered normal." The being shook his head. "I'm currently preparing a treasure for you, I've collected it for countless eras and it's already almost done. It'll probably take another 10 million eras for it to have some hope."

Pu Ti bowed excitedly, replying respectfully, "I will be eternally grateful for everything Teacher does."

"Haha, my disciples will get nothing less." The being laughed loudly. "I only hope that one of you three will actually catch up to me. Haha...that would be the legend of the universe, both teacher and students, ultimate warriors, hahaha..."

Luo Feng embraced the thought within.

This great being had extremely few disciples, and both the second and third disciples were picked from races he made, creating his own techniques and picking the most exceptional of the lot. It was obvious that this being had harsh requirements for his disciples.

Outside of the two races he created, he only picked the one underling that he had great feelings for, the only one that became a universe master to be his disciple.

Other than that!

Despite the trillions of races, the countless eras that passed, among the countless geniuses, he never accepted another disciple. The Primal chaos city leader was different, as he carried the weight of humanity on his shoulders. However, when absolute geniuses of powerful beings appear, he would accept them as disciples. He had a whole bunch of disciples, and many more in name. Even the founder of the Huge Axe dojo was similar.

When it concerned the entire race, they were all like that.

This great being however was a completely unique life form, with no race to his name. He didn't care about the geniuses at all. He nurtured two races as his children, only then would he put in the effort to raise them.

"Luo Feng my disciple, you haven't called me teacher yet." The being looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng bowed respectfully, shouting excitedly, "Teacher!"

The great being was the founder of the earth race. He could be said to be the great creator, and without him, there probably wouldn't even be an earth race.

"Ok."

"As my student, I will do my best to help you." The being's voice boomed. He looked at Luo Feng, "I have three methods in teaching my disciples. One, I like to prepare the best resources for them.

Secondly, I will not teach any techniques at all. Thirdly, I will not care if you die or live, and I will definitely not revive you if you die."

Luo Feng was stunned.

Not teaching any techniques? Don't care if he lived or died?

"A true warrior cannot be taught." The being said solemnly. "Everything relies on yourself. Every universe master comes from their own created techniques and growth."

"By having a teacher to always protect you, you'll never become strong."

"The way I teach my disciples, I don't teach techniques, don't care about their survival, and I will only provide resources. If you fall along the way, I will pick another candidate from the earth race to accept the life or death inheritance and find another third disciple. The two races I've nurtured are destined to always have their leader, and the leader may not always be in each generation, you are but one of them. Let's hope you will forever remain the leader."

His voice boomed, straight into Luo Feng's soul.

And the voice of this great being was like vast energy, making others naturally submit.

"Understood." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"You understand the theory. No matter how powerful the teacher is, no matter how much resources he provides, the treasures he provides, if the student doesn't train...then it would be impossible to even reach the undying level." The being said seriously. "The external resources are very important, the self training is even more so. However the stronger one gets, the less the external help will benefit him. Using endless treasures will allow one to train a little to become undying. Becoming a knight however...will have harsh requirements on training. A universe master, that's

incredibly tough. If you become a universe master...to improve to the next level, where I am at, no treasure will help at all. Your first and second seniors have all been stuck at this point for countless eras. Other than humanity's Huge Axe founder, no one else has been able to breakthrough."

"I understand, I will do my best." Luo Feng said excitedly.

Many warriors were afraid of not having enough resources.

Why were the pinnacle races and super powers fighting? Why massacre and have war? All for resources!

Nurturing geniuses required resources!

A warrior required resources to grow!

With that...it was akin to having the foundation, everything else relied on their own training. And this great being was providing enough resources for Luo Feng to become a great being himself. This was a terrifying amount of resources.

"I've prepared two treasures each for you and your second senior."

"A total of four treasures."

"Of which three are about the same level, only the star tower is different!"

"Your star tower is very special, as it is much stronger than any treasure your senior has." The being exclaimed. "Back then, I spent countless resources and treasures to create the star tower. In the midst, something special happened that was totally unexpected, making its power grow much more than before! Making it the strongest treasure among all of them!"

"Even though its power grew, it also made the process of recognizing a master tens of thousands of times harder."

"For the tower to recognize a master, I specially nurtured the souls and willpower of the earth race to be much sturdier. Even so,

the first and second candidates both failed. And back then, the treasure for the Yan Shen race easily recognized its master, unlike you, having to go through so much."

Luo Feng gasped within.

Right, it was torturous. He recalled the over 6,000 years of pain, every second felt like a year. These 6,000 years...were much harder than a normal hundred million years. It was like an endless hell, one without an end, suffering within. Fighting to stay alive... finally holding on to the thought of his family...

Until he grew too weak.

Luckily at the critical moment he succeeded!

"The star tower's abilities are very strong, and because of the special change, even I don't know its limits. Just to have it recognize a master alone was extremely tough, triggering it is even tougher." The being said, Luo Feng understood as well. Like the Sha Wu wings, its basic form alone required comprehending the first level of Beast god transformation.

The wings had little use for universe masters.

But the star tower was suitable even for the greatest of beings! One of the strongest treasures of the universe! Without a master controlling, it left the universe masters dumbfounded. Even the strongest of the four pinnacle races couldn't forcefully take it. The requirements for using it, would naturally be much harsher than the Sha Wu wings.

"Your human teacher, the Primal chaos city leader is the highest of universe masters in the vast universe. Even your second senior is at most his level, and even possible weaker."

"However, if you ever become a universe master, with these two treasures, especially the star tower, it will definitely make you at least be his level. You might even be able to suppress him."

"This is the power of the strongest treasure."

The ancient being said, "The star tower is one, and I've prepared another treasure for you, named Force armor."

"Force armor?" Luo Feng was stunned.

"The Force armor had been placed amongst the Yan Shen race, and is being guarded by your second senior. This armor...with special resources, can produce different levels of armor pearls, namely the soldier, general, king and Emperor armor pearls. These are all suited for the Yan Shen race, but are mainly used by knights and below. At most raising the entire strength as a whole. The Force armor is the true treasure, which is even suitable for universe masters to use. It has endless power and is your second treasure."

Luo Feng was overwhelmed when he heard this.

The soldier, general, king and emperor armors...were produced by the Force armor?

"One force armor and the star tower which was even more terrifying."

"The great being had prepared two true treasures for the leader of the earth race."

"These were both more intrepid than the Sha Wu wings, and is enough to make even universe masters go crazy for. Let's hope that the requirements for using them aren't too harsh." Luo Feng was a little worried. With his little bit of strength, would he be able to use such terrifying treasures?

Chapter 884: The Future of The Earth Race

Within the shrine, amidst the countless sealed stars, the great being gazed down at Luo Feng, speaking slowly and affectionately. His voice boomed throughout the shrine, as a completely unique life form of the universe, his height was naturally over 90,000 km, he was used to speaking loudly.

"Disciple, your two treasures, one is the star tower, the other is the Force armor. As for your second senior's two treasures, one is the Yan Shen Halberd and the other is the Raw Soul."

"Back then, when I nurtured the Yan shen race, they were naturally born with natural abilities. Hence, they naturally became fighters. The leader, which is your second senior was also proficient in close combat, with endless power. The Yan Shen Halberd was a terrifying weapon, while the the Raw soul was a special soul treasure. When fused with the soul, it could make the soul become extremely strong!"

Luo Feng was shocked.

The Treasure Raw soul could strengthen a soul?

"Your second senior's god body was extremely powerful, but his soul was relatively normal compared to it, and was akin to normal universe masters. Using the Raw soul, it gave him the upper hand. Since then...the Raw soul has made his soul side grow much stronger, and with the Yan Shen Halberd giving him intrepid strength. Currently, he's become an absolute power of the universe, who was proficient in battles, and became a race that many others do not dare mess with.

Luo Feng nodded as he heard.

He respected within, creating a super power of the universe, which was truly unbelievable.

"However, I wasn't satisfied." The being looked at Luo Feng, his

eyes gleaming. "Hence, I created the earth race."

"Even though the body was strong, the universe has some ways to change the bloodline and evolve the genetics. I created the Nine volume manual that went against the laws of the universe, and was able to improve the foundation of earth humans, raising them to become an extremely rare and powerful life form! You possessed the golden horned beast. Hence, you are already considered one of the pinnacle bloodlines, your attack strength is tens of times that of a human. The first of the Nine volumes raises the strength three times, the second is six times, and the third is twelve times. Just the three volumes alone can make a human body exceed that of a pinnacle bloodline golden horned beast!"

"Then there is the fourth and fifth..."

As one goes further, the commonly seen bloodlines and life forms will have no way to match you. The golden horned beast is able to pass on its memories to its next generation, it is still considered a normal race." The being exclaimed, "And there are still other special life forms in the universe, they have no way to reproduce or pass down anything."

"Since the dawn of time, some life forms could possible only have two or three members of it's race in the entire universe, even some having but one, completely unique."

"The stronger they are, and the more heavenly the life form is, the lesser the numbers."

"Like the way you acquired the blood river energy, they are blood drops of the Beast god." The majestic being exclaimed. "The Beast god is a completely unique life form, with the laws embedded within its body, having the strength of a universe master! Can you imagine being born as a universe master?"

Luo Feng was stunned.

Special life form?

He had searched thoroughly before and understood quite a bit. There were life forms born in special environments of the universe, which were unable to reproduce or pass down. It was impossible for them to have a race. The golden horned beast, though rare, could still reproduce and pass down their knowledge. Over countless eras of accumulating...it resulted in large amounts of absolute warriors.

However some special life forms like the Beast god, was the only one in the universe, with no way to reproduce, they naturally couldn't form a race.

"Many special life forms in the universe have to grow from being weak and small. The Beast god, with the laws embedded in its body, was naturally strong. But, such a thing is extremely rare." The being looked down at Luo Feng. "These special life forms have genetics that are hundreds of times to thousands of times stronger than humans. This far exceeded the golden horned beast."

Luo Feng nodded.

The golden horned beast was already considered a pinnacle bloodline, and it referred to the many generations of reproduction. Those unique life forms that exceeded the beast were plenty too, only their numbers were pitiful. Like the Beast god and the great being, they were completely unique.

"Using the Nine volume manual is akin to creating a special life form. It's a pity that only one person can use it, and it has to be a flesh and blood life form with the soul from earth to train." The being said.

"I have great expectations for you."

"You have the Nine volume manual and your genetics are hence much more evolved. You will eventually have a very powerful body and soul! As a rare exceptional leader of countless ears, your willpower and consciousness are already very powerful. Consciousness will strengthen your spirit energy, and willpower

will make your consciousness even more powerful! These two tools will make your soul unleash strength tens to hundreds of times what it is naturally capable of."

"Strong body and soul, strong willpower and consciousness too."

"Whether it's the body or the soul, there are many ways to strengthen them. Only willpower and consciousness relies on one's heart, treasures and techniques are useless." The being sighed. "Hence, after suffering from the previous experience, I created the earth race, with the mental states as the core. Even though the body is considered quite normal among humanity, the universe is vast and mysterious, with powerful consciousness and willpower, it's enough to make countless races look up to you."

Luo Feng nodded.

In terms of mental states, the earth humans were indeed worthy of respect from countless races.

"These two treasures now belong to you."

"The force armor, even though your body is strong, when you become a true absolute warrior, it's still be weaker than your soul. Hence, you can use the armor to strengthen it!"

"The star tower strengthens your soul, willpower and consciousness. You naturally should walk the path of the spirit reader controller or illusionist. Your body is strong now, when you reach undying, your soul side will truly shine! This star tower is something that is incredibly suited for you..."

"Your second senior and you have a total of four treasures. Among which, the star tower is the most complex, you will slowly understand it later."

"Let me take you to a place now." The being's voice rumbled as he stood up.

"Teacher, where are we going?" Luo Feng was curious.

"You'll find out soon."

The being took one step and appeared in the center of the shrine. A warped passage appeared in the center, Pu Ti and Luo Feng, followed behind. This pathway extended into a space passage.

...

Within the warped passage.

The great being and the others flew as fast as lightning, quickly reaching a mysterious area.

Hua hua hua...

A colorful space.

With a glance, one could easily see different colored water droplets floating in the vast space. The being brought Luo Feng and Pu Ti into the area.

"This is a space within the star tower." The great being pointed at the colorful water droplets floating around. "Luo Feng, do you know what are these?"

"Hm?"

Luo Feng carefully examined them. With a glance, there were over a million of them, floating in a blur about the space.

"This is the future of your earth race." The being exclaimed.

"The earth race's future?" Luo Feng held his breath, looking at the millions of water droplets.

"Hm."

The being nodded, "I created the Force armor for you, and the Raw soul for your senior. In truth, their strength doesn't reach their optimum level at all. The main thing about these two treasures...is their ability to reproduce. I spent more than half of the materials making sure they were able to produce other such treasures."

"The force armor can produce the soldier, general, king and emperor armor."

"The raw soul can produce the soldier, general, king and emperor soul."

"Of course these are just names, representing the four different categories." The old being smiled. "The armors are able to be used by the Yan Shen race and others specially evolved by me. Of course, since you are trained in the Nine volume manual, you belong to my race of evolution as well. Also, your evolution is even higher than the Yan Shen race. You can use them too."

Luo Feng realized.

It was no wonder that humanity hadn't been able to study the armors. Not even being able to discover the soldier and general fragments. The usage requirements were simply too harsh. When this great being created them back then, they were specially made only for those he had specially evolved.

"The Raw soul is the same."

"When I modified earth into a nurturing basket."

"The raw soul...the soldier, general, king and emperor souls could only be used by earth humans." The old being exclaimed. "Other than you earth humans, only the leader of the Yan Shen race, and your senior can use the soldier and general soul's strength. Of course the Raw soul he has doesn't require all these."

"However..."

"These aspects are very important to your earth race."

"With them, the earth race can create a very terrifying spirit reader army. Whether they are controllers or illusionists, they would all be incredibly powerful. They would be able to reduce the mortality rate of the earth's elites. That way, there would be a higher probability of producing knights!"

"The earth people have a limitless future."

"As they have to be born on earth itself for their soul to be special, and the earth is only so big. Hence, it would limit the number of humans on earth. Bound by this little planet...it's made the earth race as rare as the Yan Shen race. However the percentage of powerful warriors would be very high. With enough time, when you become an absolute warrior in the future, with your protection, guidance and nurture, you will create a powerful race."

"Of course whether you remain within humanity, or make the earth race a separate race itself, it's all your choice."

"However, this would all have to wait till you become a true powerful warrior in the universe before it's possible."

Chapter 885: Touring the Tower

Luo Feng looked at the vast space of water droplets.He was almost able to see the future of the earth warriors in his eyes. With his guidance, the name of the earth would spread far and wide, becoming an incredible power of the trillions of races in the universe.

"Even though a skyscraper always starts from the first level, the foundation of the building will determine how high it can go."

"My foundation is set!"

"It's time to build!"

"It'll all depend on my hard work." Luo Feng thought. There were extremely few in the universe that had as many resources as him. Humanity had countless races under it with quite a few universe masters. It was definitely unwise to leave this star tower and Force armor to a sector lord immediately.

No matter how much of a genius he was, it was impossible!

The great being however was a lone wolf. He didn't need to think about the race, and it was obvious that his accumulated wealth and strength wasn't too far off from humanity as a whole. To be on good terms with such a being...even the universe masters would be incredibly happy.

"My disciple." The majestic being pointed to the floating water droplets around. "There are a total of a million soldier souls, 100,000 general, 10,000 king and 1,000 emperor souls. They are similar to the Yan Shen armors, they have a huge requirement on the bodies. The Raw souls have a huge requirement on their souls.

"The soldier soul, only a normal human sector lord pinnacle can fully accept the fusion.

"The general requires 100 times that of a sector lord pinnacle."

"The king soul requires 10,000 times."

"The emperor soul requires 1 million."

The being looked at Luo Feng. "Disciple, even though you are only sector lord, you have soul amplification techniques. In terms of willpower and consciousness, you've passed the life or death inheritance. The consciousness is part of the soul, while yours may be slightly weaker, its akin to an undying. However in terms of willpower...many knights don't even compare to you."

The star tower inheritance is very special, the stronger the soul, the more painful the fusion.

Hence back when the being got a big group of warriors to experiment on, he had got a few knights to give it a shot. Anyone able to become a knight was incredibly powerful and would have been an absolute genius. However the pain was unbearable, without any struggle, they all fell! Very simple.

The sector lords and undyings had weaker souls, the pain from the inheritance was naturally lesser. But, even they all fell too. All they did was that they managed to struggle a little.

Hence he set for the candidates to be either sector lord or undying.

But for Luo Feng to succeed...his willpower had to be heavenly first, honing it over the past 6,000 years, especially with that evolution at the 3,200 year mark. A knight's willpower couldn't even compare to his.

"The soul acts as the soldier, the consciousness is the general, and the willpower commands them all. The stronger the consciousness and willpower, the higher the amount of strength you are able to unleash. Even though you are a sector lord, you have over 32 times soul amplification. However, using your willpower...even after using the General soul, you'd still have plenty to spare." The being said. "Take these two general souls. One is for your earth body, and

another for the golden horned beast. Once I have arranged everything, you can use it then."

"Yes." Luo Feng said respectfully.

With a flip of his hand, he kept two general souls into his world ring.

"Teacher, these soldier and general souls..." Luo Feng was hesitant. Beside him, the universe master Pu Ti laughed, "Third junior, they are all special items, and their level of power is not lower than many true treasures. Unless you truly want to begin nurturing the earth race warriors, otherwise, it's better to leave them here. They are safest here."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded, looking at the countless water droplets, these were the future of the earth warriors.

"Follow me, let me take you on a tour of the star tower!" The being pointed ahead and countless water droplets in the space began to form a boat. First it formed the head and later on the rest of it the power gathering of energy formed an exquisite over 10km long boat. Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

"Get on." The being jumped in and sat crossed legged.

Since he was over 900m tall, when he sat in this over 10km long boat, it was almost like a normal person sitting in a 30m long boat, it was normal enough. However, Luo Feng and Pu Ti were much smaller.

"Creation?" Luo Feng's eyes were filled with shock. This was a boat that was even stronger than the one Nine blade had sat in, yet he constructed it so easily.

"Are you shocked? Third junior, teacher is one of the greatest beings of the universe. The laws make way for him, they are useless in the area around him. You should feel it too, you cant even feel the laws around him." Pu Ti smiled at Luo Feng. "And he's able to fully control whatever happens in the area around him.

It's not like the laws obeying him, rather, he's the master!"

"Within a certain area, even the laws have to obey whatever he says!"

"If he said that fire can freeze a person to death, that would happen."

"If he said that countless lives have reached the end of their life spans and should die, then they would all die."

"If he said that a star should vanish, giving off endless light, that would happen."

"If he said that the speed limit isn't light speed, but 10 times that, then this area would allow ten times light speed."

"The laws obey him!"

"Within his area, the laws are useless and he controls everything." Pu Ti laughed as he looked at Luo Feng's shocked expression.

Luo Feng was completely stunned.

The laws obey him?

This was the great being?

Anything he said goes?

The laws were useless?

"Of course it's not as invincible as you think. In this vast universe...everything flows according to the origin laws, it gives the strongest beings respect. Hence they have certain privileges, this ability is only applicable to a fixed area around him. If one is truly going against the laws of the universe, that would be suicide."

"In theory, being able to do this would mean he can easily kill countless warriors?"

"However, when it came to the universe masters who are able to control time and space...even the great being would find it hard to

kill them." Pu Ti explained.

...

Luo Feng felt shocked as he listened to the explanation. The perspectives were completely different. In the past, he was fixated on becoming an emperor or knight, looking high up at the universe masters, having some hope of someday becoming one. Which genius didn't have that dream?

A soldier that didn't want to be general wasn't a good soldier, but just how many could make it that far?

The geniuses all had ambitions and dreams, but many end up simply just that.

Luo Feng looked up to the universe masters. However, now with both his seniors as universe masters, and his teacher being the great being, listening to them speak was like hearing the highest level of secrets about the universe.

"Star tower, nine light years tall."

"If you slowly go about it, who knows when you'll finish." The majestic being sat crossed legged like a huge mountain. He pointed about, "Let me guide you and you'll finish it in half a day. Pay close attention."

Luo Feng sat in the boat.

The boat's speed far exceeded light speed. In theory, the moment that happened, they would enter the dark universe, but that didn't happen. The great being had already fixed the speed limit around the boat, going against the laws of the universe. This was something only the great being could do.

The most peculiar thing was, Luo Feng could still see everything clearly.

"Able to see everything past light speed?" Luo Feng couldn't understand it at all. Everything went against what he was used to,

but he carried on.

The vast star tower.

There was endless space within. The many forbidden paces only took up less than 1% of the area. As for the larger areas, there were the many heavenly pillars...endless pillars, The short ones were a few light seconds long, while the long ones were over one light year!

The pillars had endless engravings and were incredible complex. They glowed with gold light. They leaned and supported the tower, and around them were other strange shaped treasures, all with enormous amounts of energies. Other than those, there were the many sealed stars. They were like automatic cars that revolved on their own all about, ever the ones with markings on them.

The pillars were the framework of the entire tower!

The other treasures were the tiles and bricks!

And countless sealed stars revolved about!

The huge law engravings covered the heavenly pillars, piercing through countless treasures and sealed stars. It almost looked like an incredibly terrifying machine...forming one complete body. This was the true treasure, star tower. While Luo Feng could visibly see the complex engravings...it exceeded even that of the Beast god statue.

This tour...took an entire day.

Luo Feng was completely stunned.

"These law engravings..." Luo Feng held his breath.

"Even though I spent countless years and effort on them." The great being's voice boomed. "But during the process, a special change occurred that was out of my control. Even I couldn't understand it, this was the wonder of the universe. My disciple, you can feel and sense the entire tower."

"Yes I can."

Luo Feng nodded, "After the process was over, I could feel it. The sealed stars, I feel as though they are easy enough for me to just grab, easy for me to enter the many forbidden spaces. As for triggering the entire tower...I still feel like I'm facing an immovable mountain."

"The star tower has limitless power." The being smiled. "You are still so weak, how can you trigger it?"

"Just triggering that force armor alone requires a body strength of one hundred million times sector lord! Normally, only knights can reach that limit. When you break through to undying, you will definitely become emperor invincible level, and will be even stronger than many invincible emperors out there. When you train in the Nine volume manual later on, you will become akin to a special life form, you'd be able to use the force armor then."

"However, the star tower is stronger than the armor by hundreds of times."

"Triggering it is incredibly hard."

"For you to use it perfectly..."

"It will be very difficult!"

"The moment you can do it, even if you use the smallest amount of strength, it would be extremely easy for you to squash the knights." The being said. "But, right now, you are still weak."

Chapter 886: Star Map

"I understand." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"The star tower and Force armor are both items you cannot fully utilize yet. The Force armor is a complete armor that cannot be separated. However, there are countless treasures within star tower...you can take some of them. I've made some special treasures according to what star tower produces." The being flipped his hand.

Hua..

A huge map floated in the air above the boat, engulfing the entire boat. The over 10km long boat became but a tiny dot against this map.

A terrifying energy emanated from it.

This map's energy was incredibly powerful, far exceeding the sealed stars.

"This map is a true treasure, which is able to meld the many sealed stars within. With the two combined, it becomes a very special treasure...Star map. Although, it barely reaches the level of true treasure." The being looked at Luo Feng. "Once you become its master, you will know of its wonders."

The map shrank swiftly and landed before Luo Feng.

Luo Feng received it, sending a thread of world energy inside. With his spirit imprint within, he formed a soul connection with it and information about the star map poured into his mind.

"So it's like that, what a terrifying star map." Luo Feng was shocked.

The map itself was a treasure.

The sealed stars were treasures too.

The map was able to absorb the sealed stars, and according to the

information he gathered, it could at most hold 100,000 sealed stars! Every sealed star was a treasure. Once 100,000 sealed stars were absorbed by the map, it would make the star map become a true treasure.

The star map could be used to imprint Luo Feng's attack techniques and law engravings.

The moment it attacks, the stars within would connect with the laws, its power was limitless.

"I was lazy." The being laughed, his voice resounding throughout the space. "Thus I made this map, the sealed stars however are from star tower."

"Thank you teacher."

Luo Feng was truly grateful.

"This star map can hold up to 100,000 sealed stars. Even though there are many sealed stars within star tower, they are all important pieces of star tower itself, and none can be spared. Only very few, about 10,000 of them are useless. Those you can take." The being said.

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded. After becoming the master of star tower, he came to know of many things.

"Actually..."

The majestic being exclaimed, his voice echoing throughout, "The sealed stars, when I first made them, it didn't have the ability to seal. It was mostly for attacking...whether its controlling countless stars to attack or trap an enemy. However when the change happened, the many stars acquired the ability to seal, that exceeded my expectations."

"Controlling the stars with the law engravings on them, they can easily be sent to seal others."

"Before you can control the entire tower, controlling the stars to

attack would be a big advantage for you." The being exclaimed. "If you can completely control the star tower...with just one attack, you can make the tower like a dagger and pierce forward. This attack! Would be its strongest attack. Even with its weakest strength, it would still easily kill a knight. If you can unleash more of its strength, everyone in the universe would fear it."

Luo Feng couldn't help but ask, "Teacher, may I ask when I'll actually be able to trigger the entire tower?"

"Haha..."

"Can you see the energy whirlpools?" The being asked.

"Yes, the nine whirlpools are incredibly powerful, even knights would die if they fell in." Luo Feng said.

"The nine whirlpools are there for the tower to regenerate its energy, absorbing energy from the universe itself." The being said. "The tower is nine light years tall, and it holds immense power. Even the absolute warriors of the universe have no way to power it. To hold such strength, the amount of energy it uses is terrifying too."

"It's constantly swallowing energy, hence it's able to easily destroy a knight. If you shrink its size, when will you be able to supply that much energy?" The being asked.

Luo Feng was stunned.

That would take a huge amount of energy, the whirlpools alone could destroy knights.

"Relax, that's at its optimum form, you only need to unleash the minimum strength and the energy required would be much lesser." The being said. "Even so, it far exceeds the requirements for the force armor! As for the star tower, I have one request for you."

"Please say it." Luo Feng replied.

"Before you can fully trigger it, let it stay here." The being

emphasized.

"Leave it here?" Luo Feng instantly understood.

"The star tower has long drawn the attention of the absolute warriors of the universe, even beings that can match my strength have longed for it. This is afterall one of the strongest weapons in the universe. It's been noticed here in the outer region wars for a long time, the moment it vanishes, it would create a huge commotion."

"All you soldiers of the outer region wars in star tower, the soldiers of the four camps, the hundreds of thousands of emperors including you, no one will get away!" The being said.

Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

Hundreds of thousands of emperors, no one could escape.

Right.

For such a treasure, it would attract the most terrifying of beings. With their power, who could escape? Even the universe masters of the universe, they wouldn't let Luo Feng and the others get away. With Luo Feng's status...getting the Sha Wu wings which had little help to the universe masters was still ok.

But for the star tower, even the strongest of warriors would go crazy for it, it definitely wasn't something he could possess now.

The Huge Axe founder, the Primal chaos city leader...

They all constantly thought for humanity.

Yet they too would take this away from Luo Feng, and give it to some strong universe master to use. It was even possible for the Huge Axe founder to use it for himself.

"Unless you have the strength to match up to them, without it, don't come and move it." The being emphasized. "If you can truly trigger it, you'd almost have strength that could match up to them. Plus, with humanity behind you, by then you'd be one of

humanity's upper echelons, and no one would dare take your treasure. Naturally you'd have the right to own the star tower."

Luo Feng nodded.

This was a double edged sword.

"You have three treasures now." The being said. " When I first saw you, your energy was completely camouflaged, like a normal undying. Anything able to do that is a true treasure, this must be something your teacher the Primal chaos city leader gave you. For him to give it to you means it has little use for universe masters, but it's still enough for knights to envy. This is your first treasure"

Luo Feng blinked his eyes.

This was extremely accurate.

"The second one is the Tower pearl. This is the pearl that fused with your soul. This pearl...is the control center for the forbidden spaces within the tower, and sealing is the most important ability of the tower. The attacking and piercing are subsidiary. While the defensive abilities are secondary too, sealing an absolute warrior... is its main ability."

"The pearl itself is considered a treasure too."

"Fusing the pearl with your soul, you should know how to use it to protect your soul."

Luo Feng nodded. During the process of fusing the pearl, it was incredibly painful. However, after its completion, he could feel that it was extraordinary.

"The third is the star map. Fusing it with the sealed stars will grow its power. It's already considered a low level true treasure. Your strength currently is unable to use too many sealed stars. Even with the general soul, I estimate you'll probably only be able to use about 10 stars, and that's already not bad."

"Three treasures."

"All the universe has yet to see these treasures." The being said. "Since its so, nobody can recognize it. As long as you don't use their power to their limits, no one would be able to guess your treasures."

Luo Feng nodded.

Sha Wu wings were yet to be discovered.

As for the Star map, he would go fuse it with the sealed stars later, it was a completely new treasure.

Tower pearl on the other hand was the core of the star tower. No one had ever successfully fused with it before, hence no one knew about it.

These three treasures all belonged to the realm of true treasures, at the level where the universe masters wouldn't bother too much, but sufficient for knights to go crazy for.

"Don't get cocky. These three low treasures are not even a fraction of the star tower or the force armor." The being said.

"I will work hard to be able to use the force armor and star tower as soon as possible."Luo Feng said.

"Hm." The being nodded.

...

Luo Feng and Pu Ti sat on the boat and listened to their teacher, beginning their way back to the shrine.

The speed on the way back was very fast, they reached back in an instant.

"Teacher, I've only acquired two fragments of the Nine volume manual. May I know where the rest are?" Luo Feng couldn't help but ask.

"The Nine volume manual can make your genes evolve to the level of a special life form in the universe." He looked down at Luo Feng, "And if your genetics are too absurd, it would attract the

attention of countless warriors. The stronger you get, only then would you be worthy of getting special treasures."

"The heavenly crystal fragments of the manual, there are a total of five pieces."

"You've already gotten two pieces. As for the other three, they are placed in dangerous regions in the universe. At sector lord level, you can go get another piece, at undying, you can go get the other. After becoming a knight...you can go get the last piece." The being looked at Luo Feng. "The areas get more and more dangerous."

"When you become a knight and get the last piece, completing the set...I think you'll be very close to triggering the entire star tower."

"The coordinates for these three metal boards have some simple descriptions about the dangers."

The being pointed at Luo Feng, and a beam of light flew at him straight into his mind.The information poured in and Luo Feng instantly understood.

"Disciple, don't die at these places." The being said.

"Yes."

Luo Feng was very clear.

"Now that the job is done, I've prepared sufficiently for you. With three treasures...everything will depend on yourself. I will not help you at all in the future." The being said. "I await the day...you'll be able to trigger the entire star tower."

After he said that, the space shook.

The being had vanished.

...

Leaving behind Luo Feng and Pu Ti in the shrine.

"Senior, I'm ashamed to say I still don't know what teacher's

name was." Luo Feng said, he didn't dare ask before.

"Haha..."

Pu Ti sat crossed legged and laughed, "No one knows his true name, but because he often sits on a mountain peak and is seen as such throughout the vast universe. The absolute warriors of the vast universe gave him a title, Mountain Sitting Guest."

"Your second senior's name is Cao Ben qi, he's known in the universe as Emperor Yan."

"The great being Mountain sitting guest and the leader of the Yan Shen Race Emperor Yan?" Luo Feng remembered them.

"The earth race has a leader now and the job is done. I'm much more relaxed now. Third junior...I'll take my leave." Pu Ti smiled and the space shook as he vanished.

Within the shrine.

Luo Feng stood alone, smiling, "My teacher is one of the strongest in the universe, Mountain sitting guest. But, he sure is lax about his disciples. From now till the time I trigger the star tower, he didn't even care at all."

Chapter 887: Luo Feng's Teleportation

Luo Feng walked within the shrine, as he reached the edge, a pathway appeared.

Standing before it, the endless sealed stars floated outside.

"Stars come." Luo Feng smiled.

Immediately, the tower began to revolve within. From the endless years of consuming energy, part of the energy began to rush over from within the tower, quickly gathering before Luo Feng. Over 10,000 sealed stars revolved. All of them didn't seem to have the gold glow of origin laws.

"The other sealed stars cannot be taken. Hence, these 16,235 stars are currently useless." Luo Feng nodded.

He triggered the stars via the star tower, they began to fly over to him and recognize him as their master one by one.

"Teacher had said that I'd at most be able to trigger ten of them at the same time. Then I'll first take a hundred and when I need more, I'll come back again." Luo Feng stood in space. In front of him, there were a hundred sealed stars that looked like glass pearls were revolving.

With a flip of his hand, star map appeared.

The hundred pearls all landed within the map. Immediately star marks began to appear throughout the map as they began to form a special connection.

The star map was born.

"Sky tearing claw." With a thought, he looked down at the star map and a complex law engraving appeared on it. It was the complete law engraving of his sky tearing claw. Six out of the hundred stars glowed with gold.

"Looks like sky tearing claw can at most trigger 6 stars." Luo Feng

nodded.

The use of the star map was as such, by controlling a large amount of sealed stars, one can imprint techniques within them. One could also easily wipe it clean and place a different technique if and when needed. The level of the techniques would determine how many stars were needed.

"Rise!"

Luo Feng roared.

Six pearls rose gradually out of the star map. They were completely black in color and glowed with laws. After changing from within the star map, it was impossible to tell that these six little stars...were the powerful sealed stars from before.

"Go!"

Luo Feng gazed into the space ahead.

Hua!

The six black stars immediately rushed forward, connecting with the universe laws. Countless gold threads interweaved, and in almost an instant, they formed a claw. Just for the limb and claw portion...it brought with it terrifying force as it slashed through the space ahead.

Luo Feng was full of joy as he looked on, after which the six stars returned back into the star map.

"Haha, this star map is definitely a spirit reader's treasure." He was incredibly excited. The weapons a spirit reader requires were normally powerful techniques that were placed within incredibly expensive materials. Therefore, during battle, they could rely on triggering the law engravings, saving a large amount of effort to unleash maximum strength.

The Nan Shen Armament had the nine techniques imprinted within before combining the knife blades within. Hence, using the

weapon to unleash the power of the techniques.

The star map was different.

It could switch the techniques within at any given time. With the sealed stars as its foundation, no matter how powerful the techniques were...even a universe master, would probably just have to use a little more sealed stars to place his techniques within.

"And these are sealed stars!"

"Every one of them is a true treasure, which is extremely powerful. Even if I don't use any powerful techniques, just the sealed stars alone attacking would be incredibly powerful. Even the stars, white dwarf star etc, they would be instantly smashed. This was afterall a treasure even knights sought." Luo Feng smiled.

Unlike the Sha Wu wings, as it was too powerful, he was unable to unleash enough of its strength yet.

The star map, though powerful by itself, the sealed stars within... were true treasures too. The moment Luo Feng uses the General soul, he would be able to trigger extremely powerful techniques.

"Star map...this star map will be able to take any technique I come up with."

"It will accommodate my path!"

"From today on, this star map...will be called the Star diagram." Luo Feng really like this star map. Hence, he could take liberty to completely name it what he wanted.

"Absorbing the General soul."

Luo Feng flipped his hand and a drop of water floated and flew towards his forehead, gently fusing as it touched. As it connected with his main core, it was like water gushing into a dry river, swiftly being absorbed. The absorbed general soul was like an infant growing into a giant, giving endless strength.

"So powerful."

"With my current willpower and consciousness, I can completely trigger it. The soldier soul...has 1,000 times the sector lord's soul strength, while the general soul has 10,000 times." He exclaimed. "Teacher created the Force armor and Raw soul. Even though they both targeted different aspects, the requirements and strengths are pretty similar, as one is for the body, while the other is for the soul."

Luo Feng's current spirit energy was incredibly powerful, having 10,000 times sector lord spirit energy with the General soul. This was akin to a low emperor, and with his control of his willpower and consciousness...he could unleash strength akin to a pinnacle emperor.

"Weng."

A blur tower silhouette began to engulf the little Beast god formed from his main core. This silhouette...was formed from the tower pearl, it slowly got absorbed and vanished.

"My soul's foundation is set, and with my willpower, the power will be limitless. Just in terms of defense, with the help of tower pearl...who can deal with me?" Luo Feng was incredibly confident.

...

He spread his silver wings within the shrine.

With the Sha Wu wings on his back and the tower pearl within, also with the General armor and general soul...he even had the star map for offense! He was intrepid, as this was enough to make emperor limits despair. Against such a terrifying being, who would dare offend him?

In terms of foundation, it was deep. He had many treasures, even Seven blade or Life fall emperor would all stare in shock. Only thing was their strength was very strong, combined with their treasures, they could still give Luo feng a tough fight.

"6,000 years of life or death inheritance."

"Over 5,000 years of studying the beast god path, assisting my space laws." He exclaimed, when he was at the 1,000 plus mark, he had already reached the 19th level of the beast god path, with 5,000 years now, he had already reached the 20th level, his improvement speed was incredibly fast.

Passing the heavenly bridge's 20th level!

Terrifying, of course the main thing was that he had the beast god statue to forcefully copy and imitate, plus his willpower and consciousness kept getting stronger, allowing him to reach higher levels quickly.

Just his beast god presence improvement alone was swift.

However, his Nan Shen 7 forms and space laws were slower.

He had just finished the 2nd form of the Nan Shen 7 forms, its power was only akin to the heavenly bridge's 18th level.

With regards to the space laws, he had completely comprehended the 6th picture, akin to the 18th level too.

It was obvious in terms of law comprehension, the beast god presence was much harder to make progress in...however as it was much more powerful, it gave him terrifying strength.

"And I got an extra surprise."

"I only completed the 6th picture of the space laws, and the 7th picture is the most important, yet I know nothing about it. The Mosha body however...using the life crystal and its special connection with the universe, is now able to use teleportation."

"Teleportation."

"I'm now able to do it myself." He was incredibly happy, "Even though I have Heavy arrow as a slave, during critical times of battle, the enemy will naturally deal with us separately, Heavy arrow will be unable to always stay by my side."

"If I need to flee, being able to teleport myself is the fastest."

He had already imagined it, if his earth body was fighting, he could let the mosha body become a piece of metal and appear within his muscles.

Shua!

The mosha body could use teleportation and he could flee. The mosha body and the earth body both shared the same main core, for the mosha body to appear from within his internal world...this was something no one could stop. Unlike the world ring which required world energy to guide.

Appearing from within the internal world only required a thought.

...

6,000 years, his improvement was indeed a jump.

His beast god presence had reached the 20th level, Nan Shen 7 forms, the 2nd level, his mosha body could teleport, his willpower was now at least thousands of times stronger than before...and his teacher had left him 2 treasures that would make countless knights go crazy for, altogether, he had 3 treasures now, along with his special General Soul and armor...

Everything was within his grasp.

"Many methods within my grasp, even against 7 blade or Life fall or Da Long, I need not fear." He was incredibly confident, getting the inheritance from the sitting mountain guest being, he learnt that there were quite a few such powerful beings in the universe.

Such warriors that didn't need to think about races or others, their inheritance could truly make the 6 pinnacle races go green with envy.

The primal chaos city leader had long thought...if he couldn't get them in, it was better to let someone of his race get their inheritance, that would be extremely beneficial to the race.

"Everything is settled."

"Time to visit my family." Luo Feng's gaze before was piercing and strong, the moment he thought of his family, they softened.

During the life or death inheritance, he persevered all because he wanted to see his family again...

The only thing was after he awoke, he needed to speak to the great being, against him, he didn't dare send a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe to see his family. That was incredibly disrespectful! That was his first meeting, he didn't want to offend his teacher.

If he was a teacher and he went to see his disciple for the 1st time, should his disciple be distracted and have part of his consciousness in the virtual universe, he would definitely not be happy.

Hence he had to bear with it...

Waiting until his teacher left before swiftly settling the star map, absorbing the General soul, once everything was done...it was time to see his family.

Chapter 888: Luo Feng's Return

Virtual universe, within Luo Feng's villa in the primal region.

"Hm?" Luo Feng just connected and realized he had a bunch of mail.

"So much."

He was stunned, gently tapping in mid air as the pages appeared and he read through.

"Primal chaos city leader teacher had tried to contact him twice, True Yan nine times, Bolan once, Rong Jun twice, Gao Sheng once..."

"Luo Ping eighteen times, Luo Hai twenty one times, Luo Hua three times, Dad three times, Mom eighty three times As for Xu Xin, she had contacted him 38,192 times!"

A blur of messages, it completely stunned Luo Feng.

Other than his teachers, friends and family, there were other friends from the Hong alliance. Some had invited Blade River emperor to explore regions with them, some wanting to sell some items to him, some asking for help...

...

The Primal chaos city leader's mail was very simply, "Come see me as soon as possible!"

True yan's mail said, "If you survive, there's no rush. Deal with your family first then come see me."

...

Bolan and his other good friends before had just become sector lords not long ago.

As for his friend Gao Sheng who he met on Horned star dragon long time ago, he mailed him to tell him he had broken off from his

family and had been exploring the universe for many years, finally striking it big. The mail was filled with glee, also awaiting Luo Feng's reply. However this mail was sent over 2,000 years ago... and Luo Feng hadn't replied to any of his mails.

...

As for his family, they were all filled with worry.

"Xu Xin." He looked at the blur of mails from her, shocked, these were all sent when he began his six thousandth year of life or death inheritance. There was almost one every day, sometimes two. Within a couple of hundred of years, there were over 30,000 mails from her.

He swiftly scanned through them.

"Feng, the family's concealment plan is almost complete. I'm much more relaxed now and just awaiting your return. The Luo family will get even stronger now"

"Feng, I'm currently in North Birch star field. There is a beautiful planet, the scenery is really nice, only a little cold..."

"Feng, I encountered some trouble today, I didn't expect that after trusting her for so long, she'd dare go against me like that. I guess you never know what's going on in someone's heart. Seems right, I haven't seen that underling in a few hundred years..."

...

The many mails were just like a diary, recording her life, joy, troubles and so on, over the hundreds of years.

The words were filled with worries, the pain that came from deep within, even when she spoke of happy things, it made Luo Feng feel that there was still worry behind.

"Trouble."

"The mails of back then sure were filled with trouble." Luo Feng felt the bitterness within.

Back then when he accepted the life or death inheritance, when he detected danger, only then did he leave behind the mail for his family, set to be sent during the 6,000 years. When he finally succeeded, he didn't expect...that the inheritance would have lasted over 6,000 years, it was absurd.

"They must be extremely worried from that mail." Luo Feng was able to guess their reaction.

"The Primal chaos city leader and True Yan, I'll visit them later." He thought. "They wouldn't care if I wait awhile."

"I'll visit my family first."

Sou!

He immediately entered Black Dragon Mountain island's Nine star bay.

******

Nine star bay, other than the three core residences which belonged to Luo Feng, Thunder god and Hong, every other living space was from the Luo family, and the renovation styles of the other buildings were all uniform.

Luo Feng's ancient villa hadn't changed over the past 10,000 years.

As It had a special meaning and position, normal family members couldn't even enter it. The grass before the villa currently had Luo Ping sitting in a stone chair, and the table had bottles of wine, with tens of them already empty. He was sipping and drinking, non stop, his forehead filled with worry.

"Hm?" Luo Feng instantly appeared before the villa, his expression changed at the scene.

"Luo Ping, what's the matter?"

He had never seen his big son use wine to forget his troubles. Of the two kids, Luo Ping was the calm one and he managed a lot of

the family affairs. He was already considered one of the family leaders.

"I said, everyone get out, leave us now!" Luo Feng detected some people behind him and immediately roared as he waved his hand.

"Luo Ping."

A voice resounded.

The voice was calm, almost like the vast ocean, even so, it was filled with vast energies. A strong warrior speaking to a weaker person gave a different feeling. Luo Feng's powerful willpower and consciousness naturally affected others about.

Luo Ping was completely stunned as he turned gradually.

Behind him...

The silhouette that stood there was a very normal human body, even slightly shorter than himself. However, this silhouette was the pillar of the entire Luo family! The pillar of the entire earth!

"Dad!" Luo Ping stared wide eyed, dropping the wine bottles as they fell on the grass and rolled, wine leaking out.

"Dad, dad." He rushed over excitedly, hugging Luo Feng.

"Haha..." Luo Feng laughed. "What's the matter, why have you resorted to drinking."

"The stress is too much." He got up and wiped his tears. He felt the endless worries within instantly vanish. He had yet to undergo such stress before, however when Luo Feng returned, everything disappeared with the wind, they were no longer worries.

"Where's your mother?" He asked, "Bring me to her."

"She's currently negotiating with the Gold Mist universe country's Luo Si family." Luo Ping said.

"Negotiating?" Luo Feng frowned.

"Hm." Luo Ping said helplessly, "Dad, since you sent that mail to

the family, we were all afraid."

"I didn't say I had died, only I was in some trouble." Luo Feng couldn't help but reply.

"We know you were alive. Seeing Di fan and the others alive naturally meant that you were alive. However, your mail said that you were in danger and that we may not be able to see you for a short period of time at best and longer period of time at worst. Short period could potentially mean 10,000 years, and long period could potentially mean millions of years. In all, the family began to get worried, and only grandpa and grandma, along with uncle, mum and little brother knew about it. For the family...we began to swiftly reorganize the management. Enforcing stricter management, cutting down on bad members that brought us enemies."

Luo Feng's family had been around for over 10,000 years. Hence the number of family members were shocking.

Many normal disciples and members, without any privileges, lived like normal people. Afterall with their current numbers... even over 10,000 life planets weren't enough for them to live on. It was obvious how fast humans reproduced! Actually several super families in the universe, had enough people to take up an entire galaxy, or even hundreds of them, this was very normal.

"Our Luo Family grew too fast. When you were here to control it, it was still ok."

"But because..."

"Hence, we controlled the rules and began to leave many back doors for the family. The business had grown huge and long left the Ganwu universe country. We didn't expect that a few decades ago, the Gold Mist universe country's Luo Si family, because of some elite disciple's problem that grew bigger and bigger, refused to make way! That family...is a super family in the Gold Mist universe country, and their family leader is Jian Ta emperor. I also

heard that his teacher is a knight!"

"After the matter got worst, I heard that he sent a mail to you to settle it personally."

"However your virtual universe has been shut for so long."

"Mum even said that there's been rumors around Yu Xiang mountain that you've fallen." Luo Ping said. "The underlings in your villa haven't seen you in over 6,000 years. To a sector lord that barely lived past 10,000 years, vanishing for 6,000 years at a go was unbelievable."

Luo Feng nodded.

Indeed...there were rumors that he had fallen.

"That Jian Ta emperor may have noticed this and hence never stopped his family. Maybe he wanted to make use of the opportunity to force our family to submit to him, seeing if you'll show yourself." Luo Ping said

"Hmph."

Luo Feng nodded coldly, "Whether I'm alive or dead, just this news alone is priceless. Especially the other races in the universe... they'd want to find out the truth about the matter. That Jian Ta emperor is only a disciple of a knight, yet he dares go so far. Let's go, bring me to your mum."

...

Nine star bay, Luo family headquarters.

Xu Xin personally brought the team of envoys from the Luo family.

"Mrs Luo, our Luo Si family respects lord Luo Feng greatly. Hence we've been bearing all this while, however this doesn't mean that we can be easily bullied. This is our final line...as long as you can compensate us this much, everything will be settled." The negotiator from the Luo Si family was a gold armored giant with

an elephant nose.

Xu Xin sat there.

Could she agree? Being bullied to that extent. If she bowed down, the rumors would get even crazier, and the other families would gradually all begin to suspect if Luo Feng had truly fallen. Once that begun, it would be even more troublesome.

"Mrs Luo, the negotiations have already gone on for seven days, and today is the last day. If there is no resolution, our Luo Si family will have to..."

Pa!

The doors swung open violently, everyone within was shocked. This was an important negotiation, who would dare barge in like that?

A silver armored silhouette walked straight in.

The formless pressure...just the pressure from his consciousness spread throughout...

Immediately made everyone in the Luo Si family go pale.

"Luo Si family? Jian Ta emperor?"

"Tell him!" The silver armored youth looked coldly at the leader of the family. "Anyone who dares bully my family, his guts must be huge. I really wonder...who gives him such guts. Has he been bribed by the other races? Tell him, without a proper answer, I don't mind...in killing him and wiping out the entire Luo Si family!"

Everyone in the hall was shocked.

"The head of our Luo Si family..." The giant with the elephant nose was stuttering and about to speak.

"A low emperor. Hmph." Luo Feng snorted coldly. "Remember, I want a proper answer. If it's not good enough, you know what will happen."

The Luo Si family side were all shocked into silence.

"Get out." Luo Feng ordered.

They all bowed respectfully, leaving the room haggardly before vanishing. They didn't dare vanish before Luo Feng, their pride had all been completely smashed.

...

Within the hall.

Everyone in the Luo Family had looks of glee, Xu Xin stood there, her body shaking excitedly as she looked at him.

"It's been hard on you." Luo Feng turned to his wife and gently held her hand.

The others all left obediently.

Only Luo Feng and her were left.

"You are back, that's good." She looked at him, tears welling up.

"Everything is good. I promise you that no one will bully our family, no one." Luo Feng gently rubbed her face. Recalling the over 30,000 mails, he felt sorry within, he...owed too much to her.

"As long as you come back, that's enough." She said softly, "Give me a hug."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

They hugged for awhile as she lay in his chest. Although there was silence, she was feeling his warmth, his heartbeat, and his energy.

After awhile...

Chapter 889: Primal Chaos City Leader's Questions

Even though they didn't even say a word, hugging his wife in his arms, he could feel her warmth, their souls connected and they could feel each other's thoughts.

Luo Feng could feel the way she missed and loved him.

Xu Xin could feel his guilt and pain.

Gradually, the two of them enjoyed the silence between them and each other's warmth.

After awhile.

"Feng, don't make us worry, understand?" She looked up at him, saying softly, "I know you are exploring the universe, and a lot of things are out of your control. The path of a warrior is extremely dangerous, but...try your best not to enter dangerous regions."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded, gently stroking her hair. "What do you think of Jian Ta emperor of the Luo Si family?"

"Luo Si family?" Xu Xin frowned. "After the matter got blown up, the Luo Si family was initially courteous to us. I heard that when he couldn't contact you, that was when they began to lose that courtesy and even tried to step above us."

"Since you became the disciple of the Primal chaos city leader, our family's strength flourished. We began to do business with almost everybody, it was good enough that we didn't bully anyone. Who would dare bully us?" She said.

Luo Feng nodded.

Doing business with the disciple of the city leader, all the undying families, official and emperors, many of them would be willing to lower their head rather than offend the Luo Family! This was simply the way of life, like how Luo Feng treated the city

leader with utmost respect.

Back when he was weak and small, the first time he met Yan Zhu emperor, he felt weak and small against him.

The theory was the same.

At different levels of strength and position, the power one had was different.

"Even though Yu Xiang mountain has been filled with rumors of your death, Jian Ta emperor has been wondering if you really fell. When he couldn't contact you, his demeanor changed. But this doesn't justify him trying to bully our family." Xu Xin said, "Which family would dare do that? Even the royal family of the Gan wu universe country would treat us as equals."

"Your way of thinking makes sense." Luo Feng nodded.

Jian Ta had secretly allowed his family to do so. Even though it was cautious enough, from the negotiations it was clear they wanted to step over the Luo family. This was a slap in the face. As long as Luo Feng hadn't fallen, he needed to show himself!

"He's forcing me to show myself."

"It may very likely be so, to see if I'm still alive." Luo Feng said.

"Feng, your current position is different, there are many warriors from other races watching and waiting to kill you. This whole incident feels like there are some other races involved. You have to be careful." She said.

"Without enough benefits, who'd dare do such a thing?" Luo Feng nodded. "Relax, within human territory, they aren't worth worrying about."

"Hm." Xu Xin nodded, even though she was worried within.

"The Primal chaos city leader is looking for me, I rushed home as soon as I could. But, I have to go see him now. I'll be back later." He smiled. "Prepare for a reunion dinner later."

"Hm." She nodded happily.

...

Within the highest peaks of thunder island, a palace was engulfed in primal chaos energy, the city leader lived within.

Shua.

Luo Feng appeared at the entrance, stepping in and walking along the deep pathways, where he couldn't even visible see the ends of the hallways. After awhile, he stopped.

"Teacher." He said respectfully.

A gold robed silhouette walked out from the energies. That powerful energy made him hold his breath, however his perspectives were higher now. Having seen the sitting mountain guest, he could feel that this teacher of his was stronger than Pu Ti, but obviously weaker than the great being.

"You've returned." The city leader's gaze was vast like space. He smiled, "It's good you are back alive. Looks like you've suffered quite a bit over the past 6,000 years."

"I did go through quite a bit." Luo Feng answered, remembering the days of the life or death inheritance, sighing within.

"Hm?"

The city leader's eyes gleamed, carefully observing him. This made Luo Feng stunned, what was he looking for? This was the virtual universe, the bodies were all simulated. The most he could do was examine his consciousness and this could be easily felt. Afterall, how powerful was the city leader?

"Your consciousness has grown even stronger than before." He said shocked, "And you've gotten recognition from the space laws."

Luo Feng was stunned before he realized.

The recognition from the space laws was something he had gotten during the over 6,000 years of inheritance. When the

mosha body could use teleportation, he connected with the universe laws and that was when he got recognized. All three bodies now had the mark on their forehead. When he connected to the virtual universe, the system scanned him and his forehead was naturally recorded.

"And it's a high recognition, you should be able to teleport." The city leader said shocked.

The law recognitions had different levels too.

Like the gold law, it could form a gold blade or even a gold mountain. Different imprints represented a different side of the recognition. And Luo Feng's forehead had many dotted stars appearing and disappearing, this was the highest of the three recognitions, one that only appeared with teleportation.

"How's your law comprehension?" The city leader asked.

"About the heavenly bridge's 20th level." Luo Feng replied respectfully.

In terms of strength, his law comprehension could indeed pass the 20th level. The main thing was that he relied on the Beast god presence. And his true strength, the Nan Shen seven forms and space laws, those were far from his Beast god presence.

"20th level?" The city glanced at him, "Your improvement is huge, and is even comparable to the top genius of humanity Ke Di and Shi Huo before."

"It's mostly due to luck." Luo Feng said.

"Luck and encounters are a part of strength as well." The city leader smiled. "You disappeared for over 6,000 years, there have been many rumors about you falling. Did it create any trouble for your family?"

"Some little trouble." Luo Feng replied, "I can handle it."

"The position in humanity is important, but strength is more

important. Even though you are my disciple, if your improvement has been slow all this while and not representative of your status, others will look down on you." The city leader said. "Over these 6,000 years, you haven't shown your strength at all. When you find the time, go attempt the sector lord Sky mountain, if you succeed, your name and reputation will spread. Those little punks wouldn't dare mess with you anymore. Anyone who does, we can only suspect...whether they are linked to other races and are traitors of humanity."

Attempting sky mountain?

His teacher naturally referred to the primal region sky mountain, for which one required law comprehension of the 20th level to pass. In history, anyone able to pass this were all absolute pinnacle geniuses. Only after passing this sector lord primal region sky mountain would one truly be on the same level as Ke Di and Shi Huo knight and the others.

"Yes." Luo Feng replied.

"Knowing when to hold back is important, and so is knowing when to display your strength." The city leader said. "Like your Blade River emperor identity, you have to keep it separate from your Luo Feng identity. You even made an emperor limit your slave, if the other races know about this...they will spend huge amounts to kill you."

"Understood." Luo Feng nodded.

The news of Blade River having Heavy Arrow as his slave had long spread far and wide. Hence, the Primal chaos city leader naturally knew about it as well.

"I've already specially created a Blade River identity, from his youth to emperor level, with detailed information, without a loophole." The city leader said. "And when you pass the sector lord sky mountain, I will arrange for the Hong alliance to welcome you in. Then, you'll join as Luo Feng too. You'll have two slots."

"Thank you teacher." Luo Feng said gratefully.

"If you don't mind me asking, how can you use the Yan Shen armor, and how can you kill those emperors so easily?" The city leader looked at him, he had asked very gently. These beings had lived a long time, and they were clear that the geniuses tend to hide their special inheritance and treasures and not reveal them.

Everybody was selfish.

And because of that, they were able to strengthen themselves, working hard to protect their loved ones, and their race. These beings were clear that they couldn't force such questions, or the geniuses would turn their backs on them. The more of a genius one was, the more they were proud.

"I was naturally able to use the armor." Luo Feng replied.

"Naturally?" The city leader instantly understood, Yan Shen race, Earth race...

"As to killing the emperors. I relied on the armor, Sha Wu wings and the Fei Mo poison." He replied respectfully.

"When I first stepped into the outer region wars, I used the soldier armor. Later on, as my strength grew, I began to barely use the general armor." He said respectfully. Actually the city leader could see clearly through the army system that he began with a black armor and later switched to a silver armor.

That was after he had acquired the second black metal board on Yan Ji continent.

"As for being able to trigger the strength of the general armor, it's because...on Yan Ji continent, I successfully absorbed ten blood river crystals and became a black warrior." Luo Feng said respectfully. Secrets and trump cards were meant to be hidden, but there were some that he could reveal, he wouldn't be able to hide it for too long anyway.

"Black warrior?"

The city leader's eyes gleamed with some shock, after which he turned happily to Luo Feng. The black warrior was a legend even on Blood river continent, much less within humanity. Luo Feng didn't fully comprehend the importance of being a black warrior, however, just who was he speaking to? The city leader was very clear what the black warrior represented...

"Good, good good." He said three words, his attitude towards Luo Feng had risen obviously.

The stronger he got, the more the city leader naturally favored him.

Everything he did and acted was from the perspective of the entire race. The city leader was as such.

Chapter 890: Celebration

Luo Feng was shocked. After so many meetings with the Primal chaos city leader, he was very clear on how strict and serious he was. His usual performance was already exceptional by his own standards, yet the teacher treated them all as though they were average, very rarely ever complimenting him.

Even when his moon policy was complimented, it wasn't like this, saying 'good' three times.

For the city leader to say good three times, that was completely unexpected.

"I only said I became a black warrior." Luo Feng thought. "A black warrior can instantly raise his genetics ten times, making my foundation stronger than others by ten times. It is special, but not enough for teacher, such a being to say so much! And teacher...is thinking about everything for the race, does being a black warrior mean more than this?"

"Luo Feng." The city leader smiled.

"Teacher." He replied respectfully

"Don't spread the news about becoming a black warrior yet, haha. It's been a very long time since our humanity has had a black warrior." He complimented. "Your talent in the Beast god path is very high, and you are a black warrior...it's an absolute perfect combination! Hm, since your law comprehension is so high now, you should be able to breakthrough to undying anytime, when are you preparing to do so?"

"I want to go explore a secret region before breaking through." Luo Feng replied respectfully.

The plan he had involved getting the third metal board first.

As for breaking through...

His Beast god presence had reached the heavenly bridge's 20th level. At such a high level, as long as he wanted to break through, he could with the gold laws. Then he instantly completely comprehend the gold laws. Using that, he could breakthrough, even though the golden horned beast usually found it very hard to breakthrough, with comprehension at the 20th level, no matter how hard breaking through the foundation of the main core was, it was still possible.

The only thing was, did he dare?

No.

Because hadn't found his third clone! The moment he broke through, his internal world would become a god country, and then it would be impossible to produce a third clone.

"Secret regions?" The city leader frowned, Ke Di had fallen in a secret region...

The outer region wars were dangerous, but it was still controlled.

The dangers in the secret regions however weren't. Countless regions were dangerous enough for even knights to fall. Like how Xi Luo Duo had vanished within one, leaving the entire golden horned race to fall after, having no choice but to rely on humanity.

"Your law comprehension is very high, if you can breakthrough, just breakthrough." The city leader said. "After you become undying, you'll be much stronger and your survival ability will much higher too. It wouldn't be too late to explore the regions then."

"I have to look for my third clone." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"Ah."

The city leader looked at him. He had long known about his possession of the golden horned beast and that it had 3 slots for clones, all the higher position warriors knew this.

"Treasure trove, Hong alliance, they all have special life forms and remains." The city leader said.

"I need a sector lord level remain, and those places do indeed have special remains. However most of them are undying level." Luo Feng said. "As for sector lord level, they are very few. Afterall, most special life forms are naturally born highly intelligent and they know there are many out to possess them. Hence while they are weak, very few actually leave the secret regions, and it's easy for them to become undying. Hence, there are very few sector lord levels...the preserved corpses especially, are extremely rare."

The higher the bloodline, the harder it is for them to become undying!

However special life forms were different.

Special life forms, the higher their bloodline, the more heavenly they were. But, they had no right to be considered a race. They were few in numbers, some so few that there's only one in the entire universe. The more plentiful ones with maybe ten to a few hundred.

Even in the thousands, that was still very few.

Like the golden horned beast, though few in name, in the vast universe, there are still quite a few. Through the many generations of passing down for countless years...the number of undying golden horned beast had grown rather significantly. As long as they passed down their inheritance, with enough time, more would be produced eventually.

...

Special life forms were rare.

They however broke through to undying easily, with few of them being born as undying, like the beast god, born immediately with universe master strength. As they are simply too few, with no reproductive abilities, the laws of the universe gave them special

advantages.

They, were special from birth!

"Hm." The city leader nodded. "Sector lord special life form, almost all of them hide in the secret regions. Wanting to capture them is incredibly hard. And your production of a clone only requires a feather or scale, it's worth trying."

"I wish to do so too. While I may not be able to capture them, I should still be able to get a feather or scale etc." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"Remember, act according to your strength." The city leader ordered.

"Yes." Luo Feng replied.

"Go on." The city leader turned and walked into the vast energies.

Luo Feng bowed respectfully and left.

******

Thunder island, True Yan's palace.

Luo Feng was carrying two valuable cases of wine and heading in.

"Teacher, teacher." Luo Feng shouted loudly.

"Why don't you come in." True Yan laughed.

Luo Feng stepped in and met many of his disciples in name. These disciples in name all naturally called Luo Feng Senior, regardless of age or when they actually took on the title.

The palace was huge. After walking a while, Luo Feng reached a waterfront pavilion.

Within.

True Yan sat there looking at the vast ocean waves, gazing further onto the lightning surrounding thunder island.

He sniffed, his gaze turning to the two cases Luo Feng carried.

"Spirit downfall and nine peaks wine?"

"When you sent me off back then, you asked me to bring some wine back." Luo Feng smiled. "I'm just about to leave the outer region wars. Even though I haven't found the time to get back to primal chaos city, I'll give you some in the virtual universe first, since the wine here...is much cheaper than reality."

"I got a good disciple indeed. These two cases should be worth over three million mixed elements." True Yan received them and took out each bottle. In reality they'll be worth over 3 hundred million! "Even I, I've only drank Spirit downfall once, even though I can afford it, it's still quite a pinch."

Luo Feng laughed.

He could bear to do so only because of his teacher. If it was for himself, he couldn't bear to either.

Even spending over three million mixed elements in the virtual universe, that was enough to buy several starfields.

"Come, cheers."

The wine was poured and the two of them chatted while they drank.

"Teacher, I got a true treasure in the outer region wars." Luo Feng said.

"True treasure?" True Yan was shocked.

"This true treasure is an ancient clock..." Luo Feng began to explain in detail about its ability and its requirements etc, "Teacher, I already have a treasure that the Primal chaos city leader gave me. Hence, I don't need this one, I wonder if you need it."

"Haha, you sure think of your teacher." True Yan laughed. He was very happy, however from how he saw it, Luo Feng had suffered plenty within the outer region wars. That ancient clock

was a reward of his, and such a treasure...it was priceless. Just one sealed star alone resulted in such a bloodbath, it was easy to know how valuable this was. With his character, how could he accept such a treasure for his disciple so easily?

"Relax."

"Your teacher is renowned." True Yan sipped his wine and said. "To be able to make such a name, who wouldn't have true treasures? Without them to protect me, how could I be an invincible emperor?"

Luo Feng was stunned.

Ah, Life Fall emperor, Seven Blade, Da Long...these all had plenty of treasures on themselves. His teacher True Yan had lived for trillions of years, he was even stronger than them, akin to a knight! How could he not have any true treasures himself?

"This ancient clock doesn't fit my path too, it's useless to me." He shook his head, "Keep it for now."

"Ah." Luo Feng nodded.

Even though he rejected the gift, his smile widened even more than before. His disciple was willing to give him a true treasure, unless he truly respected his teacher, how could he do that? Afterall, Luo Feng's other teacher was the Primal chaos city leader. He had no need to stay on good terms with him anymore, it showed that Luo Feng was genuine in his respect.

"Have you returned home?" True Yan asked.

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded.

"How's the family?" True Yan laughed. Xu Xin had come looking for him before and he immediately went looking for the city leader.

"They were worried." Luo Feng sighed. "However, it's ok now. When I went back, I actually found out that Jian Ta emperor of the

Luo Si family was creating trouble for my family."

"Jian Ta emperor, who's that?" True Yan frowned.

"He just became an emperor not long ago." Luo Feng replied.

"Ah, I remember, his luck is not bad, he went under Gold Mist knight." True Yan shook his head. "Gold Mist knight is an average knight amongst many others. He has quite a few disciples, even Jian Ta managed to get in."

"He actually dares to pick a fight with your family?" True Yan was shocked. "Who's supporting him, he sure has some guts. Even his teacher Gold Mist...would treat you courteously, he wouldn't offend you. You are after all the disciple of the Primal chaos city leader. Even if the city leader didn't appear for you, just your group of seniors, anyone of them would be able to completely scare the shit out of Gold Mist."

"Right, I was puzzled too." Luo Feng shook his head.

The disciples of the city leader were mostly knights, Gui Yi knight, Gold Axe etc...

"It's definitely because you vanished, with the rumors of you dying and all." True Yan's eyes gleamed with ferocity. "You have to check! And punish them heavily. During such times, you must set an example for others!"

Chapter 891: Jian Ta Emperor Pleads Guilty

"With the rumors of my death, they began to test the waters." Luo Feng sighed. "This is the character of man."

"Your family relies on you to support them. The moment you fall, your family's strength will naturally suffer." True Yan sipped his wine. Shaking his head, he said "My Ka Hun Si race relies on me too. Even with me alive, because I don't normally interfere with the ape man affairs, my race would still be bullied. If you don't teach them a good lesson, they will always find ways to step over you."

Luo Feng nodded, "The city leader told me before as well, asking me to pass the sector lord primal region sky mountain to show off my strength and scare everybody."

"What the city leader said makes sense." True Yan nodded, after which he added shocked, "You can pass the primal region sky mountain?"

"Should be." Luo Feng nodded.

"That requires law comprehension of level 20." True Yan said.

Luo Feng smiled.

"Haha, good little punk." True Yan couldn't help but say, "You've only trained for such a short time and yet you've already caught up with your third senior."

"Well, I am a genius." Luo Feng said shamelessly.

"Haha, when you get to primal chaos city, you have to buy me some good wine." True Yan said.

"But of course." Luo Feng said carefree.

"Passing the sky mountain gives 100 billion points. The little bit you will spend on wine would mean nothing to you." True Yan laughed loudly.

Even though they were simply jesting and joking.

Deep within, Luo Feng was still pondering over the matter with Jian Ta, thinking about how to deal with him. As for passing the sky mountain, he wasn't in a rush to do it yet. When he had fully settled things in the outer region and returned, it wouldn't be too late to attempt it then.

As for Jian Ta emperor...

He had to settle it immediately!

Even though Jian Ta's actions were considered controlled, without any killings, this was a start, a start to bullying the Luo family! The moment such a thing began, it was best to get rid of it immediately, letting the other families know...the heavy consequences of messing with the Luo family!

...

Luo Feng chatted and drank with his teacher. With their strength and position close to each other, they naturally got closer. However, he didn't dare to do so with the Primal chaos city leader or the sitting mountain guest. He had no way to be that friendly with them. And the city leader or the great being couldn't possibly be that way with him either.

"Luo Feng, there's mail." Babata alerted him on his shoulder, "It's Jian Ta."

"The mail has come." Luo Feng's gaze focused.

His son Luo Ping and wife Xu Sin had said before that Jian Ta had tried to contact him before but he never once got a mail from Jian Ta.

He gently tapped the screen and the mail appeared.

True Yan sitting opposite lifted his wine glass and asked, "What did Jian Ta say?"

"He said." Luo Feng smiled, "He will personally come to my

residence in Nine star bay to plead for his crimes."

"He's actually willing to do such a thing." True Yan mocked. "Looks like he's clear that this concerns his life." In the outer region wars, it was forbidden to kill allies of the same camp. However, within humanity outside the wars, there was no such army system regulation. It was normal for warriors to kill each other from grudges and fights, and the upper echelons hardly ever bothered.

Their management attitude was very simple.

It was fine with little killings within, however if another race had invaded to kill humans within, they would completely react. As for humans heading to the outer region wars to battle other races, they had to be completely united!

"Attitude alone is not enough." Luo Feng lifted his wine glass. "Teacher, I'll finish this wine with you before heading back, it wouldn't be too late then."

"Hm, let him suffer a little." True Yan lifted his wine glass too.

Pa.

They knocked glasses and continued chatting. After a while, only when the wine was finished, did he leave.

****

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain, Nine star bay.

"The family leader is currently not here, you can return another time Jian Ta emperor. Or you can wait here."

"No rush, I'll wait here."

"Then I'll be leaving."

Within a pavilion specially used for guests, over 8m tall, a gold armored giant with an elephant nose sat there.

Luo Feng's guest areas was separated by levels too.

This one was for normal guest to rest, letting an emperor rest here was considered an insult.

"Looks like Luo Feng is pretty angry with me." Jian Ta sniffed the air, as his eyes were filled with worry. "Without his order, how could the Luo Family dare treat an undying like that? What's more, I'm an emperor! With no staff to wait on me, and only a slave to guide me over, and this is a very normal place. Even the tea is cold."

"Wait."

"I have to wait for Luo Feng to appear." He lifted his cold tea and slowly sipped, seemingly unaffected by the environment and treatment.

...

The upper echelon of the Luo Family had gathered within the mansion.

"Jian Ta is here? He's been put in the tea pavilion?" Gong Xin La couldn't help but worry. "That is afterall an emperor, we cannot treat him so badly."

"Mum."

Xu Xin smiled, "No problem, this is what Luo Feng personally instructed us to do."

"Ah, I don't quite understand." Gong Xin lan nodded, sighing. "I just feel that an emperor is a huge being, our Ganwu universe country leader doesn't even have an emperor under him."

"He isn't even complaining about being placed there." Luo Ping laughed.

"Because..."

A voice resounded as someone walked in, it was Luo Feng, "He doesn't wish to die!"

"Dad." Luo Ping and Luo Hai stood up.

"You are back." Xu Xin walked over as well.

"Brother." Luo Hua shouted happily.

Luo Feng nodded, looking at his parents, "Dad, mum."

"It's good you are back." The two of them nodded.

"I'm going to deal with Jian Ta, we'll have a reunion dinner later." Luo Feng said. After leaving for so long, he respected the chinese mid autumn festival even more than before. Because, whenever he trained, it would go for at least a few decades. Hence every time he returned, it was a good time for a reunion.

"Go on."

"Go on."

They all said, after all, against an emperor, just their formless pressure alone could make normal people below undying level submit. Unless they had heavenly willpower and consciousness strength. As for Luo Feng, his willpower alone exceeded that of many knights, and he was the leader of the earth race, having survived the life or death inheritance.

...

The cold tea with bad scenery, without any staff.

Jian Ta sat there slowly waiting.

A silhouette walked over from afar. This made Jian Ta look over, he immediately smiled and stood up, standing at the entrance to welcome Luo Feng in. Only when Luo Feng got close did he bow, "Your majesty Luo Feng, this whole incident has been a blemish on the Luo Si family side, I'm here to apologize humbly."

"Apologize?" Luo Feng glanced at him, meeting a warrior of such caliber in the outer region wars, Luo Feng could easily settle him in one blow.

Back then he was already capable of acquiring an emperor limit as a slave. With his strength which was even more powerful now,

and his perspectives higher than before, even Seven Blade or Da Long, those absolute warriors that had names spread through the trillions of races. Luo Feng didn't even fear them, as for this little Jian Ta? What was he?

Jian Ta said, "Your majesty Luo Feng, I personally came to seek forgiveness, but let me state one thing."

"Speak." Luo Feng had sat on the stone chair.

"I believe that you are clear too that I founded the family a long time ago and have been immersed in my training, hence I don't manage a lot of the family matters." He said. "Any family usually has its own managers. And the true founder usually sticks to his training and hardly meddles in the affairs."

"Right now, my seventh generation grandson is the one that manages the family. He is quite strong and has some management ability, he's a normal undying." Jian Ta said, "Back then, when my family had some issues with yours, when it got blown up...the negotiating team and everything were all arranged by him."

"He hid everything from me."

Jian Ta shook his head and sighed. "When you appeared and spoke out, you immediately scared the entire family. Only then did one of my descendants actually send a mail to me and ask me on how to settle this. I only found out then...that they actually dared offend your majesty's family! I was immediately shocked. That scum actually offended your family, is he trying to destroy the entire Luo Si family?"

"I teleported via god country over immediately. When I saw him, he just looked at me, smiling peculiarly before self destructing." He said.

Luo Feng sat quietly and listened.

"Are you done?" Luo Feng looked at him.

"Your majesty, I wasn't strict with my management of my family

and this resulted. However...this matter, I just became an emperor, I wouldn't have the guts to come offend your majesty." Jian Ta said.

"You are maligned?" Luo Feng looked at him.

"I am guilty, but this wasn't instructed by me." He said. "I know too that there are many other races searching for you, and as a small little emperor, I wouldn't dare act like that. Even if those other races had planted spies within my family, they probably wouldn't dare use them. However, controlling a normal undying in my family and using him to check up on your family, this has little cost to them."

"But no matter what, I am still guilty."

"I am here to plead for forgiveness." He flipped his hand and respectfully placed a list of items on the stone table.

Luo Feng glanced at it.

It was a list on all sorts items to amend the dispute, it was considered generous enough.

"Hmph."

Luo Feng however snorted coldly at him, "Are you done?"

He was shocked, saying, "Please speak your majesty."

"I don't care what happens within your Luo Si family, this has nothing to do with me." Luo Feng gazed coldly at him. "I only know that your Luo Si family has offended my family, don't blame me and say I didn't give you a way to live. The universe always gives a chance of survival, I'm giving you a chance too, agree to it... and you'll survive!"

Luo Feng tossed something out coldly.

He had also prepared a list earlier, Jian Ta was pale as he heard those words from Luo Feng. As he gazed through the list...he stared wide eyed.

Chapter 892: Luo Feng's Kindness

"Have you seen it clearly?" Luo Feng looked at him.

Jian Ta was huge, standing beside Luo Feng, Luo Feng looked like a little child. However this absolute warrior of the Gold mist universe country was in a flurry. He had read through the list clearly and he was stunned. He had no sense of resistance, only remorse.

"I've seen it your majesty Luo Feng, your...I, I..." Jian Ta was stuttering.

The list had three simple requests.

The first one was that all of the Luo Si family's business and assets, 99% of it would be transferred to the Luo family, leaving only 1% for themselves. This was to be arranged within half a day for the transaction.

The second on was that the members involved in the scuffle between the families were to be sent to the Luo family to be dealt with.

The third request is that cash of one billion mixed elements as compensation.

"Even if you lose your family's 99% of assets, at least you still have 1% to survive." Luo Feng looked at him. "And I only want the members involved. Without these scum, it's actually beneficial to your family. As for the one billion mixed elements...a low emperor like you should be able to afford it."

"My three requirements all have some leeway. Since I haven't forced you too much, it's already considered me showing you kindness." Luo Feng said.

Jian Ta was about to cry.

Kindness?

My god!

99% of his family's assets, the huge amount of assets accumulated over the countless years were to be instantly transferred over, leaving a pitiful amount.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, I am only a low emperor. Many pinnacle officials' entire wealth doesn't even add up to one hundred million mixed elements. I'm only slightly stronger, and even if I sell all my treasures, it'll be hard to cough up so much." Jian Ta looked urgently at Luo Feng, begging, "Whatever you've requested, I will naturally do my best, but I simply cannot..."

Luo Feng looked coldly at him.

Jian Ta went completely silent from the look.

"Remember." Luo Feng said coldly, "These three requirements, you have to do all of them before this matter will be considered resolved! If you don't...you know the consequences."

Jian Ta was dripping with cold sweat.

"Understood." He nodded.

"Go on, I'll give you seven days to accumulate the one billion. As for the transfer of assets, you have half a day." Luo Feng waved his hand.

"Yes." Even though he lamented within, he had no choice but to leave obediently.

Luo Feng watched his bleak silhouette leave, within he laughed coldly. After being in the outer region wars for so long, he was very clear on a low emperor's wealth. Even though there were some low emperors that probably couldn't cough up so much, Jian Ta was the disciple of a knight!

To become a disciple of a knight, how could the knight not leave any treasures for him? Coughing up one billion shouldn't be too hard.

...

Virtual universe, Gold mist continent, within the Luo Si family's luxurious villa.

There was silence within.

Jian Ta sat alone in his throne, and his expression was dark. Within he burned with rage, and was incredibly regretful. "Back then I shouldn't have been greedy, ordering my underlings to act that way. I only got one hundred million mixed elements in benefits, and now I have to pay so much for it. This Luo Feng sure is vicious."

"This gamble was a failure." He cursed within.

When Luo Feng vanished, there were already rumors of him falling. They only spread a little initially, later on when there was movement within the Luo family, only then did people truly begin to suspect that he had fallen.

To check on this...

One could invade the Luo Family, by placing spies and using all sorts of methods.

There was one that used one hundred million mixed elements to get the Luo Si family to check on the Luo family. Afterall, Jian Ta controlled the entire family, having conflict with the Luo family... how could this entire thing be controlled by his seventh generation descendant. Jian Ta was behind it all along.

And he didn't dare offend Luo Feng, he simply had to let an errand boy do the deed, by checking on the Luo family and easily getting one hundred million, why not?

If Luo Feng had truly fallen...this would have been easy money.

If he hadn't fallen...Luo Feng wouldn't have come killed him over this. What's more, he hadn't shown himself all this while. Hence, he used his seventh generation descendant as a front, ordering

from the shadows.

"Family leader."

"Family leader."

Over hundred upper echelon of the Luo Si family knelt down respectfully within the hall, their voice resounding within.

Jian Ta's expression was ugly as he looked at them, thinking, "That Luo Feng sure is vicious. He's clear that if he forced me into a corner I would flee to my teacher's side! Afterall, even though it may seem like a small problem from the surface, he has no power to force my teacher to hand me over, he wouldn't dare offend a knight easily."

"Right now, he's only pushing me to my limit, not killing me, but pushing."

"99% of my family assets will be possessed, seemingly kind enough to leave 1%. I'd rather he take all of the assets than have to fork out the one billion." He cursed. The largest assets of a family was the huge amount of wealth and the strongest warrior. Just like Luo Feng having a huge amount of wealth, bigger than the entire Luo family.

The hall was silent.

The upper echelon of the family all knelt there, Jian Ta simply gazed coldly, his killing intent rising.

"Swiftly organize a team to head to Black Dragon Mountain island's Nine star bay, go to the Luo family and transfer 99% of the Luo Si family assets to their family." He said solemnly, yet it was like a heavy hammer hitting all their chests, they were all stunned.

"What?"

"99%?"

"Why doesn't he just steal it?"

"He is going overboard." They were all worried.

Jian Ta roared fiercely, "Shut up!"

They all went silent again.

"When the feud began, why didn't any of you stop it? And no one told me a thing?" He roared at all of them below. They all muttered within that no one would dare stop it back then, and there were two among them that had contacted Jian Ta before, but he had shut off his virtual universe network connection.

They couldn't reach him!

"Hurry and form the team." He roared.

"Yes."

...

The feud between the families was actually being observed secretly by someone, when Jian Ta gave out the orders to his upper echelon and roared. The news of this had spread within half an hour.

"The Luo Si family has submitted, look, Luo Feng is returning."

"99% of the family assets? That's probably just one of the requirements. Luo Feng sure is vicious, the entire Luo Si family probably has to migrate! This is a slap to the face, Jian Ta has no more pride left."

...

"Hahaha, this Luo Feng sure is soft and kind, he didn't even kill anybody. If it were me, I'd have killed Jian Ta immediately."

"Brother, Jian Ta may be hiding with Gold mist knight, killing him won't be easy."

...

"Elder, the Luo Si family is one of the strongest families in the entire universe country, and yet they are just going to disappear like that? They control so many many star fields and countless

planets, is it just over?"

"Right, it's over."

"Then, then..."

"Child, remember! The most important thing of a family is its absolute warriors, like those middle level civilizations, they normally only have one normal undying. If the undying falls, the country would naturally fall. And the super families, even Jian Ta has to bow to them, they naturally have to sacrifice much to survive."

"Elder, looks like business and everything else is secondary, strength is the most absolute."

"Right, whether it's humanity or the countless other races, it's simple, the strong eat the weak! Our humanity is powerful and has countless resources and treasures. Even if the weaker races acquire some treasures, they would be snatched away. Hence, child, you have to work hard! A family with two absolute warriors...would have higher chances of surviving."

"Yes elder."

******

The huge number of starfields, countless planets, countless companies and assets were all transferred to the Luo family. This news was immediately known by many super families about. As time flowed, it created a huge wave, as the empires, families and organizations all began to know about it too.

They all felt that Luo Feng's tyranny and that his family wasn't one to be messed with.

"Dad, I respect you."

"Dad."

"Uncle."

"Uncle."

In Nine star bay, Luo Feng's family all gathered, including his brother Luo Hua and his wife and kids. Luo Hua only had one wife currently, yet he had nine kids. Afterall he didn't explore the universe like his brother...he naturally stayed in the family longer and had more children.

The large table was bustling.

"Haha..." Luo Feng stood up, laughing as he chatted and sipped wine.

"Ah Hua, I haven't seen you for so many years, you've gotten a few more kids." Luo Feng laughed at the group of youths.

"You disappeared for 6,000 years!" Luo Hua laughed as well.

Xu Xin glanced at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was stunned.

Damn.

It was his fault now for not paying enough attention to his wife. However he was now a sector lord. The stronger he got, the harder it got to have children. And Xu Xin's physique had changed, she would probably never bear children again.

The family ate happily and soon enough, the kids all left.

Luo Feng and Xu Xin chatted quietly.

"Xu Xin, the family requires a strong warrior to defend the family too. I'm preparing some undying plants." He said, Xu Xin stared at him. "Who knows how long we have to wait for you. Didn't you leave fifty billion mixed elements for the family before? The family has already discussed and decided on taking out a portion to nurture the current sector lord level nine cloud contact vines and star eating plant, making three of them to undying. Then we'll have official level strength."

Luo Feng was stunned.

"Alright." He laughed and nodded, "With regards to the family's

safety, when I return from the outer region wars, I'll arrange again. I've stayed here long enough, I'll devote my time to settling the outer region war affairs."

"Go on, your work is important." Xu Xin said.

Luo Feng smiled.

He had spent a total of three days with his family this time, mainly to make up for the lost time. As to settling Tian Chen emperor? 6,000 years had passed. Hence, three days was nothing.

"Alright, I'll return when I'm done." He kissed his wife and smiled, vanishing as his consciousness left the virtual universe.

Chapter 893: Hunt

Outer region wars, within the ancient Star tower.

Within a palace.

Luo Feng had given an order via the virtual universe to Heavy arrow, "Heavy arrow, sense my location and teleport via god country over."

In a few seconds.

A blurry light filled the palace and the space rippled. A silhouette appeared, it was the masked tall and skinny Heavy arrow. He immediately bowed at the sight of Luo feng, "Greetings Master."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Simultaneously, he felt the thoughts of the star tower...should we kill this intruder? This was considered the core of the tower, and it forbade any intruders. The moment one entered, it could engage its own defenses to kill the intruder. As for the forbidden spaces, it was free for countless warriors to enter.

"No." Luo Feng communicated back. The star tower was one of the strongest treasures in the universe, a weapon however was after all just a weapon. It's intellect was low. It's calculation speed may match up to an AI, but its emotional intelligence was that of a two or three year old child.

"Back then, Tian Chen's matter, did he reveal himself?" Luo Feng asked.

"Master, he didn't." Heavy Arrow said respectfully. "If you didn't warn me, I wouldn't even have discovered that he was so scheming. Only when I observed him carefully did I discover that something was amiss with Qu Wu emperor's death. And after his death, I fled immediately. The demon camp actually pushed towards me, leaving my side with only Tian Chen...in theory, he was supposed to die, yet he managed to survive."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

This was also within his expectations. Judging from his own interaction with Tian Chen, this person was careful. Even when he had plans to kill Luo Feng, he didn't act until the final moment. If not for Luo Feng's strong willpower against illusions, Tian Chen may have succeeded.

"Star tower." Luo Feng ordered, "Search for a human undying."

...

The many sealed stars revolved within the palace. Luo Feng sat crossed legged and communicated with the tower, Heavy Arrow stood beside him respectfully.

"There are a total of 359 human undyings in the tower."

The information poured into his mind, images appearing as the many human warriors' battles, training and chats with allies appeared...these were all humans. Even though there were hundreds of thousands of undyings, there were few real humans within.

He quickly scanned through all of them.

"No Tian Chen?" He frowned. "Star tower, scan carefully if there's this person on my arm screen?" An image of Tian Chen appeared on his arm.

"There's no such person, he left 1,800 years ago." Star tower communicated.

"He's already left?" Luo Feng stared wide eyed and stood up suddenly.

"Master?" Heavy Arrow took a step forward and asked, "Are we going to deal with Tian Chen?"

"He's not in the tower now." Luo Feng shook his head. This was now his battlefield, and he had a huge advantage. However, as the life or death inheritance had taken over 6,000 years, many of the

warriors normally only explored the outer region wars for up to 10,000 years. It was normal that Tian Chen had left.

"Who knows if he's still in the outer region wars."

"Has he returned to humanity?"

Luo Feng shook his head, his eyes gleaming. "Very good, if you've left, that would be even better! I'll still kill you!"

"Master, what's our next move?" Heavy arrow asked.

"Don't get anxious." He smiled. "He is afterall a member of the Hong alliance. I know many friends that are his too! Even though I cannot contact him directly, through his friends...it'll be easy to find him. Then I'll be able to make my move. However, before that...I still have something to do."

Heavy Arrow was curious.

Luo Feng turned to look outside, the vast sealed stars were revolving, "I need to get more soul slaves!"

******

He was the master of the tower, even though he couldn't trigger the entire tower, he still had a huge advantage. Using the tower, he could clearly know the hundreds of thousands of undyings locations and which forbidden spaces they were in. He was even able to send himself there.

"As long as I want to, I can pick any battle to join."

"And no exits will ever appear unless I will it too. Be it a day, ten days or a month."

"As such..."

"How can anything go wrong?"

His eyes gleamed with ambition, having allies and slaves was extremely important in the universe! And to get a large number of slaves was a hard thing to do, one had to meet someone he could

deal with and make him unable to flee, and soul control was something a soul master was best at, and these masters were extremely rare.

Other than that, there was only one more stupid way to go about it!

Force them into a coma and control them after!

However, this method had its own weakness, forcing the enemy into a coma? The enemy might sense the danger and self destruct. Also, if he went slightly overboard, he could very likely kill the enemy instead. Secondly, even if he succeeded, controlling a comatose undying would require him to wait a long time for the undying to awaken and recover. Using treasures could help speed things up, but the costs were high.

In all, controlling a powerful undying slave required one to have strength close to or stronger, and it was still an extremely hard thing to do.

Normally, only the masters of soul attacks had higher proficiency.

"In the universe, who could so easily meet so many warriors? And who had such power to easily pick whoever they wanted?"

"I have full control."

"It just depends on whether I have the ability to control them." Luo Feng communicated with the star tower and began to search for some absolute warriors. The targets were naturally emperor limits. With his current strength, dealing with Life Fall emperor or Seven blade would still be extremely hard.

As for pinnacle emperors?

Luo Feng didn't care about them, unless it was a pinnacle emperor soul master.

Hence he set his targets as emperor limits and emperor pinnacle

soul masters.

"Him!" Luo Feng smiled, "Demon camp, Ci Ya race...Black Crow emperor, emperor pinnacle soul master will be my first target."

...

There were countless forbidden spaces within the star tower.

Within a particular one, wild winds howled as snow fell. Amidst the snow, three blurry silhouettes sat crossed legged within.

"My luck sure is bad, that high emperor human earlier was about to be killed, yet at the last moment he managed to flee from Black Crow's control." A turtle like creature howled, its blood red eyes filled with ferocity.

"Damn." Another similar life form howled.

The two of them were from the far reaches of the universe, and they had temporarily joined the demon camp's Qiu Jia race. They were a tone life form, these two emperor pinnacles had a similarity with that race...their defenses were very strong.

Very few of them joined the outer region wars, and the number of emperors were even Fewef. Within star tower, there were only three emperors, and they became known as the Qiu Jia Ci Ya brothers.

"We must have patience."

A hoarse voice resounded, it was a black furred bird like creature with jade green eyes, he was Black Crow emperor, the leader of this team. "There are hundreds of thousands of undyings here, we will have a chance. With patience, our hunt will succeed."

The two Qiu Jia Ci Ya warriors howled in agreement.

"Hm?"

Black Crow suddenly turned to the distance, the two crossed legged creatures beside turned too, a space slit had appeared.

"I was right, with patience, look, a prey has come." Black Crow said hoarsely.

Gu...

Gu... The two Ci Ya warriors howled with excitement, their eyes gleaming as they looked on. Even though they were filled with killing intent, without seeing their target, they didn't dare make a move. It might be another demon camp warrior or someone stronger than them.

A silhouette appeared amidst the snow.

Black Crow and the brothers looked over carefully, the silhouette seemed human, with silver wings and armor, he floated in mid air.

"It's a human." The brothers howled.

"Blade River emperor!" Black Crow's expression changed, as Blade River's name was well known. Even though it made them go on alert, but it was not enough to scare them off.

"Haha...I actually bumped into Black Crow." The youth stood in mid air and laughed, shaking the space about.

"Blade River!" Black Crow's laughter resounded, "Where's your slave Heavy Arrow? Call him out."

Hua!

A silhouette appeared beside, it was the masked Heavy Arrow.

This made Black Crow's laughter grow even more piercing. "Hahaha, very good human Blade River emperor. If I kill you, that's a huge windfall." He secretly ordered too, "Brothers, I'll rely on you to hold up Heavy Arrow, while I deal with Blade River."

"Relax, even though we aren't a match for Heavy Arrow, we can still definitely hold him for awhile." The two brothers were very confident.

...

Killing intent rose from both sides.

Heavy Arrow stood respectfully beside Luo Feng. Luo Feng however smiled at the scene, he had to pick a team that was close to him in strength. Otherwise, anyone else would have fled after seeing Heavy Arrow.

"Let's see the power of the Star map." With a flip of his left hand, the star map appeared. There were visible star imprints within, and six black balls were floating within, after which they floated onto his palm.

Chapter 894: Suppression

The battle began instantly. Heavy Arrow immediately teleported beside Black Crow and almost simultaneously, one of the Qiu Jia brothers used space lockdown! Behind him, the two brothers had their shells swell up in thick armor, becoming like two fortresses.

Rumble...

The space shook as the two brothers were like two moving fortresses, pressuring the space around and attacking Heavy Arrow.

"Black Crow, deal with Blade River!"

"We can at most hold Heavy Arrow for awhile, you have to settle it fast." The two warriors communicated urgently.

"Relax." Black Crow replied.

...

When Heavy Arrow had teleported, Black Crow and Luo Feng had instantly begun to fight as well.

"This Blade River emperor, relied on the flame god crystal to kill Purple Clock and forced Heavy Arrow into a coma, becoming famous through that fight! His defense is heavenly, more powerful than normal emperor limits, and his blade is very powerful too, killing 10 emperors at a go, with one slash each. I cannot be slashed by him." Black Crow was very clear on Blade River emperor's information.

The fight that got him famous had long spread far and wide.

From that battle alone, everyone knew of his powerful defense. He was able to withstand even the strongest flame god crystal's explosion. Secondly, his blade was special, and it should be a special weapon. These two points showed one thing, which was that Blade River was very wealthy, with the strongest flame god

crystal and a special blade.

"They are all external strengths, a soul attack would do the trick."

"Become my slave!"

Black Crow's jade green eyes gleamed with madness as he gazed at the distant Luo Feng, instantly unleashing an illusion. The invisible technique instantly passed through Luo Feng's general armor. But, its power was greatly weakened before entering his body.

Howl...

His internal core had long formed a Beast god, a single horned beast with thick limbs and a long tail. This miniature beast god had a tower pearl around it. However, this illusion attack wasn't even enough for it to show itself. The Beast god howled and unleashed one of the four techniques of the Nan Shen seven forms, Beast god howl,

With powerful willpower and consciousness, this howl was extremely powerful.

The illusion was instantly dispersed.

"Go."

Luo Feng released the six black balls in his left hand. Every one was about the size of a marble, and law engravings glowed on it. These six seemingly normal black balls...who would expect them to be the incredibly terrifying sealed stars, these were much more powerful than normal stars.

Striking a star would cause it to crumble.

However these black balls that were the size of marbles seemed ordinary.

With his powerful spirit energy triggering the six balls, they flew in a straight line fast as lightning straight at Black Crow.

"My soul illusion was actually dispersed, those six balls...not

good!" Black Crow saw the black balls shooting at him, causing a thin slit in the space as it flew. This slit was incredibly fine, almost like a pathway being slit open, for the balls to fly through. How could Black Crow not be clear of what this meant?

Hu la!

Black Crow wanted to dodge, but the black balls were very fast. Even with the Sha Wu wings, Luo Feng wouldn't have been able to dodge them easily himself. Afterall, spirit weapons were much faster than a warrior.

Rumble!

Black Crow brandished a white peculiar shield, as the first black ball hit the shield with terrifying force. With a bang, the arm Black Crow used to wield the shield was already completely smashed behind. At the same time, the second ball had smashed into the shield.

Rumble...

The shield was tossed aside in a beam of light that vanished into the vast snow.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The four consecutive balls that followed, hit Black Crow's body. Even though he fought hard against them, the force from the balls was terrifying, striking his body hard. This was much stronger than any attack he had ever received in Zhong Zi star back then. His bones and muscles were all instantly shattered.

Chi! He spat out blood from within, blood stained his broken body.

However in almost an instant, his body had recovered completely.

"It's useless, a pinnacle emperor's undying body isn't so easy to destroy." He stared hard at the distant Luo Feng, "Mo Zhi howl!"

Rumble!

A terrifying soul attack instantly pierced through Luo Feng's general armor, but 90% of it was diffused. After which with the Beast god howl within, it was almost completely disperse, not even touching the Beast god itself, much less any damage.

Luo Feng was very satisfied within, "The star map's strength is indeed powerful, I didn't even unleash any wonders before, and purely used the strength of my consciousness and the six sealed stars alone. Even that was enough to make him unable to defend against it!"

The star map was a true treasure.

The many sealed stars were much more powerful than normal stars. Just pushing it with his consciousness and willpower gave it that much strength.

That experiment...made him incredibly satisfied.

This was the benefits of a true treasure, compared to the Sha Wu wings...this sealed star combination with the star map was actually even easier to unleash greater strength. In terms of control, it was as difficult as a true treasure would be, but its strength was extraordinary.

"Experiment complete, begin the hunt!"

He looked at the distant Black Crow and controlled the six black balls. The law engravings on their surfaces lit up this time, immediately triggering the universe laws. Within an instant, a giant projection of a huge Beast god appeared...

Only its right claw had the six balls gathered there, and the projection was incredibly distinct.

The Beast god's sky tearing claw!

"Isn't this Blade River known for his blade work?" Black Crow was terrified. The vast law energies from the six balls caused a

huge surge in power...

Tear!

The huge claw tore down and he was instantly shredded, the powerful claw sliced apart even the little fragments.

In the distance, Luo Feng's eyes gleamed at the sight, "Now!" A black ball appeared in his left palm, and this one was covered in a layer of purple light, it was coated in the Fei mo poison. The star map had absorbed hundred sealed stars, but right now just how many was he using?

Hence he had ten sealed stars specially coated in Fei Mo poison.

Xiu!

This purple light ball became a beam of light and shot at the recovering Black Crow. The countless fragments were gathering, and before he could take form, the black ball shot right through!

"Attacks are usel...ah, no!" Black Crow felt his god body attacked, instantly losing 52% of it, shocking him.

"Flee! Flee! Flee!"

He immediately communicated to his partners.

"Flee?" The other two fortress like Qiu Jia warriors were shocked. However, having been in the outer region wars for a long time, their reactions were fast, immediately turning and fleeing.

Rumble!

Black Crow lost more than half of his strength, as a powerful spirit energy permeated his body.

"10,000 soul control one" Luo Feng stared hard at him, unleashing his technique.

In his plan, to control Black Crow, he first had to deplete his strength to less than 10%, before using 10,000 soul control to forcefully control him.

This was an unavoidable thing.

If he wanted to force him into a coma, he would have to use the Fei Mo poison twice? However, each attack could destroy 30 to 80% at a go, and he had no way to precisely control its effectiveness. With two balls attacking Black Crow...it could cause him to fall instantly!

Even if his luck was good and the enemy was forced into a coma!

However, even if he did manage to control a comatose undying, would he spend over 100 billion mixed elements to recover him? To Luo Feng...spending so much for an undying slave wasn't worth it at all. Afterall, he already had Heavy Arrow.

...

In all, the best way was to rely on the poison during the first attack and make him suffer heavy losses. After that, forcefully use 10,000 soul control on him.

"My willpower is very strong."

"With the General soul assisting it!"

"Using 10,000 soul control, the power of it would naturally be exceptionally powerful, and this Black Crow's current strength is not even 10% of his full power. I hope I can succeed." Luo Feng used his full strength and stared hard at him, beginning to invade his soul.

Black Crow's body fell from mid air and landed in the snow, not moving at all.

However his soul...

Was currently engaging in a powerful struggle.

"Trying to control me? No! No! No! I'd rather fall, there's still a chance of revival. If I'm controlled, then there's no hope for revival at all."

"Break."

"Break!!!"

He howled within, as his entire soul was madly struggling, finally breaking through Luo Feng's control.

"Explode!!!" The moment he broke free, he immediately self destructed.

...

The terrifying force instantly spread in all directions, covering the entire forbidden space. The vast snow was instantly reduced to nothing. Even the two Qiu Jia brothers were injured from it. As for Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow, they were naturally unharmed.

"I failed?" He stood in space, not even looking at the items left behind by Black Crow, only sighing, "To control an undying close to strength sure is hard. Strength, planning, and luck, I cannot lack in any of these."

"Master." Heavy Arrow said.

"Kill the other two." He ordered immediately.

"Yes."

Heavy Arrow flipped his hand and brandished an arc blade covered in purple light, rushing at the two injured Qiu Jia warriors.

Chapter 895: Embryo

With Heavy Arrow's strength with the Fei Mo poison, Luo Feng stood in the distance casually tossing the six sealed stars out. Each of them were incredibly heavy. Even though Luo Feng didn't use any of the laws with them, they could at least affect the two Qiu Jia brothers who were fleeing.

Hence...the two of them fell quickly.

After killing Black Crow and the others, Black Crow had treasures worth about thirty billion mixed elements, while the other two had a total of about eighteen billion.

"I actually failed, hm, on to the next prey then." Luo Feng contacted the star tower and large amounts of information instantly poured into his mind, allowing him to make his choice.

"Good, the target will still be emperor pinnacle soul masters."

"Star tower, open a pathway."

Luo Feng gazed ahead.

Hua!

The torn up forbidden space suddenly had an exit appear. Luo Feng and Heavy Arrow flew right through the exit into the space pathway into another space. There were four bug camp warriors there, of which there was one emperor pinnacle soul master.

"Let's hope it works this time." Luo Feng anticipated.

...

Three minutes later.

The space was left in a mess, and the sea had been reduced to nothing as a large half of the sea bed had vanished. Silver winged Luo Feng stood high above, as Heavy Arrow stood still respectfully by his side.

"Master, the many treasures add up to about sixty billion." Heavy Arrow said respectfully.

Luo Feng nodded, after which he shook his head and sighed, "We failed again!"

"Master, to control a soul master is extremely hard. They are all warriors that have spent countless years studying how to control soul techniques. Since they are incredibly adept at the soul techniques, to capture them...requires quite a bit of luck." Heavy Arrow said respectfully, "However, our earnings are still huge."

"Killing more warriors would create anger in others, making the absolute beings appear." Luo Feng said softly. "Hence I have to succeed this time."

"Yes master." Heavy Arrow's expression went serious.

There were a few hidden rules known in the universe, like how a knight could easily kill emperors and officials. Naturally the emperors and officials wouldn't dare offend the knight, as they had their own pride. If they offended one, they would naturally be killed! However the knights would not go about massacring large amounts of undyings, if they did so...

Everybody would get enraged, the other knights would team up to deal with this one!

Same theory, like True Yan, an invincible emperor, he needn't head to the outer region wars. As for Seven Blade, Da Long, Life fall etc, if they took out their trump cards, they could easily kill pinnacle officials or even emperor limits. Killing once or twice was fine, even killing ten of them consecutively, was ok.

However if they went overboard, it would lead to many others getting enraged.

Afterall a pinnacle emperor and an emperor limit...were the elites of the many races. If they were massacred in large numbers, the super beings of their race would natural want to take revenge!

******

Luo Feng brought Heavy Arrow along and began to hunt...

The first day, they battled three times, killing all the enemies, and not even succeeding once. They acquired treasures worth about 160 billion mixed elements.

The second day, they battled three more times, killing all of them. As for soul control? They still failed. But they did acquire about 210 billion.

Third day...

Four days in a row! A total of twelve battles were fought. The targets were all emperor pinnacle soul masters, however all twelve of them fell, and not one succeeded. Of which only nine of them managed to spread the news of Blade River being the killer. The other three died too fast, as they didn't even have time to inform others.

Nine pinnacle emperor soul masters fell, and the culprit was Blade River!

Luckily the nine of them were from three different camps.

The camps were all enemies of one another, and news wouldn't travel between them too quickly However, within each camp itself, the news had spread that Blade River had begun killing emperor pinnacle soul masters.

Automaton camp...Four were killed.

Demon camp...Two were killed.

Bug camp...Three were killed.

"This Blade River emperor sure is powerful. A total of four emperor pinnacle soul masters all died by his hands. I heard that his defense was heavenly, and was able to withstand the strongest flame god crystal explosion! I didn't expect him to be so intrepid even against soul masters, killing four consecutively! Material

defense, soul defense...both are so strong, he truly is terrifying."

"Terrifying Blade River emperor."

...

The name Blade River had begun to spread again after 6,000 years of silence.

The last time, Blade River had Heavy Arrow as his slave and could withstand the strongest flame god crystal. His terrifying material defense had made many not underestimate him. However no matter what...from what happened, he still relied on many external factors to kill so many.

This time however!

Against the falling of the soul masters, this had completely terrified all the other warriors.

Material attack? Soul attack?

Blade River would withstand it all, how could they deal with such an absolute warrior with no weaknesses?

...

Even though his name spread fast, within the short time, it wasn't too absurd.

******

On the second hunt during the fifth day, within a burning island space, a human like silhouette with crystals embedded in his body stood there covered in little diamonds. From a glance, he looked like a diamond man! He lay on the island.

Weng...

His soul imprints within his body were all struggling madly, however after the Fei mo poison's attack, he only had 36% of his undying body left, and his strength was greatly diminished. Within the past few days, Luo Feng had battled three times each

day, and each battle lasting at most a few minutes.

What was he doing with the rest of his time?

He was studying the 10,000 soul control, embedding the laws within to make it even more powerful, studying it over and over, making his technique grow more refined.

"Submit!" Luo Feng felt the enemy's resistance get stronger, pressing on.

Rumble!!!

Vast soul threads instantly invaded his soul.

Success!

"I've finally succeeded." His eyes revealing joy. It wasn't easy at all, as he had spent so much effort. By using the star tower's ability to pick his targets, only after so many tries did he succeed for the first time.

"Pa Luo Wa race." Luo Feng looked at the diamond man.

He stood up, his gaze towards Luo Feng filled with utmost respect. Luo Feng had become this being's most important person. He bowed respectfully, "Master."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded and smiled, "Honed Heart emperor."

Sou!

A distant silhouette flew over. It was Heavy Arrow emperor. He landed beside and said respectfully," Master, I've killed the other two warriors, these are the items left behind."

"Hahaha..." Luo Feng couldn't help but laugh loudly.

Heavy Arrow glanced over at the diamond man Honed Heart emperor when he saw this, immediately saying, "Congratulations master on controlling Honed Heart emperor."

"It wasn't easy, not at all. I spent so much time and effort to get this one." Luo Feng continued laughing, "Luckily the Fei Mo poison

is very strong, causing him to lose so much strength. Only then could I succeed. With him...it'll be much easier to get more slaves."

Honed Heart could burn his undying body, causing his soul control to instantly surge in power. That way, the chances of controlling another slave was much higher.

"With him here, our next target should be an emperor limit." Luo Feng was filled with ambition within.

"Take a rest Honed Heart, recover your strength."

Luo Feng took out some items he acquired before to help Honed Heart recover. Afterall, he had killed many emperors before and they all had quite a few such items for recovery. It was obviously kept for use in times of emergency, to recover quickly.

At this time, Luo Feng had given them to Honed Heart emperor.

There was no choice!

Only a fully recovered Honed Heart emperor was useful to him.

...

Everything went according to Luo Feng's plan. After he got Honed Heart, his control proficiency rose greatly.The only trouble was that he couldn't let the enemy burn his undying body, the moment they did...even if Honed Heart burnt his undying body, controlling them would be hard.

Before, without Honed Heart to help him, the moment the enemy burnt their undying bodies, Luo Feng immediately gave up on capturing, and chose to kill them instead.

With the Sha Wu wings and star map, he could forcefully kill them.

Heavy Arrow had the ancient clock on him, and he wasn't afraid of the enemies burning their undying bodies. He too could easily kill them.

...

After acquiring Honed Heart, Luo Feng's probability of success had risen from 20% to 33%. Hence, he gradually began to not show himself, but letting his slaves make the moves instead. Two emperor limits combined together with treasures he provided...the Fei mo poison and the sealed stars, the hunt had begun.

Everytime a sealed star fell, it would be a huge ruckus. Almost all the fallen sealed stars were recorded in history.

Hence...

Even though he had given his slaves the sealed stars, he had told them strictly to not use its sealing abilities. Only shrinking them to little crystal balls to attack! With the sealed stars infused with the laws within...just its offensive abilities, though far from its sealing strength, was powerful enough. Afterall the plan...was to simply use the sealed stars to attack.

Become a crystal ball to attack.

The other warriors wouldn't be able to recognize them as sealed stars. Afterall, it's true use was normally for more than to completely seal the enemies! And these crystal balls were hard to determine.

"The sealed stars are linked to the star tower."

"This cannot be divulged."

"You two, unless I allow it, you must never use its sealing abilities." Luo Feng made a strict order, not only on the soul slaves but to himself. He could only use them to attack. And unless it was truly critical, he never allowed his soul slaves to even use them. After the battle, he would collect them back, preventing an occasion where his slaves were killed and others acquired the sealed stars.

He didn't even give any to his teacher True Yan.

Afterall...the star tower had a huge implication, he couldn't gamble with that kind of danger.

This entire hunt was within his own territory, the star tower. Everything was within his control. Only because of this, was he confident enough to let his soul slaves use the sealed stars.

...

Without a doubt.

The proficiency left him pleasantly surprised.

Chapter 896: Luo Feng's Guard Team

The hunt lasted for a month, of which he battled three times a day for the first eight days, later on he only did one battle a day.

Within this month of hunting, Luo Feng was the main force during the first six days. However later on, he began to hide and let his slaves do the job. Even though the proficiency may have fallen slightly without him, it didn't affect the hunt too much, and doing so...would help him avoid huge troubles later on.

Afterall, if he appeared every time as the main leader.

He would be in big trouble for killing too many warriors.

A total of forty six battles were fought in a month.

This made his slave count grow from the initial Heavy Arrow, to a total of nine! Meaning...from his hunt, he had acquired eight new slaves.

"Congratulations master."

"Master, these are the goods left behind."

The soul slaves were all absolutely loyal, giving all the treasures from the battles to him. As for their own wealth and treasures, they gave to him also. And Luo Feng arranged them on his own after, leaving them a few according to his plan. Even though he managed to get a huge amount of wealth from the forty six battles...

Upgrading the strength of the nine slaves would require his own strength and resources, he felt the pressure.

******

The shockwave that he had created...spread throughout star tower.

Initially.

He had brought Heavy Arrow with him to the many battles, and the news had spread between the three camps. At that time, the number of warriors he killed hadn't reached so high yet. Even though it had made him more renowned than before...the entire star tower was still considered pretty calm. However, as time passed, the news of him killing more warriors shook the entire place.

Six days, eighteen battles, thirteen of which spread the news!

There were about a total of forty emperors dying at the hands of Blade River emperor! Among which thirteen of them were pinnacle emperors and soul masters or emperor limits!

Hua!

The news spread fast and shook star tower.

...

The outer region wars was a massacre place. The warriors there wouldn't back down from fear of Blade River's strength.

His actions had indeed enraged many!

Many warriors from the other races began to form groups all looking for him and Heavy Arrow, wanting to kill him! The originally calm over 100,000 undyings thus had more intense battles, this resulted in many more casualties.

However...

When they had begun to look for him, he vanished. The many battles that took place never had Blade River in them.

In truth, some of the slaves Luo Feng got didn't reveal their enslavement. Hence, Luo Feng had arranged for them to form groups of two or three to hunt. One battle a day, without Luo Feng within, no one would suspect that he was involved.

...

The atmosphere had gotten pretty crazy within star tower

because of the massacre from Blade River emperor. After he vanished, he secretly sent his slaves to target pinnacle soul masters or emperor limits. There were still many that fell, the deaths of these warriors...

Caused the atmosphere to go crazy.

"It's too crazy, even a pinnacle emperor or emperor limit can fall here. It's best we leave star tower temporarily."

"Haha, this is a rare encounter. With warriors dying, we have a chance of getting huge wealth."

"Kill."

"It's rare to have a chance to battle. Normally, those hard to deal with warriors would just retreat, that's seriously boring. Right now, star tower is truly a battleground."

Some of the weaker and scared warriors left start tower. However, other bloodthirsty and confident warriors rushed here, causing the chaos within to ensue. There were also many still searching for Blade River. However, they couldn't locate him at all.

****

Within a forbidden space.

A glaring gold armored silhouette glowing with black light, seemingly like an automaton puppet was present. This cold automaton warrior was the automaton super warrior that had just rushed here, Life Fall emperor.

"He actually killed so many pinnacle emperor soul masters, and so many emperor limits! Over ten of them! And the many other emperors..." His voice was filled with strength. His eyes were gleaming with fighting spirit, "This warrior is worthy of my time!"

Behind him six others followed respectfully.

"I've come here for Blade River emperor." Life Fall was excited. At his level of strength, he wasn't interested in dealing with normal

emperor limits anymore.

If he wanted to fight, it had to be one with special encounters! Or heavy treasures! Or one with special battling abilities!

In all, it had to be special.

When the sealed star fell before, he didn't manage to kill Seven Blade, and that made him regretful. He didn't have any guarantee dealing with Seven blade or Da Long, such absolute warriors. However, against a new Blade River emperor that was just a little more renowned than other emperor limits, he was confident.

"Lord, we cannot find Blade River."

"We've contacted many other allies, none of them have discovered him."

Life Fall's eyes gleamed with rage as he heard this. "This audacious Blade River had created such a storm, killing over ten pinnacle soul masters and emperor limits, yet now he's just vanished? Has he left star tower? Check for me. We have automaton warriors all over, and I will also give a bounty of one billion indigo gems for news on his location. The moment we confirm the news is real, I will give the reward."

"Yes."

"Yes lord.

The six warriors replied.

"Blade River emperor..." Life Fall's eyes gleamed.

He was clear that since Blade River could kill so many warriors, he definitely had some treasure or encounters. Also, just the wealth from killing so many emperors, that would be no small sum even to him. The moment he killed Blade River, he would get a huge windfall.

Naturally, he wouldn't give up so easily on his target...

...

"Blade River emperor?"

"Check!"

"Find out where Blade River is!" Da Long had targeted him too, killing him would get him a huge windfall, why not?

...

This storm had started because of Blade River. Even though he had killed so many absolute warriors, he was only that strong himself. Killing the emperor limits wasn't considered a massacre... plus the numbers weren't huge, hence the super beings didn't intervene.

However!

Warriors like Life Fall, Da Long and Black Tomb were renowned warriors of the outer region wars. Hence, they all began to target him.

The level of strength begets the level of fame!

Since Blade River dared to cause such a storm, then the others would naturally covet for his wealth. It became a challenge to see whether one could defeat Blade River. As long as Blade River could flee from Life Fall or Da Long, that would be proof of his strength.

******

Virtual universe, Luo Feng's villa.

There were only two people in his living room, Luo Feng and True Yan.

"Luo Feng, you've caused quite a storm this time, what are you doing?" True Yan stared at his own disciple. "Your reputation has grown huge, and that would attract stronger enemies! I think... Black Tomb, Da Long, that group of punks could all be targeting you."

"No problem." Luo Feng smiled.

"No problem?" True Yan shook his head. "Look, you don't even know how many of these other race warriors are trying to kill you, and your reputation within the Hong alliance is huge too. With frequent dealings with many warriors...like those exploring dangerous secret regions, they would invite you along. The name represents strength."

"Without sufficient strength behind, you will fall." True Yan looked at him.

"I have had some special encounters." Luo Feng smiled and consoled his teacher.

True Yan was shocked.

Special encounters?

"Are you fully confident of being able to survive and escape from such warriors?" True Yan couldn't believe it. His disciple was powerful, but these other warriors, which of them didn't have their own treasures and encounters? Which of them didn't have huge amounts of treasure? How powerful were they?

"I have confidence." Luo Feng nodded, without any hesitation.

True Yan looked shocked at him.

After which he sighed and shook his head, "Forget it, forget it, since you are so confident, let's see what happens."

"I will work hard and not disappoint you." Luo Feng mocked.

There were indeed many trying to befriend him after his name grew. However, he dealt with them casually. Only with his teacher did he actually take the time to meet and handle any questions.

...

Within the palace in star tower surrounded by sealed stars.

Silver armored Luo Feng stood there, and behind him stood a row of absolute warriors...a total of nine!

They were...

Heavy Arrow, emperor limit!

Honed Heart, emperor pinnacle soul master!

Zhen Zhong, emperor limit!

Metal Flag, emperor limit!

Sorrow Demon, emperor pinnacle soul master!

Qu Can, emperor pinnacle soul master!

Ji Hong, emperor limit, holding the true treasure ancient clock!

Mountain Howl, emperor limit.

Fu Shui, emperor limit, holding the true treasure Ice Net!

These were the nine warriors Luo Feng controlled. There were a total of forty six battles in his hunt, killing over hundred emperors. Of which, when he killed a high emperor, he was lucky to discover he had the true treasure Ice net. Killing so many emperor limits and soul masters however didn't get him any true treasures. According to their strengths and styles, he finally gave the ice net to Fu Shui to use, and the ancient clock was more suited for Ji Hong emperor.

Chapter 897: Twin Whirlpools

Luo Feng looked at his nine slaves and felt strength.

Even though he had been strong all this while, the moment a pinnacle or emperor limit burnt their undying bodies and gave it their all, he would only be able to rely on the Sha Wu wings to defend and dodge. Because of this, he was only capable of prolonging the battle, and this was his big weak point, he had no undying body to burn.

"Now I have nine powerful slaves, and all of them are undyings of other races. I wouldn't ever have to simply waste time when the enemy burns his undying energy.

Nine warriors, of which four were controlled directly by him.

The other five were controlled by him through his slaves.

He directly controlled Heavy Arrow, Honed Heart, Ji Hong and Fu Shui. When he first chose his targets, he knew that Ji Hong was suitable for the ancient clock. Hence, he naturally personally controlled Ji Hong himself at critical times. As the last one he controlled, Fu Shui was controlled because he was suitable for the Ice net.

In terms of importance, the ancient clock and Ice net...these two true treasures, were much more important that the emperor limits themselves.

******

Hong alliance, within a restaurant.

Luo Feng was sipping tea casually. The Ping Hai business had grown huge, making tea a widely available drink, and there were many connoisseurs of tea throughout the universe now.

Pa! Pa!

A knocking on door, the staff specially assigned to his booth

gently tapped on the wall and a white screen appeared. In it a lady friend Yong Yan emperor dressed in a purple armor with short purple hair was present, and her eyes were glowing blue.

Luo Feng glanced over and nodded to the staff, only then did he open the door.

"Hua." The booth door opened.

Yong Yan entered.

"You can leave." Luo Feng ordered the staff.

"Yes."

The staff left and closed the door behind him, leaving only Luo Feng and Yong Yan within.

"Blade River...it's been so long, why have you contacted me?" Her expression displayed a sense of interest and curiosity. She sat right beside him as she continued, "But I heard that you've recently caused a great massacre within star tower, that was quite a shock."

Yong Yan was a high emperor.

She was friendly but distant before. This time however, after Luo Feng's name had risen greatly, she was shocked by the news initially, as she never expected him to be that strong.

"I need your help." Luo Feng said directly.

"I will do my best to assist you. Only thing is...just what can I do to help you?" She looked at him.

"Tell me where Tian Chen emperor is, his exact location!" Luo Feng said directly. "The moment it's confirmed, I will transfer 100 million mixed elements as a thank you."

"Hmph, Blade River sure is generous." She looked at him, "He won't find out about this right?"

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

It was easy enough to guess. Afterall back then Blade River and

Tian Chen were on good terms. If there weren't any special circumstance, he would have easily been able to just call up Tian Chen and ask him himself. Was there a need to get his location through another person? Yong Yan wasn't stupid, she smiled, "Tian Chen is currently in the most dangerous place of the seventh battlefield, the Twin Whirlpools. Blade River, you can begin heading there and when you arrive, I will give you the exact location."

"Hm." Luo Feng smiled and nodded, "Thanks Yong Yan, I trust in your ability."

After which he vanished.

Yong Yan lifted the glass of tea and pondered, smiling, "This is getting interesting. This Blade River sure isn't ordinary at all, it's better to stay on good terms with him."

******

Star tower, within the palace surrounded by sealed stars.

"Which among you can get to Twin Whirlpools as fast as possible?" Luo Feng looked at his nine slaves.

"Master, I can do it."

Three warriors spoke up, they were after all the top notch warriors in the outer region wars. Only several others were stronger than them, mainly Life Fall, 7 blade etc. Hence, other than Star tower, they had naturally been to many other places within the outer region wars, leaving markers about.

"Very good, Ji Hong, you shall lead the way." Luo Feng said.

"Yes master." Ji Hong said respectfully.

"Other than Heavy Arrow and Ji Hong by my side, you other seven will stay in the world ring. Only when I need you for battle will you show yourselves." Luo Feng ordered. The other seven warriors all complied respectfully, entering the normal world ring.

Luo Feng would summon them at critical times. If the battle ever got too intense and he had no way to trigger the world energy of the world ring, the seven warriors would be able to forcefully break out on their own too.

"I left one of my plant life form markers within an asteroid there back then." Ji Hong said.

"Then let's go." Luo Feng ordered.

Weng...

A light appeared and it engulfed the entire area. Luo Feng was able to see the scene of the distant god country.

Hua!

Luo Feng, Heavy Arrow and Ji Hong were all teleported away from Star tower.

...

They first appeared within the god country before being teleported to Twin whirlpools.

Twin whirlpools was an area covered by two extremely huge whirlpools. The smaller one had a diameter of 3.9 light years and the larger one 4.2 light years. They affected each other and were both unable to swell any larger. However, large amounts of items were still pulled into them.

"Master, Twin whirlpools has both gravity and repelling forces."

"When you first enter the area, the gravity is very strong. As you get deeper, it gets even crazier, and when you reach the limit, the gravity would vanish and the repelling force will act on you instead. The closer you get to the core, the stronger this force will be. None of the emperors have ever reached the core area." Ji Hong introduced the area respectfully. "Some have tried to teleport in, however the moment they did that, the huge force would instantly destroy them."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

The most dangerous places in the entire outer region wars all had their own specialties. Of course, Star tower was the most special as it was in itself a treasure.

Hua hua...

An asteroid with a diameter of 3 km revolved about the twin whirlpools.

"This asteroid's speed is so fast, flying within this arc for countless years. It is unable to escape from the whirlpools or get deeper." Ji Hong said. Luo Feng stood on it and gazed about. With a glance, amidst the vast blackness, he could see little asteroids and mountains etc.

"Yong Yan." Luo Feng contacted her via the virtual universe, "I've arrived at Twin whirlpools."

"So fast? However I've already checked on his location, these are the coordinates."

"Thanks, once it's confirmed I will send the reward over to your account."

A simple transaction.

Luo Feng had already acquired the accurate coordinates. Even though Yong Yan was only a high emperor, she was one of the members of a powerful group within the Hong alliance. This group was proficient in information and investigation, and its unique quality was that all members were female! It was said that the leader of this group was one of the Shrine masters of the Hong alliance.

"Tian Chen isnt far from me, let's go." Luo Feng ordered.

"Master, teleporting within Twin whirlpools requires extremely accurate coordinates. The moment there's a mistake and one enters too deep into the dangerous regions, one could easily lose

his life." Ji Hong warned.

"Hm."

Luo Feng nodded, the Mosha body had become a metal fragment on his cloud contact armor, feeling the vast space ripples, swiftly determining the exact coordinates.

Luo Feng, Heavy arrow and Ji Hong vanished from the spot.

...

The larger whirlpool had a continent within with a diameter of over thirty million km. It was flying within for all eternity.

Within this continent, there were two teams, and one was a team led by Tian Chen.

"Hmph."

His long hair flew in the wind as he sat crossed legged. Beside him stood a tall and sturdy scaled other race warrior.

Ever since he earned a lot from the star tower incident, his luck had been good. Currently, he had three slaves, of which two were emperor limits, and one was the pinnacle soul master, Chi mang emperor. With the three warriors and his own strength...

He had successfully killed many, getting many treasures and lots of wealth, buying many items within Hong alliance.

When one got stronger, their wealth naturally grew and their treasures grew too. With that, they would get even stronger. This was a virtuous cycle!

In theory...he was initially in a very good mood, but it changed suddenly.

"Blade River emperor!"

"Blade River!" He sat crossed legged there, the words resounding in his mind, he recalled the information clearly.

In less than half a month, Blade River had killed over ten soul

masters and emperor limits, with other emperors ranging over forty.

"These were all done by Blade River and his slave Heavy Arrow!

"I knew it!"

"I knew back then that when he escaped, there would be trouble."

"Just from the exchange with him from back then, I knew that if he could enslave Heavy Arrow, he must have true treasures and a limitless future. I carefully prepared that set up...and secretly tried to kill him. Who would've thought at the critical moment, he'd break free of the illusion and brandish the strongest flame god crystal. Luckily that exit appeared, allowing me to escape." He still remembered that scene when Blade River brandished the crystal without any hesitation...

It was terrifying.

He understood after that incident that if Blade River didn't die, there would be a tragedy for him in the future. Hence over the 6,000 years, he worked hard to strengthen himself. Even though he had prepared sufficiently, no one would have expected him to be that terrifying.

"Hm, teleportation?" He felt a spatial ripple, turning to look.

Chapter 898: Battling Tian Chen

Tian Chen and the tall and sturdy scaled warrior beside him both looked at where the ripple occurred.

Shua!

Three powerful silhouettes appeared at the same time.

They were the black furry Ji Hong emperor, the half a meter tall adorable Mountain Howl emperor and the jade green skinned Fu Shui emperor. They were all emperor limits, of which Ji Hong and Fu Shui had the ancient clock and the ice net treasures. Hence, they were the strongest of Luo Feng's nine slaves.

As for Mountain howl, if the others all didn't have powerful treasures, he was the strongest of the lot!

The three of them were Luo Feng's strongest three.

...

Tian Chen was shocked at the three silhouette appearing. "Ji Hong, Mountain Howl and Fu Shui...they are all emperor limits, all warriors that have explored Star tower. Why are they here? Ah, I heard that Fu Shui had fallen, but I didn't expect to see him here. I wonder if he's been enslaved."

"They must have come here because Star tower is in too much of a mess."

The three emperor limits were actually from two different camps. As to the appearance of different camp warriors...Tian Chen was actually not surprised.

Just like how Luo Feng had first explored the sacrificial tower with Purple Clock emperor, due to special reasons, the different sides would occasionally team up.

"The three of them are teaming up, especially that Mountain Howl emperor. He's the biggest threat! Even if my other two slaves

appear...we'll only have four in total here, and two are emperor pinnacle soul masters. The other two however are emperor limits. If we fight it out, we have no chance of winning." Many thoughts flashed past his mind.

Over the past 6,000 years, he had killed many other warriors.

However...

It depended on who he targeted. The three before him were all emperor limits, he wouldn't madly rush in.

******

Both sides stared at each other. Ji Hong side's energy was obviously stronger, Fu Shui said coldly, "Tian Chen, we didn't expect to bump into you here."

"Fu Shui, Ji Hong and Mountain howl...what a coincidence. Looks like we are all exploring the Twin whirlpools. However I have other things to do, I'll take my leave first." He smiled and said, wanting to take his scaled slave with him to teleport away. However as he said those last words, a formless ripple spread throughout.

The space around them was locked down.

"Space lock down?" His expression sank. "Is there something you need from me?" The tall and sturdy scaled warrior behind him looked coldly at Ji Hong's side.

"Indeed." Fu Shui smiled coldly.

The moment he spoke...

Rumble...

The air around exploded, as both sides moved almost simultaneously. Fu Shui and his team rushed forward while Tian Chen's side suddenly had two more warriors appear, making his team number reach four. Tian Chen and his three slaves howled and welcomed the battle!

"Since we've begun, we'll give it our all to control them, if we fail, we'll kill them all!" Tian Chen's eyes gleamed with madness, ordering his three slaves, "Chi Mang, we'll both burn our undying bodies and use illusions!"

"Yes master."

Rumble! Rumble!

Tian Chen and Chi Mang were decisive, instantly raising their strengths, causing the space around them to warp.

The two were incredibly terrifying after burning their undying bodies. They both used illusions to attack Mountain howl and Ji Hong. While using the illusions, they also tried controlling their souls. Even though the chances of success were incredibly low, if they succeeded, they would have one more ally.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! As their energies swelled, Ji Hong's three emperor limits didn't hesitate in burning their undying energy too. This forced the other two slaves of Tian Chen to do the same.

Hence...

This battle which involved a total of seven warriors all burnt their undying energies, making Tian Chen angry and worried.

"If you all back off, we won't go after you." Tian Chen shouted.

"Haha, stop dreaming." Ji Hong's side didn't even stop.

"We have no grudges, this fight will only result in heavy losses on both sides. It's better to retreat, that's the best for both sides." Tian Chen tried reasoning with them. However, Ji Hong simply replied him with mad attacks.

Rumble...

The incredibly solid and large continent floating within the whirlpool had a layer chipped away from the ripples of attack from the seven absolute warriors.

...

And within a world ring Ji Hong carried.

Luo feng and the other six warriors lay waiting. They formed a row, maintaining utmost respect for Luo Feng.

"It's begun." Heavy Arrow smiled. "Master, that Tian Chen probably doesn't even know why Ji Hong and the others are going all out."

"Haha..." Luo Feng laughed too.

Usually when parties had similar levels of strength, they hardly ever fought it out.

And Ji Hong and the others were on orders from their master, they naturally followed them and battled.

"First heavily injure Tian Jen, make him lose over half his undying body and his strength won't be 10% of what it was before. Then, I'll appear with the other slaves and try and control him together with the others." Luo Feng's plan was something like that. The reason why he didn't show himself initially was to avoid unnecessary trouble.

Because right now, Life Fall, Da Long...many absolute beings were targeting Blade River.

And Tian Chen was naturally clear on this, as he too was worried about Blade River. The moment Luo Feng showed himself...Tian Chen would immediately send this news via the virtual universe, publicly spreading his location! Life Fall and the other super beings, many had publicly announced bounties on his location.

"Luckily, I'm already retired and I am not part of the army system. As long as I don't show myself, they will never find me."

"I'll hide for now."

"When Tian Chen is heavily injured, only then will I appear and swiftly settle this. Then I'll leave immediately." Luo Feng thought.

"Tian Chen, Tian Chen, I had suspected you to be a petty little thief back then. Yet I would never have expected you to control three slaves. Fight it out, go on, after this battle, if you don't fall, you'll become my slave."

"Fu Shui, make your move." Luo Feng ordered via his soul.

"Yes master!"

******

Seven warriors madly clashed on the flying continent. Mountain Howl emperor unleashed his natural ability, becoming a mountain like giant, he was intrepid. Tian Chen's two soul masters had caused Ji Hong and Fu Shui to be unable to unleash their full strengths, and were suppressed.

"Yes master." The moment Fu Shui received his order, he smiled coldly and used the Ice net to unleash his renowned technique Fu Shui nine blows.

Hua!

He unleashed his law domain and triggered the universe energies. The ice net became the framework, immediately forming an endless ice domain one million km around, engulfing all seven warriors within. Every drop of water was 1,000kg, with endless ice and water about. Naturally, their speeds were all greatly affected.

"Master, why is this Fu Shui's Fu Shui sea so powerful? I've battled him before and it wasn't this strong."

"Hurry and get out of the Fu Shui sea." Tian Chen ordered.

Amidst the ice cold ocean.

Tian chen and the others all rushed into the sky.

However, amidst the vast ocean, flying along within was a visible clear transparent thread that shot straight at Tian Chen.

"Master, be careful."

"Ah."

"A special rope binding spirit weapon."

"Be careful."

Tian Chen's side was caught off guard. Chi Mang was the first to be heavily bound by the rope, and he automatically let his undying body crumble to escape the binding. However the moment he was reforming, the rope once again wrapped about him.

That way, he had no way to unleash his strength at all.

He and Tian Chen were both soul masters, the other two slaves were even more unlucky, because they relied on close combat.

"What powerful binding. I can't get free, and even my attacks don't work. It's very likely a true treasure."

"Be careful."

Tian Chen saw the three powerful silhouettes swiftly rushing closer. He gritted his teeth and took out his most treasured possession from the past 6,000 years. He brandished a 12m tall automaton weapon, it was the super automaton weapon, Separation tower!

Its power was terrifying.

Back then when Life Fall tried to kill Seven Blade, he used this separation tower. Hence, it's power was well known.

Weng weng weng...Tian Chen madly burnt undying energy to pour into the weapon, he was willing to risk it all.

"You want to kill me? Go and die!"

His expression was malevolent.

Ang!!!

A jade green arc light suddenly appeared and shot straight at Fu Shui! In Tian Chen's eyes, that powerful binding that made even two emperor limits unable to attack or escape was too powerful.

The moment this went on, his team may lose their lives.

Hence, his first target would naturally be the one controlling the net, Fu Shui emperor.

"Dang!"

A huge clock appeared within the ocean, it completely covered the now smaller Mountain Howl, Fu Shui and Ji Hong within. Actually, when Tian Chen took out the separation tower before...Ji Hong was shocked. "It's a separation tower. Mountain Howl, Fu Shui, hurry into the ancient clock!"

Rumble! The jade green light shout out and hit the purple ancient clock, as its powerful force tore through the entire ocean area.

Chapter 899: Luo Feng Shows Himself

The ancient clock shook as it got hit, diffusing 90% of the force, creating ripples of shock waves within.

Within however, Fu Shui, Mountain Howl and Ji Hong were all emperor limits, and they had burnt their undying energy. In terms of quantified strength alone, they were one whole level above Tian Chen. Even without the ancient clock's defense, they would at most get heavily injured from the separation tower, and the chances of falling were very low.

With the ancient clock protection now, they were easily able to defend themselves.

"We actually had to use the ancient clock. Let's give it to that punk good, anyone who mess with the master must die." Ji Hong's smile was malevolent, he began to trigger the clock.

The ancient clock had a battle technique within, Demon Note Fire clock.

It's defense was just its subsidiary ability, but its main usage was still its demon note attack. The only thing was that it had harsh requirements on the fire and space laws. Back then Purple Clock only managed to finish the first level. However, Ji Hong was picked especially by Luo Feng, as he was most suitable for it, plus his law comprehension and control was far above Purple Clock. He had already made progress in the second level...he could unleash the demon note attack!

"Dang!"

Ji Hong poured his undying energy into the ancient clock and controlled the entire clock.

It was almost like a formless heavy hammer smashing onto the clock, a powerful clang resounded, making a visible demon note ripple that instantly rushed at Tian Chen who was hiding within

the Separation tower. This attack was extremely fast, as it had already reached the limit of the universe of light speed.

...

Within the separation tower.

Due to controlling the separation tower earlier, Tian Chen only had 82% of his undying energy remaining. At this point, his expression changed.

Dang...

The ancient clock rang as the attack pierced through the tower, and its sound diminishing ever so slightly. However, it still passed right through Tian Chen's body. Hua! That demon note pierced his body almost like boiling water being poured into snow. With a splash...Tian Chen's undying body with only 82% remaining suffered huge losses, leaving only 33% intact.

Even though the separation tower was a super weapon, and hiding within was extremely safe, it's defensive abilities could only be compared to a normal true treasure.

If Ji Hong hadn't held back earlier, it would have completely destroyed Tian Chen.

"How can this be? I..." His expression changed greatly.

"Chi Mang, you three quickly come protect me, we have to flee!" He was panicking. He'd rather sacrifice his slaves now to let himself get away.

******

Within Ji Hong's world ring.

"Master, Tian Chen is heavily injured. He probably only has about 30-50% of his undying body left." Tian Chen communicated via his soul link and reported to Luo Feng.

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

"Honed Heart, Sorrow Demon, Qu Can, you three go out immediately. Use your full strength together and control Tian Chen." Luo Feng ordered.

"Yes master."

Three emperor pinnacle soul masters bowed respectfully before vanishing from the world.

Within the ancient clock.

Initially, there were only Fu Shui, Ji Hong and Mountain Howl. But now, three more appeared!

...

Tian Chen had initially wanted to use his slaves to protect him and flee. However, with the flash, ancient clock melded with Ji Hong's body, revealing the three new warriors. Tian Chen's eyes were filled with fear and shock.

The three were made of the diamond man Honed Heart, the beautiful Sorrow Demon and the black robed stone like Qu Can.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Three powerful energies surged as they burnt their undying bodies.

"Three more powerful warriors, Honed Heart, and..." This scene shocked Tian Chen.

Simultaneously, three powerful god energies pierced into his body.

"Three soul masters." He was completely shocked by the attack. He had fallen into despair, he never expected the enemy to be that terrifying. With three emperor limits, and two of them with true treasures. And now, there were three more emperor pinnacle soul masters.

These were soul masters, who were extremely rare. How did these three appear together?

If he was perfectly fine, Tian Chen still had confidence in getting away. Now however, with only 33% of his undying energy left, he was incredibly weak. He had no confidence at all, he could only make one decision in despair!

"I've been attacked by a group of other race warriors!"

"The team has a few emperor limits, two of them have true treasures! This is the location!"

He had connected to the virtual universe and swiftly sent the mail out madly. Any human camp warrior within the surrounding ten billion km region, along with the many numbers that he had, would all receive the urgent message.

At this time...he could only hope that other warriors would rush over. If he had to rely on his strength alone, it would be over.

"Where did they come from, with two true treasures and three soul masters? Just where did they come from, when did I ever make such an enemy?" He was panicking. Many guesses were flying through his mind, of which Blade River's name did pop up.

The only thing was that he had offended too many, not just Luo Feng.

Weng!

Honed Heart and the others rushed forward and his consciousness was completely suppressed, unable to maintain his connection to the virtual universe.

"Maintain, I must persevere until the other get here." He howled within. Even though he was being suppressed, he struggled madly. Since his consciousness was being pressured and he was unable to even control his god body or connect to the virtual universe, much less self destruct, he was like a vegetable.

Only his consciousness remained.

His whole body was pressed down.

"Separation tower." Fu Shui controlled a thread to throw Tian Chen's body to the side, keeping the separation tower. The other threads from his Ice net madly wrapped about the unlucky Tian Chen's three slaves. These three were completely subdued by Mountain Howl and Ji Hong.

*****

Within the world ring.

Luo Feng who was worried about revealing his identity received a few mails from several friends, including Yong Yan. They were all forwarded with the information Tian Chen had sent out.

"What."

"They are all forwarded." Luo Feng read the mail in the virtual universe, his expression changed.

Suddenly he received a call request, it was Yong Yan.

"Receive."

He gently tapped the air and a screen appeared, she was standing in it.

"Blade River." She smiled, "You just got Tian Chen's location from me, I haven't even finished my tea and yet I've received his crazy mails. Countless warriors in the human camp know about this as well. Don't tell me...that you are behind this."

Luo Feng looked at her.

"Be careful. Tian Chen is well renowned, and there are many that trust him. Hence, he has plenty of friends. And the two true treasures will definitely attract many others. A large group will probably be rushing over now." She said.

"Thanks." Luo Feng nodded and didn't say anymore.

He naturally understood the lure of the true treasures, seeing how the sealed stars caused such a commotion was enough. Back then when Purple Clock used the ancient clock, he was careful not

to be discovered too. The two true treasures would definitely draw a huge group over. The only thing he was relaxed about was that Tian Chen's mail mentioned the several emperor limits.

Emperor limits with true treasures, this was dangerous!

"Not many would dare to come."

"I'm just worried about Seven Blade and Black Ti." He frowned. The human camp had two beings that were terrifying beings in the outer region wars. One was the Seven Blade, another was Black Ti. Seven Blade was human, while Black Ti was only in the human camp, and was not even a Hong alliance member.

"However for them to rush over would require some time."

"As long as I'm fast enough and settle this, I will be able to leave swiftly. It would be fine. If I'm slow, then it's be troublesome." His eyes gleamed ferociously. He was already retired now and wasn't under the control of the army system. Even if warriors from the human camp came, anyone that made a move against him...

He would kill! All of them!

"Master, Tian Chen is already unable to resist the soul control, will you control him or should we do it?" Honed Heart communicated to him mentally.

"Ha!"

Luo Feng smiled, "I'll do it personally!"

Tian Chen had three slaves behind him, and controlling him would be akin to getting four warriors! If he let Honed Heart or any of the others control him, if they fell, wouldn't he lose five warriors?

******

"It's over."

Tian Chen lay on the broken stones, and his consciousness was suppressed. Without any strength to struggle at all, he could only

await the soul control. Such helplessness...made him fall into despair.

A silver winged silhouette appeared.

However with his consciousness suppressed, whatever he saw didn't connect to his mind, he couldn't even see Luo Feng.

"Tian Chen." A voice resounded within his mind.

"It's you, Blade River!" His consciousness howled, "I guessed that it could be you, it really is! Blade River, I cannot accept this, I can't, I can't!!!"

However after which, the howls vanished.

He lay there and opened his eyes, looking at Luo Feng's gaze. He felt a sense of worship from within, he swiftly stood up and bowed respectfully, "Master."

Luo Feng smiled before his expression changed. There were three simultaneously ripples in space around him, as three teams had already appeared.

"Let's leave." He ordered immediately.

Chapter 900: Life or Death Brothers

Even though he gave the order immediately, it was still too late.

The ripples about had already begun and many warriors around had used space lockdown. This made Luo Feng's expression sink initially as he sighed. These warriors had moved extremely fast after getting the news, teleporting here and instantly using space lockdown.

...

After the three teams appeared, they searched for their target immediately.

"Other race team?"

"Where's the team that attacked Tian Chen's group?" The three teams looked about, sending their undying energy to search. At the same time, they used their scanners...

"Nothing."

"We can't find them."

"We were originally here in Twin whirpools, and when we got the news we instantly teleported over here, also using space lockdown immediately. In such a short time, they actually managed to escape? That Tian Chen is a well renowned warrior, was he unable to last for that short while?"

The three teams looked at each other. Since they were all from the human camp, they immediately recognized each other and communicated.

"Attention all!"

A snow furry monkey like being with a sharp nose from the group said, "Your scanners may not have detected anything. But mine has detected another small scanner 22km away from us." He pointed in the direction.

"What?"

"There's a mini scanner there?"

"Snow Horn emperor, are you sure? Why haven't we detected anything?"

"Snow Horn's mini scanner is the most expensive of our group, worth several billions of mixed elements. Hence, he's definitely right, there must be another team there hiding. Haha, we'll find out soon enough if they are hiding there...break!" A powerful undying energy swept past the area.

How much area could a small scanner cover?

An area of ten km was easily covered by undying energy. As long as there was resistance, without a doubt there would warriors hidden there.

Rumble.

God energy spread over the area.

Rumble! The hidden region suddenly exploded with a stronger undying energy, immediately engulfing the undying energy that swept over it. It overwhelmed the sweep...sweeping past the three teams.

"It's an emperor limit warrior!"

"Be careful everybody."

Even though the three teams were cautious, they knew that the other team was from another race and that they had true treasures. Yet they still dared to rush over immediately. This was definitely a team that stood at the pinnacle of strength in Twin whirlpools. Afterall, every area within here had diameters of a few light years.

And teleportation easily covered a couple of light years.

A few teleports would easily cover the area. In theory, most teams should get here fast enough, however why were there so

few? It was because the other teams were afraid. They wanted to let other warriors get here first before rushing over for the fight, seeing if they could get anything amidst the chaos.

The three teams had a total of sixteen warriors, for a total of nine emperor limits, three pinnacle soul masters and four emperor pinnacles.

It was an extremely powerful team.

Rumble...the undying energy that swept past them was easily dispersed.

"They actually dared to attack warriors of the same race, are they looking to be killed by our human camp?" A cold curse resounded. In the distance the hidden region warped and three silhouettes appeared. One was the silver winged Blade River emperor, Tian Chen with his long hair and Ji Hong emperor.

"It's Blade River."

"It's Tian Chen!"

The three teams were all shocked, since the victim of this incident was still alive? And the terrifying Blade River had come to twin whirlpools?

"Blade River, it's a misunderstanding, we didn't know it was you."

"Blade River, Tian Chen, it's all an error, we thought it was the other race team hiding there."

Attacking another warrior from the same camp was wrong. Even though no one was injured, the three teams immediately expressed their apologies. Obviously they didn't want to mess with the renowned Blade River emperor.

"Hmph!" Luo Feng's expression was ice cold.

In truth, he heaved a sigh of relief within. With his prudence, to prevent others from seeing too much by rushing over, when he

soul controlled Tian Chen earlier, he had already activated his mini scanner to hide them. When the space was on lockdown, preventing them from fleeing, he immediately acted according to his plan B.

First keep the other warriors into his world ring, after that appear with Tian Chen and Ji Hong...acting like they were all from the human camp.

After all, Blade River was a human!

...

"I gave my all to save my friend Tian Chen and evade the other race team. If I managed to escape from them only to be killed by your attacks...then I'd have nothing to say." Luo Feng gazed at the three teams, they all smiled apologetically.

If they accidentally attacked a weak warrior, they wouldn't even bother.

But Blade River was simply too renowned, massacring emperor limits and pinnacle emperor soul masters, plus he was human! Within the human camp...the other races were all subservient, and humans were the strongest. Also, the army system was obviously biased towards the humans as well.

This made it so that the three teams didn't dare offend Luo Feng!

"Tian Chen's energy is really weak."

"Looks like he's lost over half his undying body."

"It's tragic, the injury must be severe. However, it's known that Tian Chen and Blade River are good friends. When the sealed star fell in star tower, they were together too. It was said that Blade River almost fell into the danger region and Tian Chen almost rushed in, however Blade River got lucky and an exit appeared before him."

"This is true friendship, over our long life spans, our relatives all

die. Hence, the good friends are more important. There are all sorts of dangers in the universe, and very few true friends are out there. Hence, everyone is important! Tian Chen and Blade River have such a relationship, I bet the moment Blade River got the news, he immediately rushed over and was here first."

"Tian Chen might have called out to him first, allowing him to get here faster."

"They are indeed good friends."

"Only life or death brothers would do so."

The three teams communicated secretly. Since Blade River had already forced the other race team away, allowing them to escape, the teams that were on the hunt, all ready to unleash their strongest attacks relaxed.

There was however one exception to the group...Snow Horn emperor.

"Disperse your space lockdown." Luo Feng ordered coldly. He was waiting for them to do that so that he could teleport away.

"There's no rush."

A cold voice resounded, it was Snow Horn, whos eyes were gleaming fiercely.

He stared at Luo Feng and mocked coldly, "Blade River, there are many other camps hunting you down. I didn't expect you to actually show yourself! Looks like your relationship with Tian Chen must be deep, however...you are too stupid, to put yourself in danger for him."

"Danger?" Luo Feng looked at him.

"Snow Horn, disperse the space lockdown."

"Right, disperse it."

The other team mates all told Snow Horn the same thing. Even though Blade River was eyed by many powerful warriors, he

wasn't one that emperor limits could aim for. What's more...he was from the human camp and killing within the camp was forbidden.

"There's no rush." Snow Horn said coldly, "This Blade River... even though I don't know the reason, since his number is well known by many warriors, I've tried sending an SOS to him via the army system. I specially sent it to him...in theory, even if he shut off his virtual universe connection, the army system would report so. However, it's reaction this time was...that he has already retired! If he's not in the system, one cannot send an SOS to him."

"Retired?"

"Retired?"

"Blade River has retired?"

"I've tried too, he's really retired. There's no way to call him from the army system. The system states that he's retired." The three teams were shocked. Even though they knew he had a huge amount of wealth, and true treasures on him, they had never thought of this.

One was because of power. But, the second was the more important reason, that it was forbidden to kill within the same camp!

Now that they knew he was retired, their thoughts had shifted, should they deal with Blade River? Surround and attack him? The atmosphere shifted immediately, it wasn't as friendly as before as they began to plan something against him.

"Blade River risked his life for me and you wish to attack him?" Tian Chen raged, his voice resounding within their minds.

"Tian Chen, this is none of your business."

"You should step away."

"Tian Chen, your current strength cannot affect anything. Even

though we won't attack you, you should know your place." The three teams' gaze had changed. At this time, tens of other teams flew over, and they were all unable to teleport close due to the space lockdown, hence they could only appear further away and fly over.

Even though they were still flying, their scanners had detected everything.

"It's Blade River."

"Blade River is actually still here."

"Blade River has retired and is not in the army system, he's not under their protection anymore."

A vast group began to appear about.

This scene made Luo Feng frown. He spoke yet, "Tian Chen, you take a rest, leave it to me." He kept Tian Chen in his world ring. This action...wasn't stopped by the three teams at all, because they didn't wish to accidentally hit Tian chen during their battle. At this point in time, they still thought that Tian Chen was the same Tian Chen of before, they didn't know that he had already become Luo Feng's soul slave.

"Interesting."

Luo Feng gazed at the teams that were rushing over. "The news of the true treasures from the other races have brought this scenario. Who would've thought that the identity of Blade River...would bring me so much trouble."

Table of Contents

- Swallowed Star
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 801: Luo Feng's Revenge
  - Chapter 802: Trying To Steal a Chicken Only To End Up Losing The Rice Used to Lure It
  - Chapter 803: Star Tower
  - Chapter 804: Unstable Situation
  - Chapter 805: Choice
  - Chapter 806: Harbor
  - Chapter 807: Sum of Goods
  - Chapter 808: Deal
  - Chapter 809: Information on Blood River Crystals
  - Chapter 810: Deep Pockets
  - Chapter 811: Cloud Contact Vine
  - Chapter 812: Building A God Country
  - Chapter 813: Encounter on Yan Ji Main Continent
  - Chapter 814: Intense Battle
  - Chapter 815: Flee
  - Chapter 816: Target 30 seconds
  - Chapter 817: Fall
  - Chapter 818: Hexagon Prison
  - Chapter 819: Checking Every Inch
  - Chapter 820: Impressive
  - Chapter 821: Happy Surprise
  - Chapter 822: Encounter
  - Chapter 823: Couldn't Bear
  - Chapter 824: Joining The Hong Alliance
  - Chapter 825: 2nd Volume
  - Chapter 826: Hong Alliance City
  - Chapter 827: Shop in Hong Alliance City
  - Chapter 828: Gold armor
  - Chapter 829: Decision
  - Chapter 830: Decades
  - Chapter 831: Billows in Yan Ji
  - Chapter 832: Sacrificial Tower

Chapter 833: Ancient God Country
Chapter 834: The Arrangement
Chapter 835: Treasure Room
Chapter 836: Fight!
Chapter 837: Going all out
Chapter 838: Situation
Chapter 839: Qiu Chi Ka Shows Himself
Chapter 840: Treasure
Chapter 841: All is Revealed
Chapter 842: Death
Chapter 843: Purple Clock's threat
Chapter 844: Then You Should All Die
Chapter 845: Big Winner
Chapter 846: Race, Rise!
Chapter 847: Gold Armored Beast
Chapter 848: Locked Treasure Chest
Chapter 849: Engraved Weapon
Chapter 850: A Bucket of Cold Water
Chapter 851: Rumors
Chapter 852: Name Fei Mo
Chapter 853: Begin
Chapter 854: Luo Feng's Show
Chapter 855: Purple Clock Shows Himself
Chapter 856: Battle
Chapter 857: Madman!!!
Chapter 858: Fall
Chapter 859: Shaking
Chapter 860: Flashing Blade
Chapter 861: Blade River Emperor
Chapter 862: Ancient Clock
Chapter 863: Recovered Heavy Arrow Emperor
Chapter 864: Star Tower
Chapter 865: Entering the Tower
Chapter 866: Forbidden Guard
Chapter 867: Danger
Chapter 868: Human Name
Chapter 869: Chen Hun Emperor
Chapter 870: The Warriors Gather
Chapter 871: Battleground

Chapter 872: Alliance
Chapter 873: Killing
Chapter 874: Luo Feng Waiting
Chapter 875: Unexpected Twist
Chapter 876: Receiver
Chapter 877: Cause
Chapter 878: Life Or Death Inheritance
Chapter 879: Long Time
Chapter 880: Hope and Despair
Chapter 881: Missing...You all…
Chapter 882: Luo Feng Awakens
Chapter 883: The Great Being
Chapter 884: The Future of The Earth Race
Chapter 885: Touring the Tower
Chapter 886: Star Map
Chapter 887: Luo Feng's Teleportation
Chapter 888: Luo Feng's Return
Chapter 889: Primal Chaos City Leader's Questions
Chapter 890: Celebration
Chapter 891: Jian Ta Emperor Pleads Guilty
Chapter 892: Luo Feng's Kindness
Chapter 893: Hunt
Chapter 894: Suppression
Chapter 895: Embryo
Chapter 896: Luo Feng's Guard Team
Chapter 897: Twin Whirlpools
Chapter 898: Battling Tian Chen
Chapter 899: Luo Feng Shows Himself
Chapter 900: Life or Death Brothers